John Adams Library,

IN THE CUSTODY OF THE
BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY.

SHELF Nº
ADAMS
163.10
v. 6

John Adams 1772

MEMOIRS

OF

MAXIMILIAN DE BETHUNE,

DUKE OF SULLY,

PRIME MINISTER TO

HENRY THE GREAT.

CONTAINING

The History of the LIFE and REIGN of that MONARCH,
And his own ADMINISTRATION under Him.

Translated from the FRENCH.

To which is added,

The TRYAL of RAVAILLAC for the Murder of
HENRY THE GREAT.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

THE FOURTH EDITION.

VOL. VI.

LONDON:
Printed for A. MILLAR, in the Strand; R. and J. DODSLEY, in Pall-Mall; and W. SHROPSHIRE, in New-Bond-Street.
M.DCC.LXIII.

ADAMS 163.10
M6

A

SUMMARY

OF THE

Books contained in the SIXTH VOLUME.

SUMMARY of the TWENTY-NINTH BOOK.

CONTINUATION of the memoirs of 1610, 1611. The reasons why the princes, grandees, and ministers, hated Sully: he opposes the unjust proceedings of the council: refuses to sign a comptant at the queen's request. Quarrels in full council with the duke of Bouillon. Disputes in the court and council. Coronation of Lewis XIII. Sully goes to Montrond, and is taken ill there: reasons for the queen regent and the ministers recalling him: the reception given him by this princess, who afterwards takes part with Conchini and the ministers against him. His resolution in opposing the unjust demands of the grandees, and the dissipation of the royal treasures: the uneasiness he suffers on this occasion. He quarrels with Villeroi and D'Alincourt in full council. The princes, lords, and ministers, enter into a confederacy against him. He takes a resolution to retire for ever from court: different opinions concerning his retreat. Sully resigns the superintendance of the finances, the government of the Bastile, &c. The prudent advice which he gives his secretaries: their obligations to him. He prevents the artifices of his enemies to ruin him: his letters to the queen-regent for this purpose, in which he justifies his conduct, and his administration: the queen's answers. The king encreases his pension. He gives a general account of his public and private conduct; of his wealth; and of his domestic affairs: his faithful performances of the promises he made to Henry IV.

SUMMARY of the THIRTIETH BOOK.

DISCUSSION of the political scheme, commonly called The Great Design of Henry IV. Preliminary considerations upon the Roman empire, upon the establishment of the French monarchy, upon the different governments of the three races of our kings, &c. The possibility of the great design proved: Henry with difficulty makes

makes Sully approve of it: in what manner Elizabeth and this prince formed it. Favourable and unfavourable events. The advantage of this ſcheme to all Europe. That part of the political ſcheme which regards religion, conſiſting in peaceably maintaining the religions received in Europe, and in driving the infidels from thence. The political part, which conſiſts in eſtabliſhing fifteen equal monarchies; in reducing the power of the houſe of Auſtria; and dividing what it was deprived of among the princes and republics of Europe. Means of indemnifying himſelf, and of proving the equity of his proceedings. The moderation and diſintereſtedneſs of France in this diviſion. Eſtabliſhment of a general council of the chriſtian republics. Negotiations and other means employed to induce the princes and ſtates of Europe to engage in the great deſign. Account of the forces, and the expences neceſſary for the execution of it. The march and diſpoſition of the armies of the confederate princes: the probable reſult of it.

SUPPLEMENT to the LIFE of the DUKE of SULLY, after his RETREAT.

CONDUCT of the duke of Sully in the aſſembly of the proteſtants at Châtelleraut; and of this aſſembly with regard to the perſonal affairs of Sully: the part he has in the duke of Rohan's diſputes with the queen regent on account of St. John d'Angely. The queen regent's reliance upon him; and the letters which ſhe writes to him during the rebellion of the princes and the proteſtants. Councils which he gives her; and the ſervices he performs on this occaſion. He is made marſhal of France. His diſcontent with his ſon and grandſon. State of his family; and the diſpoſition which he makes of his eſtates among his children. His death. Honours paid him by the ducheſs of Sully. His tomb and epitaph. An account of his domeſtic conduct, and of his private life. Occupations of the ducheſs his wife. The duke of Sully's ſentiments upon religion. His public and private buildings.

MEMOIRS OF SULLY.

BOOK XXIX.

THAT which had just passed with respect to Cleves, and the conduct of the queen regent with respect to me, took from me at length all hope of bringing back the court to its just notions upon the two chief points of government, the conduct of foreign affairs and the management of the finances: on the contrary, the changeableness of the prince, what I saw daily pass before my eyes, and, above all, the air of dissimulation which in the last place they had recourse to, convinced me that they would never get out of the confusion in which the affairs of the council seemed to be lost, but by such an extrication as I was always afraid of. In order to bring that about, some time was necessary; for connections so strong and so well cemented as those which the king had formed for the destruction of the house of Austria, with all those of the princes interested in its destruction, are not broke all at once, nor sometimes without a struggle which has mischievous consequences. But I have no reason to doubt but that the queen regent and her counsellors employed all their arts to make them ineffectual. That prejudice in favour of what they called the party of religion; the hatred they bore to all protestants, whether French or foreigners; a natural inclination, strengthened by habit, to unite with

Spain, every impulse of which they could not help following publicly, when, the designs of Henry the Great becoming manifest, they were convicted of supporting a cause at once odious and desperate: it could not be expected that the force of these motives was abated, when, by an unexpected stroke, they found themselves upon the point of accomplishing what they had so ardently desired. My religion, my engagements, the advice I had given to the late king, of which at least the certain effect would have been the free exercise of the protestant religion in France, and in all Christendom, even the death of that prince, which seemed to declare me the only repository of his sentiments, and the executor of his designs, all the glory and honour of which must necessarily reflect upon me: these were their motives for hatred against a man who had already so many powerful enemies; and, by the care which Sillery and Villeroi took to enforce them, they could not fail of having a speedy effect.

ANOTHER, less openly declared, but probably stronger than all the others, because it directly attacked those private interests, united them all a second time against me. This was a too exact and too impartial administration of the finances, for persons whose avarice had already, in imagination, engrossed to themselves all the treasures of the late king. I have, on this head, an infinite number of circumstances to relate, which certainly will not do any honour to the French name; but it would be to no purpose to be silent, since they are generally known. The reader then may here see some of the most important of them: they will serve to give him an idea of the court at that time.

I SHALL begin with the favourite of the queen regent. He cast his eyes at first upon the post of first gentleman of the bedchamber, not that this dignity was capable of satisfying his ambition, but it was necessary to begin by obtaining a rank which might

might take away the disproportion that had hitherto been between him and the other courtiers. To this motive was added some personal resentment against Bellegarde, the cause of which I shall not relate, because it would lead me into too long a discussion. It was highly flattering to the vanity of Conchini that the first step he was seen to take at court, should put him upon a par with his rival *: he therefore caused it to be proposed to the duke of Bouillon, to treat with him for this post. Bouillon, who really intended to sell it, readily accepted the proposal, and was well paid for his compliance; for, in the first place, he obtained a suppression of the offices established by his majesty in the neighbourhood of Sedan, for levying taxes upon all goods and merchandizes exported and imported; so that this gratuity may, without exaggeration, be said to be worth more to him than his whole principality. To this Conchini added two hundred thousand livres, under a pretence that he had been promised that sum upon surrendering his city. I represented to them that the duke of Bouillon had been exactly paid all that was promised him; and, if they looked into the account, they would be convinced of it: but what I said was not regarded, and all the expence Henry had been at to get possession of Sedan, ended in paying twice for the place, which, after all, was still in Bouillon's hands.

Conchini, however, did not effect his purpose so easily as he had imagined: the count of Soissons, as I have already hinted, opposed him, as well in that, as in his solicitations for the archbishopric of Tours; but he did it in such a manner as left him room to hope there was a possibility of gaining him; and Conchini soon found the means. He caused the

* The marquis of Ancre (for so he began then to be called) had a difference with the master of the horse, the particulars whereof may be seen in the History of the Regency of queen Mary de Medicis.

government of Normandy to be given to him, and to this end did not ſcruple to take it away from the ſecond ſon of France. The late king, that he might avoid creating any jealouſy among thoſe who aſpired to this government (which I had refuſed with the condition of changing my religion annexed to it) and willing to oblige Fervaques, who well deſerved that he ſhould have this conſideration for him, had beſtowed it upon his own ſon. It was not poſſible for me to give my aſſent to this action of Conchini's, or to the gratuity given by the council to the count of Soiſſons, at his majeſty's expence, by purchaſing, at a high price ſome very inconſiderable claims which the houſe of Montaffie had in Piedmont, of which mention has been already made. However, notwithſtanding all my remonſtrances, the bargain was concluded. It was now their cuſtom to ſuffer me to talk, but to act without me.

Conchini found out a method to diſpoſe of part of the king's treaſures, without its appearing that the ſums raiſed by thoſe means were received or employed for his uſe. This was by perſuading the queen to continue the iſſuing of comptants † as the late king was uſed to do. She wrote the following letter to me upon this occaſion, dated the 15th of June:

" Cousin,

" I am reſolved, for one year more, to continue " the comptants for the payment of thoſe ſums, " which the late king, my lord, ordered the trea- " ſurers of the exchequer to depoſite in his privy

† The comptants were orders for payment of money, or receipts for ſums paid by the king's order, without ſpecifying in what manner the money ſo paid was employed. Henry IV. and Lewis XIII. or their miniſters, ſeverely felt the abuſes that might be made of them; but an infinite number of expences, which intereſt of ſtate required to be kept ſecret, prevented their being aboliſhed. Cardinal de Richelieu determined to put an end to them, but in lieu thereof to leave a million of gold in the king's hands for his private expences, and to be diſpoſed of at his pleaſure. Teſt. Polit. Part II. p. 143.

purſe:

" purſe: Beringhen ſhall diſtribute the money ari-
" ſing from hence, to the ſame perſons as formerly.
" I therefore ſend this to acquaint you, that it is
" my deſire you ſhould direct the treaſurer of the
" exchequer at preſent in office, to pay into the
" hands of the aforeſaid Beringhen the ſaid comp-
" tant for the July quarter."

THE next day Puget and D'Argouges brought one of theſe comptants to me that I might ſettle it, and write underneath an order for the payment. I took it, and at the firſt glance did not obſerve that it contained any thing but a great number of ſums which the late king cauſed to be paid in this form: but the amount of the whole appearing to me to be exceſſive large, inſtead of looking any farther, I told the bearers, that it was true the conduct of Henry IV. ſeemed to authoriſe this form, but that at preſent this writing did not appear to me to be any longer a ſufficient diſcharge to him who ſhould venture to give an order for its payment. They replied, that, if I would take the trouble to read to the end of the paper, I ſhould find my objection removed by a diſcharge ſo valid, that I need not have recourſe for it to any other perſon. I continued to read, being curious to know how a paper, which ſeemed to contain nothing more than the articles of a comptant, and that not very long, ſhould produce a ſum of nine hundred thouſand two hundred and ten livres and fourteen ſols, which I had ſeen by caſting my eyes upon the ſum total. My curioſity was ſoon ſatisfied. The two or three firſt articles were followed by others with which I was not greatly pleaſed, and which ſeemed only inſerted there, in order to prepare me for a morſel ſtill harder to digeſt. This was a ſingle article of four hundred thouſand livres, with no other explanation than theſe few words, which were not very likely to baniſh my ſcruples: " Paid into the hands of the late " king."

I STOPPED ſhort, and, looking earneſtly upon Puget, aſked him whether this ingenious trick was of his own invention; then reſolutely told him, that the late king had never taken up ſo much money at once for his private purſe; and that I had good proofs of his having never received this ſum, either in part or the whole. He ſtill continued to anſwer with the ſame indifference, That what I ſhould ſee at the bottom would remove all difficulties. This was four or five lines, written by the queen herſelf, and in theſe terms: "We have examined the articles of the above comptant, amounting to nine hundred thouſand two hundred and ten livres and fourteen ſols; and know that this ſum was really diſburſed by the command of the late king, my lord, to be paſſed in the form of a comptant, as uſual, which he was prevented from by death. We are ſatisfied that the ſaid articles are all juſt, and order an acquittance of comptant to be expedited, to ſerve as a diſcharge for Puget, treaſurer of the exechequer. Given at Paris, July 16, 1610, ſigned Mary."

IT did not immediately occur to me what reſolution it was proper for me to take; but, after a moment's reflection, "Monſieur Puget, ſaid I, what I have read does not explain to me for what reaſon ſo large a ſum is demanded of me; for I can never be perſuaded that the late king received it. It is in vain therefore, that you preſs me to ſign it upon that ſuppoſition: you muſt therefore be ſatisfied with this paper, ſuch as it is, for your diſcharge; for you may depend upon it, I will add nothing to it." The affair did not reſt there: they renewed their endeavours to obtain my ſignature with as much obſtinacy as I refuſed it; for two whole days I was perſecuted about this comptant: at laſt they left me in quiet, and it remained among the reſt of my papers; but neither the queen regent or Conchini ever forgot it. The favourite thought this

but

but a bad example for those whom he was endeavouring to bring to a perfect conformity with all his desires: as for the queen, her resentment at my conduct on this occasion was so great, that she could not, with all her art, conceal it; and if, till then, she had at times made some slight reflections upon what the king her husband had often said to her, of the great use I should be to her in the administration of affairs, from that moment all remembrance of it was erased, and gave place to a settled resolution to bestow my employments upon a person who would be more tractable.

The chancellor gave me an example of that sort of behaviour they expected; but, instead of following it, I could not help reproaching him one day with a fraud truly unpardonable, on occasion of a letter of exemption for the purchase of the registry of the parliament, and of the Châtellet of Paris, which was shown in full council, as having been expediated and sealed by the late king, although I knew that he had obstinately refused to grant it, notwithstanding Villeroi had, at different times, used his utmost endeavours to prevail upon him. The law ordains, that, when the king dies, his seal shall be broken. This the chancellor not only neglected to do, but even dared to make use of it to authenticate several false regulations in favour of Conchini and some others, and continued this practice during five years after the king's demise, for which he had a double conveniency, as his son, who was secretary of state, forged all those writings, which he put the last hand to. Monsieur the admiral * received the assistance it gave him as if it came from heaven. He brought to be registered in the parliament letters patents for duke and peer for the lordship of Damville in as good, and perhaps better form than they would have had if Henry IV. had been living.

* Charles de Montmorency, duke of Damville.

I FIND a second letter from the queen regent of the same date with the former, but it was on a subject of less importance. It related to a breach which was to be repaired in the fortifications lately raised before the city and castle of Vendôme, at the desire of the sieur Jumeaux, who was governor of it.

IT would have been very difficult, exposed as I was to frequent quarrels with the ministers and nobles, to have avoided one with the duke of Bouillon, who on all occasions gave me proofs that he had not forgot or pardoned my having always preferred the king's interest to his, and who only waited for some opportunity to shew his resentment of it. He one day proposed in the council, that all those who were in possession of the chief offices and employments in the kingdom, should be required to give in accounts of receipt and expence, to be examined there. The council received this proposal in the same spirit with him that made it; for, general as it seemed, yet it was levelled at me alone; and Bouillon undertook to give me notice of it, by saying to me, in full council likewise, that, being a man who loved method and exactness, and who was always desirous of setting others a good example, he did not doubt, but that I would begin, by laying before the council those accounts that related to my post of grand master of the ordnance. I replied, in an accent and manner which possibly he did not expect, that whenever the king and queen were pleased to require it, I would lay my accounts before them, and with so much the more willingness, as I was well assured they would find nothing in them but what would be to their satisfaction, and my honour: that, in a minority, the princes of the blood represented the king's person likewise, therefore I would give them the same satisfaction; but that I was too well acquainted with the extent of the rights and privileges of my employment, not to know that, to make it accountable to any other tribunal, was to debase it.

" Monsieur,

" Monſieur, replied the duke, it appears to me that " the conſtable and the marſhals of France having " a right to take cognizance of all affairs of the ar- " my, as they fall immediately under their inſpec- " tion by the nature of their offices, ſo they may " likewiſe of all poſts and employments relating to " it; and yours is one of the chief of that kind." " I ſee plainly, Monſieur," returned I, without endeavouring to conceal my reſentment at this pro- cedure, " that you have long deſigned me this af- " front, and that you are artfully ſeeking to ſup- " port yourſelf with M. the conſtable, whoſe qua- " lity, merit, and years, I honour and eſteem, and " for whoſe friendſhip I am greatly obliged. I do " not apprehend that any diſpute will ariſe between " him and I upon this matter; but as for you, and " all the others, I declare that I do not think my- " ſelf accountable to you in what regards my office, " but to the king alone." " At leaſt, Monſieur, " replied the duke of Bouillon, you muſt acknow- " ledge, that, your patent being directed to us, it " implies that we have ſome degree of authority " there." " Monſieur, ſaid I, you have either " read it very ſlightly, or but ill underſtood what " you read, ſince, if what you aſſert be true, I am " likewiſe accountable to the mayors, the ſheriffs, " and the captains of the city-gates, in what re- " gards my employments, ſince the patent is direct- " ed to them as well as to the marſhals and gover- " nors of France; but, if you are really ignorant " why thoſe clauſes are inſerted, now know from " me, that it is in order that I may be aſſiſted by " all thoſe perſons in whatever I require of them, " which carries rather an idea of ſuperiority than " the contrary."

The queen, who found that the diſpute was growing warm, and that it might produce a quarrel between us, impoſed ſilence upon us both, and

brought another queſtion upon the carpet. Bouillon's flattery to the conſtable miſſed of the effect he propoſed by it; for I was as much beloved by that nobleman for the ſervices I had done him in ſome very difficult circumſtances, as Bouillon, who had drawn him into thoſe circumſtances, was diſliked by him. When the council broke up, he told the queen in Bouillon's preſence, that his claim was ill founded; then, addreſſing himſelf to the duke, he entreated him not to make any more attempts to engage him in his perſonal reſentments and ſchemes of revenge. This quarrel made a great noiſe at court, becauſe the friends of each party thought it incumbent upon them to engage in it. It was not here as in the council: my party was now greatly ſuperior to his. The families of Guiſe, Longueville, and many others, declared themſelves openly for me.

Nor did Conchini and his wife continue long to be in good intelligence with the miniſters and the other chief perſons of the ſtate. It is the fate of connections, produced by a ſpirit of intereſt, that the ſame cauſe which gave them birth, deſtroys them with the greater facility. Hence followed a thouſand ſcandalous ſcenes: they came openly to reproaches and abuſes, which, from ſome remains of decency, ſhould have been ſtifled. As the whole court was actuated by the ſame ſpirit, it was ſoon filled with hatred, jealouſy, and faction; none but baſe or criminal methods were employed in diſputing for favours or in obtaining them; ſome old grudge or ſome new reſentment embittered every mind, and the bloodieſt cataſtrophes were often apprehended among perſons of the higheſt rank: it became neceſſary to watch them continually, to prevent the fatal effects of their quarrels. The public was not ignorant of the motives which animated one againſt the other, all the princes of the blood, the conſtable, the maſter of the horſe, the duke of Epernon, and many

many more. In these dissentions Conchini had always the greatest part* ; sometimes, while the ballance was held between these illustrious rivals, the favours they disputed for fell into the hands of mean inconsiderable persons. Discord, confusion, injustice, and fraud, all the evils which follow the contempt of subordination, poured in like a deluge upon the court and council, and more than once revenged the insulted memory of Henry the Great upon his domestic enemies, by those very means which they had made choice of to revenge themselves.

THERE was not any of the European powers who did not, by their ambassadors, acquit themselves of what they owed to this great king: but it was easy to distinguish among them, those who were more sincere in their compliments of congratulation for the accession of the new king to the throne than in those of condolence for the loss of him whom he succeeded. There were found Frenchmen base enough to say to the ambassadors from the king of Spain and the archduke, these very words: "Your tears need "not wet your handkerchiefs much; it was a stroke "of providence that saved the king and the catholic "religion from ruin." I shall say nothing of the reception that was given to these ambassadors.

MY heart was too much removed from every sensation of joy, to allow me to have any part in the ceremony of the king's coronation †; therefore, while every other took the road to Rheims, I set out for Montrond, after having obtained the queen's permission to go to one of my country-houses. I carefully concealed my design of not returning again to Paris, at least while I saw the same dispositions among the courtiers, and the same disorder in affairs: but I had really taken this resolution, which was

* See the detail of these intrigues and court-quarrels in Siri, Vol. II. p. 327, and in the same historians.

† The ceremony is very minutely described in the Merc. Franç. the Royal MSS. P. Matthieu, &c. anno 1610. It was performed the 17th of October.

confirmed by my being attacked with a violent illness immediately after I arrived at Montrond, and which I could attribute to no other cause, but to the painful situation my heart had been in for four months. It was here also, that, to calm the perturbations of my mind, I composed those two little pieces of poetry; one of which is entituled, A Parallel between Cæsar and Henry the Great, and the other, An Adieu to the court *.

If this adieu was not the last, it was not my fault: I saw very plainly that I could not remain there. The secret council held at the house of the nuncio, which I have already mentioned, was continually recurring to my mind. To this I added some words which a princess, my relation and my friend, told me she had heard said to the queen at the same time. Many other circumstances of this nature filled my mind with the strongest forebodings that the whole protestant church was at the eve of a persecution. By a letter which Préaux wrote to me from Châtellerault, dated November 10, he seemed to be of the same opinion; "Already says he, I "fancy I see the theatre raised to renew our tra-"gedies." With this melancholy expectation, my resolution was already settled, to dispose of all my employments to those persons who should be recommended to me by Conchini and his wife, as money seemed to be cheapest with them. I intended to send one third of the sums raised by these sales to Switzerland, another to Venice, and another to Holland, where I proposed to retire myself, when the storm appeared ready to break out, with all the money that by good œconomy I had saved out of my yearly revenue. Thus had I regulated my affairs; and that I made any alteration in this plan, was owing to the following circumstance.

That jealousy and misunderstanding which subsisted among the nobles and persons in office, render-

* These pieces are recited in Sully's Memoirs, at the end of the first volume, p. 469.

ed the ceremony of the coronation so tumultuous and disorderly, that it was expected some dangerous consequences would follow. I do not speak here of their disputes for rank and precedence only. The duke of Epernon, although for some years past, as it appeared, intimately connected with Conchini, yet one day, in concert with the duke of Eguillon, used language to him equally severe, injurious, and threatening, and this in public. The duke of Nevers, supported by the princes of the blood, treated Villeroi, Sillery, and Jeannin, in the same manner: they were seized with consternation and fear; they found that they had not power, and, doubtless, felt they were not innocent enough to repel these reproaches; and now began to be sensible of the need they had of me. It might have dangerous consequences, if the princes and nobles were suffered to go on in reproving the ministers of state. I appeared to them to be the only man capable of putting things upon another footing, by the authority, the respect, and even the awe, which my birth, my character, and my manners, had acquired me in the council; and they so earnestly solicited the queen to make use of her influence over me, to oblige me to return, that she sent me, by an express, the following letter.

"COUSIN,

"THE coronation of the king, monsieur my son, "being happily performed at Rheims, we shall, in "a short time, set out for Paris; and because many "affairs that require your presence, on account of "your employments, and the great abilities you "have shewn in the exercise of them, will be transacted the latter end of this year, and the beginning of the next, I desire you will return to "Paris with all possible haste, that we may find you "there upon our arrival. So, in full assurance that "you will not fail, I beseech God, &c. Written "at Rheims, October 6, 1610.

"Your good cousin,

"MARY."

I IMAGINED, that by eluding this journey for the preſent, they would think no more of it; therefore my anſwer to the queen was conceived in theſe terms:

"MADAM,

"MY inclination, my duty, and the honour you "do me, by remembring me, are all motives equal- "ly ſtrong to engage my obedience to your ma- "jeſty's commands; but a dangerous illneſs, from "which I am but lately recovered, has left me in "ſo weak a condition, and the certain knowledge "I have, that my preſence in the council is not "agreeable to ſeveral perſons, who have more "authority there than I have, oblige me moſt hum- "bly to intreat you, not to be offended that I delay "going to court till I have recovered my ſtrength; "and that when I do attend your majeſty there, you "will permit me, before thoſe perſons whom you "ſhall pleaſe to appoint, to give you an account "of my adminiſtration, to lay before you the "ſtate in which I leave the affairs of the king- "dom, and the form I think neceſſary to be "obſerved to keep them in the ſame order and "tranquility they are now. I muſt beg your "majeſty to believe that this will be the ſole end "of my journey, and that I have no intention "or deſire to concern myſelf any farther in the "adminiſtration of affairs. I believe I have ſettled "every thing relating to my employments in ſuch "a manner, as the ſecretaries of the Exchequer "and the other officers can certify to your majeſty, "that my preſence may be diſpenſed with till the "latter end of the year; at which time, if my "health will permit me, I ſhall not fail to go to "Paris, to pay all poſſible obedience to the king's "commands and yours; and upon this truth, I "beſeech the Creator, &c. From Montrond, "October 12, 1610."

THIS was not what the queen propoſed to herſelf from

from the ſtep ſhe had taken to recall me; ſhe perceived, that by delaying my return to court, I was only forming excuſes for appearing there no more; or that if I did come, the part I ſhould play there would not be very proper to oblige thoſe who had deſerted her favourite, again to ſolicit his friendſhip, which was all ſhe had in view; and to effect this, ſhe made uſe of all my friends *, my wife, my ſon, and my ſon-in-law particularly: ſhe began by an inſinuating and gracious behaviour to them; ſhewed ſuch an unreſerved confidence in me, added ſo many kind expreſſions, and promiſes ſo flattering to their hopes, that they were now more than ever confirmed in their belief, that I ſhould commit a great error by laying down my employments. She afterwards ſent them, one after the other, to me, charged with the moſt obliging letters, and the fulleſt aſſurances of her favour and eſteem. I endeavoured, but in vain, to make them ſenſible, that all this was deep art on the queen's ſide; their ſolicitations, their intreaties, became perſecution, which at length fatigued me ſo much, that being deſirous of avoiding reproaches, to which I ſaw no end, and conſidering likewiſe that my compliance with requeſts thus earneſtly urged, would expoſe me to no inconveniences for the preſent, I reſolved to throw myſelf, though fairly warned of my danger, into all the ſnare that were laid for me at court, and again poſtponed the execution of my firſt deſign.

I THEREFORE ſet forward to Paris, but ſhewed no great eagerneſs to get there, ſince I did not reach that city till the ſixteenth day after my departure from Montrond. The next morning, as I was preparing to go and pay my reſpects to the king and

* "Bouillon had orders to go to him (M. de Sully) at Paris, at his "return from his country-ſeat, and to aſſure him of the queen's re-"gard for him, and that ſhe would place the ſame confidence in him "the late king had. He accepted the queen's offer, &c." Hiſt de la Mere et du Fils, vol. p. i. 112.

the

the queen regent, I was informed, that the king would pafs the whole forenoon in the Tuilleries, and that the queen was to dine at Zamet's. I did not doubt but that my attending her there would be very acceptable to her; and indeed fhe received me in the moft gracious manner imaginable: fhe feveral times repeated, with an air of freedom and even pleafure, by which I myfelf was almoft impofed upon, that fhe would follow no other counfels but mine. She entreated me to attach myfelf to her fon, as I had done to the late king: fhe told me, that fhe would not fuffer me to lay down my employments; that fhe would take fuch meafures, that I fhould execute them in an abfolute independence; and defired me to begin with the accounts of the finances for the year 1611, as I ufed to do; none of the miniflers having fhewn themfelves willing to take this care upon them during my abfence, and fhe herfelf being defirous that I fhould continue to difcharge it. The queen continued her difcourfe till dinner was ferved: I can relate only a fmall part of it. When fhe rofe from table, fhe entertained me with the difputes that had happened during the coronation: fhe informed me, that the nobles had made an infinite number of demands, but that fhe had refolved to conclude nothing till my return: however, fhe avoided faying any thing particular on this head, but only told me, that fhe would talk to me more fully the firft opportunity, and would let me know what were the fervices fhe required of me on this occafion: thefe words feemed wholly free from referve. The whole court appeared fo gay, that it was but too probable this ferious converfation was extremely difagreeable; accordingly it gave place to others more common; and at three o'clock the queen returned to the Louvre.

I WENT thither the next day, to pay my refpects to the king, to the princes his brothers, and the princeffes his fifters. This part of the court was ftill

ſtill untainted; the governeſſes, the nurſes, the other women and officers, which compoſed the houſhold of theſe young princes, formed a kind of ſeparate people, to whom the memory of king Henry was ſtill dear: the ſource of their tears and lamentations were not yet dried up; I wept with them, while we talked of that good prince; they conjured me, by every motive which they thought could make any impreſſion upon my mind, by the friendſhip Henry had for me, by my attachment to him, not to abandon the children of a father, to whom I had now no other way of acquitting myſelf of what I owed him. Their intreaties and their tenderneſs could add nothing to thoſe ſentiments of gratitude and affection which filled my heart, and, to our mutual misfortune, could not increaſe my power of ſerving them. Upon my attentively viewing the three princes, I thought I diſcovered in the countenance and behaviour of the young king, ſtrong indications of thoſe happy diſpoſitions which time has ſince ripened and diſcloſed. I imparted my thoughts to my wife when I returned home; but it was with grief that I judged, heaven would not give a long life to the ſecond of theſe princes †.

I WAS viſited by almoſt the whole court, with all thoſe falſe ſhews of friendſhip, thoſe praiſes and civilities, which never ſo nearly reſemble the true, as when the heart has the leaſt ſhare in them. Conchini, who had taken care to have it inſinuated to me by Zamet and D'Argouges, that he was the perſon to whom I was moſt obliged for the gracious reception I had met with from the queen, and for her kind intentions towards me, waited three whole days in expectation that I ſhould acknowledge this favour, by making him a compli-

† This prince died the 16th or 17th of November in the next year, at the age of four years and a half: a quantity of water was found in his head; the too great thickneſs of the ſkull ſtopping the perſpiration in that part; which proved the innocence of Le-Maitre, phyſician to the children of France, who was accuſed of having poiſoned this young prince. Merc. Franç. ann. 1611, p. 158.

mentary visit; which the courtiers had accustomed him to look upon as a tribute due to his great influence and authority; or that I should at least send some person to discharge this duty for me. However, as he neither saw me, nor received any message from me, he condescended at length to make me a visit: but that I might not assume too much upon a step by which he conceived that he degraded himself, he was very careful to make me sensible that he came only upon his own business: and indeed our conversation turned chiefly upon his post of first gentleman of the bedchamber; upon his pensions, which the queen had ordered should be carried to account in the same manner as those of Bellegarde; and upon a gift which he had lately received out of the offices of the gabelle in Languedoc, for which he had obtained a brevet before the late king's death; but this I did not think proper to mention to him. I thought my answers to all this were not calculated to inspire him with any inclination to quit the subject he was upon, and for which he said he had come to me; yet he could not help it: but I believe it was not long before he repented it; for having slided in, by way of advice, that the best thing I could do, would be to comply with the queen in all things, and accommodate myself wholly to her will (which was tacitly charging me with ruining my own affairs by my obstinacy), I made him this short and severe answer, That I would pay an exact obedience to all the commands of the queen regent, when they were for the service of the king, the advantage of affairs, and the relief of the people; and when my honour and my conscience told me I might do it, without prejudicing either. Every word he uttered seemed to increase the aversion I had to him; he added something more, but with that caution which my behaviour to him seemed to authorise. I answered with equal coolness and reserve, and we parted very ill satisfied with each other; he, I believe,

with

with fewer hopes than ever of moulding me to his purpoſe; and I full of grief at the advancement of thoſe misfortunes which this preſumptuous inſatiable man, without abilities, without experience, yet inveſted with an abſolute authority, was bringing upon France.

It appeared to me, from the day after this converſation, that things were greatly altered: the queen, whom I went to wait upon at the Louvre, ſeemed to have loſt much of her former graciouſneſs; yet ſhe conſtrained herſelf to preſerve ſome appearance of it, that the alteration might not be too remarkable, and to hinder me from imputing it to the converſation I had the day before with Conchini: ſhe again mentioned to me the importunate demands of the grandees, taxed them with extravagance, and ſeemed reſolved to refer them to the council; at which ſhe deſired I would always be preſent, to take care that nothing paſſed there contrary to the intereſt of the king and the ſtate. She promiſed me, upon her royal word, preſenting her hand at the ſame time to me, that ſhe would ſupport me there as ſtrenuouſly as the late king had done. I loſt all my ſuſpicions at this declaration; I flattered myſelf for a moment that this princeſs, having ſeriouſly reflected on all that had lately happened, was become ſenſible of the danger of purſuing thoſe meaſures they wanted to engage her in; but I was ſoon undeceived.

Prepared as I was for irregular proceedings, I could not, without extreme ſurprize, ſee, that ſcarcely any buſineſs was tranſacted in the council, but what related to gifts to the nobles, to augmentations of the penſions to perſons in office, the paying of debts which had been aboliſhed, the abatement of farms, and diſcharges of the farmers, and revocations of the contracts made for the rents, regiſtries, and domains; creations of new offices, exemptions, and privileges; in a word, a thouſand ſchemes to render the people miſerable, inſtead of applying the

treaſur

treasures amassed by the late king to their relief, as in justice ought to have been done; since the circumstances of affairs were so changed, that the design for which they were raised could not be executed: but the rapaciousness of the great lords would have swallowed sums far more considerable. Here follow the demands, which the chief amongst them endeavoured to oblige the queen and the council to grant them. It must not be expected here, that this article can extend itself into a list, as I am afraid the other will appear, though I have cut off the demand of trebling and doubling the pensions, as a matter common to almost all the articles.

At the head of this list I shall put M. the prince, who caused me to be solicited sometimes openly, sometimes in a covert manner, to support his pretensions to the government of Château-Trompette, to that of Blaye, and to the principality of Orange, extended as far as the borders of the Rhone. The count of Soissons demanded the government of the old palace of Rouen, that of the castle of Caën, and that an edict on linen-cloth should be created for his profit, which I have mentioned in its place. The duke of Lorrain demanded the payment of the whole sum expressed in his treaty, although I had settled this affair a long time ago, when it was agreed that that sum should be reduced two thirds. The duke of Guise solicited for a marriage between himself and madame de Montpensier; for the revocation of the rights of patents in Provence, and of offices for collecting the duties at the gates of Marseilles; he demanded likewise that his debts should be paid. The duke of Maine demanded other sums, besides those expressed in his treaty. D'Eguillon, a gift of thirty thousand crowns; the government of Bresse, and the city of Bourg; and the embassy of Spain with excessive appointments. Joinville, the government of Auvergne, or the first that became vacant. The duke of Nevers demanded the property of the gabelles

belles of Réthelois, with the governments of Mézieres and Saint-Menchoût. The duke of Epernon, a body of infantry kept conſtantly on foot; the reverſion of his government for his ſon; fortifications to be raiſed at Angoulême and at Xaintes; Metz, and the county of Meſſin, taken from Montigny. The duke of Bouillon demanded a ſum of money, for the payment of old debts, which he pretended were due to him; the aids, tailles, and gabelles, of the viſcounty of Turenne, to his uſe; and that the homage of this viſcounty ſhould be reduced to a ſimple homage; the arrears of his garriſons and his penſions during his exile; the right of holding general aſſemblies of the reformed religion. The chancellor demanded the money ariſing from the petty ſeals, his ſalary to be doubled, and letters of nobility in Normandy. Villeroy demanded, that a garriſon ſhould be maintained at Lyons, the royal lieutenancy of the province taken from Saint-Chaumont; a marſhal's ſtaff for his ſon d'Alincourt, the repeal of a bargain which I had made for the repurchaſe of the crown lands in that province, and the mortgages of his regiſtries upon the king's lands.

It will be eaſily imagined that Conchini's demands were not leſs conſiderable than thoſe of any other; a marſhal's ſtaff, the governments of Bourg, Dieppe, and Pont-de-l'arche; a donation of the money produced by the offices of the gabelle of Languedoc, paſſed in the form of a comptant; the profit ariſing from the reduction made upon public works, granted to Moiſſet and to Feydeau: this was his portion. Châteauvieux, the chevalier de Sillery, Dollé, Déagent, Arnaud the intendant, Duret the phyſician, all the members of the queen's private council, who ſolicited ſo well for others, did not forget their own affairs. It would be almoſt the ſame thing to enumerate all thoſe perſons of any quality who had a ſhare in this profuſe diſtribution of penſions, gratuities,

ties, privileges, appointments, &c. as to name those who were comprehended in this list, for every one had some claim there; the princes, governors of provinces, the lieutenant-civil, the prêvot des marchands, and even the societies and sovereign courts; all the officers of the crown were to have their pensions augmented twenty-four thousand livres each; and the salaries of every member of the council raised in proportion, and their number to be considerably increased. In a word, there seemed to be a general conspiracy to pillage the royal treasure, which was now considered as a lawful prize.

The indignation which I felt in myself against a licentiousness that degenerated into an attempt upon the royal authority, would not permit me to examine whether the resolution I had taken, singly to oppose this multitude of rapacious courtiers, was absolutely prudent; but this nothing could persuade me from doing, while the place I held in the council authorised such a conduct. My honour, my conscience, my reputation, which I was called upon to support; the interest of the king and the people, whose only defender I considered myself; would not permit me to attend to my own safety: the last words, nay, the intreaties of the qneen regent, gave me a right to oppose them; and though I was very sensible that she did not desire I should understand them literally, yet, all things considered, I was going to render her a service so essential, that she could not, or ought not to disavow it: and yet I had another motive, which I will not scruple to declare, since I would have my most secret sentiments known to the reader. That desire of glory, self-love, which, when under the direction of reason and justice, has always appeared to me to have something great and noble in it; self-love, I say, dictated to me, that since, sooner or later, I must necessarily be removed from the ministry, I should risk but little by hastening the moment of my dismission; and that I should

gain a great deal by giving a convincing proof, that this disgrace would not have happened to me, had I not opposed the unjustifiable measures I saw pursued by the council, and disdained the servile compliance of the rest of the courtiers: there remains to unhappy virtue this last recompence for the disappointment of its good designs, that it shines with redoubled splendor amidst opposition and persecution.

The queen soon left me only this consolation in the painful labours I began to sustain; all her conduct served to shew me, that she had only recalled me to Paris, and opposed me to the whole court at this tumultuous time, to reduce me to the fatal alternative of incurring the public contempt if I betrayed my duty, or particular enemies (which was still more to be dreaded) if I discharged it. A demand, which I had rendered of no effect in full council, at the risk of making myself a thousand cruel and implacable enemies, was afterwards privately granted as a gratuity by this princess and her confidant.

It is not my design to give a detail of all the schemes that, during this short time, were set on foot in the council, nor of what was said or done to render them ineffectual; it would be, in reality, to describe so many suits, where, as in law, they did not fail to make use of all the methods commonly practised to corrupt a judge too rigidly just, and against which I was so much the more incited to exclaim, as they attempted likewise to carry their point, either by secret plots or by open cabals. I shall give the reader one example, which will serve to shew that the evil was great enough to demand remedies no less violent than those I made use of. The article relating to Villeroy, or rather to d'Alincourt, is not the least curious or important of those which the reader has already had some account of.

When d'Alincourt demanded, that a strong garrison should be placed in the city of Lyons, of which

which he was governor, and maintained at the king's expence, he had two ends to anſwer by it; one was to increaſe his income, by the profits ariſing from this garriſon: for indeed he had occaſion for great riches, to enable him to live as he propoſed to do, not merely as a marſhal of France (a dignity which he expected to be raiſed to in a very little time) but with the ſtate and retinue of a prince: vain pageantry, and doubly ridiculous, in one who had only large poſſeſſions to ſupply the diſadvantages of a mean birth *. The other was to compel the Lyonnois, by the terror with which ſo many forces would inſpire them, to ſacrifice to him their moſt antient rights and privileges, which for a long time he had a deſign to fall upon. As for the treaty made for the redemption of the royal domain, which in that province amounted to twelve hundred thouſand livres, he was inclined to demand the ſuppreſſion of it, becauſe thoſe that were concerned in that affair

† Rymer's Fœdera, ann. 1518, in reciting the diſpatches or inſtructions for the ſolemn embaſſy from Henry VIII. to Francis I. give the titles of knight, lord of Villeroi, &c. to Nicholas de Neufville, great grandfather of the ſecretary of ſtate, and one of thoſe ambaſſadors extraordinary. Sauval, in his Antiquities of Paris, vol. III. p. 612. recites letters patent, dated at Cognac, in February, 1519, wherein Francis I. ſtiles him, our well-beloved and faithful counſellor, Nicholas de Neufville, knight, lord of Villeroi, &c. The dedication of Clement Marot, of his poem, intituled, *Le Temple de Cupidon*, is addreſſed to him, by the title of, Meſſire Nicholas de Neufville, knight, &c. This dedication which had been ſuppreſſed in moſt even of the old editions of the works of that poet, has been reſtored in the edition of 1731, printed at the Hague. Lord Herbert, in the life of Henry VIII. makes honourable mention of this Nicholas de Neufville. Baluze in his accounts, No. 175, 176, ſpeaking of the accounts of M. de Villeroi, ambaſſador in England, adds the title of grand-audiencier in France. The liſt of the officers of the dukes of Burgundy, p. 133. mentions one Nicholas de Neufville, as carver; and Amblart de Neufville, as clerk of the kitchen. The Ducatiana, p. 197, makes mention of Nicholas de Neufville, ſent ambaſſador to Rome by Lewis XII. in 1500; and quotes on this ſubject, the life of Alexander VI. vol. ii. p. 292. Theſe facts have eſcaped Moreri, and the greateſt part of our hiſtorians and genealogiſts, who, in other reſpects, have done that juſtice to the illuſtrious houſe of Villeroi, which the author of theſe Memoirs has refuſed to it.

ſecured

secured to him a present of an hundred thousand livres, if he could by any means hinder that redemption from taking place.

His designs, however, were crossed by two vigilant enemies: these were the whole city of Lyons, and Saint-Chaumont, the king's lieutenant in that province; but to these he opposed the chancellor Sillery, and Villeroi his father, both very powerful in the council, and in high favour with the queen. These he set on to solicit for him, and with the more eagerness, because he found by my discourse, when he came to intreat me to be favourable to his pretensions, that he could not depend upon me in the council, before whom these demands were to be laid; he saw plainly, that he would have occasion for all his batteries; but he did not doubt of his success, when he was informed that his father and Sillery had brought over Conchini to his party, who afterwards prevailed upon the queen to espouse it likewise.

We were all assembled in the great closet, where a council was to be held upon this affair, when the queen came up and spoke to me in favour of d'Alincourt: I told her majesty, with great frankness, that she must not expect I would give my vote for a compliance with two such unjust proposals; that it was not reasonable the king should lose twelve hundred thousand livres, to put one hundred thousand in the pocket of M. d'Alincourt; that this was to open the way for every one else to get the like treaties for redemption of the domain, and other parts of the royal revenue, which amounted to near fifty millions, revoked all over the kingdom: that I would as strenuously oppose his other demand, although I knew it would be alledged, that the council had no right to take cognizance of it, and that it was only laid before it to get the first authorised; that by these measures we were going to expose one of the chief cities of the kingdom, hitherto well

affected and loyal, to the danger of violating their allegiance, merely to gratify an unreasonable request, since by the last treaty which I myself had concluded with cardinal Aldobrandin for the duke of Savoy, his majesty being to keep possession of Bresse, and of both the borders of the Rhone, Lyons was no longer a frontier city, and having no more neighbours to fear, had no farther occasion for a garrison in it.

The queen seemed to be satisfied with these reasons, and turned towards Villeroi, as if to make him approve of them likewise; but he was not so easily repulsed, he gave her reasons in answer to mine, some good and some bad; and when he came to the article of the garrison, he told her, that it was indeed true, the Spaniards and Savoyards were not such near neighbours of this city as formerly, therefore it was not against their attempts that it was necessary to secure the city of Lyons, since they were moreover upon the point of becoming our friends and allies, but that the true enemies to be feared were the huguenots, who being now in a better condition, had probably a greater inclination than ever to make an attempt upon that city: he named Lesdiguieres in particular, as one from whom most danger was to be apprehended.

Berenguéville overheard what Villeroi said to the queen, and repeated every word to me; this confirmed to me the truth of what I had heard concerning the secret council held at the house of Ubaldini, the pope's nuncio. I saw with indignation, that the sole view of these gentlemen was to set the catholics and protestants in France at variance, as well as in all Europe. I was no less shocked at Villeroi's accusation of a man allied to my family, and rising up hastily, I went towards the queen, who was still listening to him, and told her, that I had forgot to forewarn her of a thing which I was as well assured of, as if I had been a witness of it, and this was, that Villeroi, in his design of rendering her favour-

favourable to his ſon's pretenſions, cared but little by what means this was brought about; and did not ſcruple to make the falſeſt and moſt malignant repreſentations againſt the proteſtants, without even excepting one, whom a thouſand great and good ſervices ought to place out of the reach of ſuſpicion; that his malice went ſo far as to treat them as enemies, whom France had more reaſon to fear than Spain itſelf; that if her majeſty, judging Villeroi's arguments and mine to be of equal weight, ſhould reſolve to behold the proteſtants and the Spaniards in the ſame light, nothing remained for her to do (and I looked ſtedfaſtly upon him) but to exclude us both from the council. This was a ſevere ſtroke upon Villeroi; but this man, who had neither abilities to ſpeak in publick, nor knew how to give his vote in the council, had not a ſingle word to ſay in anſwer to me; indeed his ſurprize, and the ſecret reproaches of his own conſcience, might well render him dumb upon this occaſion: all he did was to go to that part of the room where the chancellor and the duke of Epernon were conferring together; and the queen alſo, quitting her place without anſwering me, went to join the count of Soiſſons and marechal Briſſac, who were talking in private. I foreboded no good from theſe ſeveral connexions.

NOTHING was done this day in d'Alincourt's affair, and I ſometimes flattered myſelf that the meaſures I had taken would hinder it from being reſumed; but it was only put off till his father and himſelf, the chancellor and his brother, by new cabals with Conchini and the counſellors, ſecured all the votes in their favour, even that of Bethune my brother, who came to me with an intention to make one effort more to ſoften me: he repreſented to me, that my oppoſition was in vain, and would have no other conſequence but to bring every body upon my back; that I ſhould have the mortification to ſee that my example would not be followed even by my

nearest relations. I replied, that I never expected any thing else from him, but that I was absolutely determined to continue to the end faithful in the performance of my duty: and I kept my word, for in the first council that was held on this occasion, seeing that the counsellor to whose charge it fell that day was ready to make his report, I asked him hastily, what was the business? he replied, that it related to some propositals which were to be made concerning the domain in Lyonnois. I interrupted him, saying, that I was well assured d'Alincourt, who was most interested in that affair, had formed so strong a party for him in the council, by the mediation of his friends and relations, that it was already resolved on, even before it was laid before it; but that I protested against it, as being absolutely contrary to his majesty's interest; and that I desired a certificate of my protestation from the clerk, to send it to the parliament to be registered there, in order that this writing might one day serve to shew the king the bad conduct pursued by his council after the death of the king his predecessor †.

† This account perfectly agrees with what is said in l'Histoire de la Mere et du Fils: "The duke of Sully," says that historian, "continued to exercise his office for a fortnight or three weeks after "the coronation was performed, at which time the disputes on account of the Swiss at Lyons, which I have spoke of before, were renewed, because Villeroi wanted to have their pay charged on the "general receipts of that city. The duke of Sully was so much out "of temper on this score, that not content with maintaining, it was "unreasonable to load the king with so great an expence, when the "inhabitants of Lyons were sufficient to keep guards themselves, as "they had always been used to do: he also treated the chancellor, "who sided with Villeroi, roughly, telling him, they were all agreed "amongst themselves to ruin the king's affairs. As this was an affront to all these ministers in common, they joined their endeavours "to ruin the duke, the harshness of whose temper was not to be softened." This writer afterwards relates the several steps that were taken to unite the ministers with the count of Soissons, the marquis of Ancre, the marquis de Cœuvres, and others, against the duke of Sully. As this author is one of the duke of Sully's enemies, I quote him on purpose to confirm the truth of what the duke says, that he might have kept his posts, if he would have joined in the measures of the new council; and that his perseverance in the support of justice, the public

THESE laſt words, which, it muſt be granted, were very ſevere, had no other effect, than to ſuſpend, for a ſhort time, the deliberation they were preparing for. No one replied; a general conſternation ſeized all that were preſent; the chancellor alone, without ſhewing any emotion, ſaid to the counſellor, "Lay other papers before us, and let us "proceed to affairs of a different kind; we ſhall "find a time for this when theſe heats and animoſi-"ties are over, as it generally happens, in things "that are moſt conteſted." The counſellor obeyed; the other matters were diſcuſſed; and d'Alincourt's demand, when it was next laid before the council, was granted without oppoſition: but this was not till I myſelf was baniſhed from the board; which happened in ſo ſhort a time afterwards, that it may be ſaid it was by this vigorous effort I finiſhed my career.

I HAD now no other part to take but to retire from court. I had given ſufficient proofs to all

public intereſt, and the late king's plan of government, was the cauſe of his diſgrace. All men of ſenſe have not, however, given the ſame judgment on his inflexibility with the author I am ſpeaking of, though all the enemies of that miniſter have agreed with him in it. In the appendix to the Merc. Franç. for the year 1610, p. 9. we find an entire diſcourſe on this ſubject, which juſtifies him in a manner extremely to his honour. The Memoirs de Villeroi, vol III. p. 259. alſo ſpeaks of him in the following manner: "The change which the ſaid ſieur de Sul-"ly made in the condition of France by retrieving her from a ſtate of "indigence, and rendering her rich and opulent, by his œconony and "induſtry, ſufficiently proves his abilities: his free remonſtrances to "the king, and his oppoſition to all great men, diſcover his probity: "and his having been able to ſtand his ground amongſt ſo many ene-"mies, without ſinking under his own apprehenſions, or their threats, "ſhews how great were his prudence and courage; even thoſe who "envy him are compelled to own, that he alone is more uſeful to "the public, and has more knowledge of buſineſs, than all the reſt "together; and provided he would abate a little of his auſterity, he "would be a ſervant worthy of your majeſty. Though they endea-"vour to keep him from having any concern in the management of "affairs, yet that cannot ſtop him from freely ſpeaking his ſenti-"ments of the little reſpect paid to the memory of the late king, and "of the ſmall deference ſhewn to our young prince, &c." See alſo the manuſcript diſcourſe cited by us in the preface to this work.

France, that it was not for want of the most strenuous efforts on my side that the affairs of the state were plunged into disorder: it was become impossible for me to apply any remedy to the increasing evil. This no one doubted of: I struggled to no purpose; and all that I had for the price of my labours and my good intentions, was the hatred of those persons whose interest it would have been to second them: Conchini employed his favour, the princes of the blood their authority, the other persons in office their credit, only to render me odious. I saw nothing preparing for me for the future, but new mortifications and other troubles. All my actions, my words, nay my silence itself, witnessed against persons who were inwardly struck with the injustice of these reproaches. My post of superintendant of the finances was eagerly coveted by two princes of the blood, each of whom was made to hope that he should gain it when I was driven from court. By staying there too long, I exposed myself to the danger of being violently dispossessed of all my other employments. Those of my friends, who were most sincere, and best knew the plots that were forming against me, were continually giving me counsels which I was convinced deserved to have more weight with me, than the solicitations of some of my relations, who were either carried away by a mistaken tenderness for me, or regard to their own interest. I therefore resolved to defer no longer the resignation of my two employments of superintendant of the finances and governor of the Bastile, which were the most panted after, as by them they could dispose of the revenues and treasures of the king, hoping to purchase by this sacrifice, which might have still some appearance of being voluntary, the confirmation of all my other dignities *, which

* The duke of Sully at that time bore the following titles: Maximilian de Bethune, knight, duke of Sully, peer of France, sovereign prince of Henrichemont and Boisbelle, marquis of Rosni, count of

it was not in the power of my enemies to deprive me of, especially if I took the precaution of removing for ever out of their sight an object which could never fail of re-animating their hatred, by the effect of a jealousy unavoidable, while I continued amongst them; and, that I might do all at once, I fixed myself in a resolution to quit the court, and Paris itself, at the same time that I resigned all further share in the administration of affairs.

I PREPARED to execute this design on the beginning of the year 1611 *. The queen appeared de-

of Dourdan, lord of Orval, Montrond, and St. Amand, baron of Espineuil, Bruyeres-le-Chastel, Villebon, La-Chapelle, Noyion, Baugy, and Bontin, chancellor to the king in all the councils, captain-lieutenant of two hundred gens d'armes under the queen's command, grand-master and captain-general of the artillery, surveyor-general of France, superintendant of the king's finances, fortifications, and buildings, governor, and the king's lieutenant-general of the provinces of Poitou, Châtelleraud, and Laudun, governor of Mante and Gergeau, and captain of the castle of the Bastile.

* Here follow several accounts of this event, very different one from the other: "The year 1611 was begun with the retirement of "M. de Sully, who, at the instigation, and by the intrigues of the "two princes of the blood, was drove from the management of af- "fairs. The superintendance of the finances, and the custody of the "king's treasure, was taken from him. The queen also took the "Bastile out of his hands, and gave the custody thereof to M. de "Châteauneuf [it should be Châteauvieux.] The finances were put "under the direction of Messrs. de Châteauneuf, the president de "Thou, and Jeannin: but the last was also made comptroller-gene- "ral of the finances, which threw the sole management of them in- "to his hands, to the exclusion of the other two, who assisted only "in the direction." Bassompierre's Memoirs, vol. I. p. 308.

"The 24th of this month (January) M. de Sully quitted the arse- "nal. There is a report that a brevet is issued to appoint him mar- "shal of France, with a grant of some thousands of crowns as a re- "compence to him. He has voluntarily resigned the direction of "the finances, *tanquam è speculo prævidens tempestatem futuram.*" Journal de l'Etoile, page 256.

"The prince of Condé and the count of Soissons spoke the first of "it to the queen, the ministers seconded them, and the marquis of "Ancre gave him the finishing stroke. Thus he found himself un- "der the necessity of retiring in the beginning of February, &c." Hist. de la Mere & du Fils, vol. I. p. 235.

"Some have written that the duke of Sully, shortly after the re- "conciliation of the count of Soissons and the duke of Guise, volun- "tarily resigned into the queen's hands, as well the Bastile, as the

ſirous of oppoſing it; but this was only for form's ſake. Here follows the letter ſhe wrote to me upon this occaſion.

" ſuperintendancy of the finances. Others ſay, that making an offer " to the queen to give up all his poſts, he was taken at his word: " others have ſpoken differently of it. He himſelf ſays the con- " trary in the letter he wrote to the queen, which was printed ſhort- " ly after." Merc. Franç. anno 1611.

This letter is afterwards recited, but is not mentioned in Sully's Memoirs. The Memoirs of the regency of Mary de Medicis, vol. I. p. 57. diſſent alſo from the foregoing accounts, aſſerting that the duke of Sully earneſtly ſolicited the queen to diſmiſs him, which ſhe with great reluctance conſented to.

There may poſſibly be ſome truth in both theſe opinions: That is, that the duke of Sully would, out of queſtion, have freely conſented to keep his poſts, provided he could have enjoyed them with the ſame authority, though not with the ſame ſatisfaction, as under the late king: but the efforts he made for that purpoſe alienated the queen, the great men, and the miniſters from him, and at laſt increaſed his diſguſt, as he found all his endeavours would be in vain. There is nothing in Matthieu's account diſcordant with this notion: on the contrary, he agrees to what is ſaid in theſe Memoirs. " The duke " of Sully, ſays he, after the death of Henry the Great, immediately " ſaw he ſhould not poſſeſs the ſame authority under the new reign as " he did under the laſt; and that the enmity of the count of Soiſſons " would bring on his ruin. As the direction of the finances had al- " ready been taken from him, the queen was adviſed to deprive him " alſo of the Baſtile. This was eſteemed ſo bold a ſtep, that it was " ſaid Henry the Great would not have dared to have taken it for fear " of ſtirring up thoſe of the duke's religion to reſent it. She, never- " theleſs, ſaw him readily obey her commands to reſign the Baſtile to " Châteauvieux, one of the knights of honour. Had he made any " oppoſition, ſome of the great men at court, who were afraid his " ſteadineſs might be drawn into precedent, would have rendered this " diſmiſſion more difficult. As ſoon as he was ſtript of this office, " he ſaw the prejudice reſulting from his having ſo eaſily ſubmitted: " and deſired the queen's permiſſion to go to Roſny, ſaying he would " not ſtay there above three days. When he was there thoſe of his " religion cautioned him not to go back to court, where he had been " ſo ill treated. His wife and brother on the contrary urged him to " return, and he did ſo accordingly; but thoſe who had been of the " oppoſite opinion withdrew themſelves from him, eſteeming it a " meanneſs in him not to ſhew a greater reſentment for ſuch ill uſage. " The queen received him favourably; but the count of Soiſſons " cauſed him to be kept from having any concern in buſineſs, which " had been ſo much under his immediate management in the late " king's reign. Seeing himſelf thus fallen both from his credit and " employments, he went to Sully; and not thinking himſelf in ſafe- " ty enough there, he returned into the province of Fourbon." This writer adds, that one of the principal motives which induced the proteſtants

" Cousin,

" I hear, with concern, that you have taken a re-
" solution to discharge yourself of the care of the
" king my son's affairs, particularly of those relating
" to the finances, contrary to the hope I had con-
" ceived, that you would continue to perform the
" duties of that employment as you did in the
" time of the late king my lord. I entreat you to
" think well of this design before you put it into
" execution, and let me know your last determina-
" tion, that I may regulate mine upon it. So be-
" seeching God, &c."

Paris, Jan. 24, 1611.

My answer to this letter being such as the queen probably expected, she sent Bouillon to me two days afterwards with the brevets of discharge from my two employments, of superintendant of the finances and governor of the Bastile, in the most authentic form, and, at the same time, most advantageous for me. Her majesty in these brevets declared, that it was at my repeated solicitation she had granted me leave to resign these places; and that I should not hereafter, upon any pretence whatever, be questioned concerning my conduct while I held them.

To these brevets was added another, dated January 27, by which her majesty, in consideration of the services the late king had received from me during a long course of years, and of which she made a most honourable mention, granted me a donation of three hundred thousand livres, to be paid out of the royal treasury, free from the duty of the fifth and tenth penny, and the duty given to the order of the

testants to endeavour to increase his discontent, was their desire of having his great fortune engaged for the advantage of the common cause: but that he submitted to the prudent advice given him by La-Vallée, the lieutenant-general of the artillery, who has been mentioned before, to keep himself quite retired, without having any concern in the quarrels which soon after happened. Ib. p. 22.

Holy Ghoſt, from which his majeſty was deſirous I ſhould be exempted. The letters I received the following days from their majeſties, either contained orders to give up the caſtle of the Baſtile to the ſieur de Châteauvieux, whom they had made king's lieutenant of it, or acquittals for ſome jewels of the crown which I had delivered back into their hands, part of which conſiſted of a jewel called the Licorne, and ſome other rings and jewels, for which a promiſſory note of mine for ten thouſand livres was lodged with Puget, who now returned it me, and part of three large rubies, for which I had given my receipt to madame Le-Grand, when I took them out of her hands, where they were mortgaged.

I EMPLOYED the remainder of the time I ſtaid in Paris in regulating my domeſtic affairs, in a detail of which the reader would find nothing to merit his attention, except probably the counſels I gave to my ſecretaries. I had generally ſix principal ones, as well for the buſineſs of my four chief offices of the crown, as for any extraordinary affairs I might have to tranſact with the court, and I found it neceſſary to have a great many other clerks or tranſcribers under them: but thoſe I ſhall mention here were my chief ſecretaries, whoſe abilities and exact diſcharge of their ſeveral duties, well deſerved that I ſhould give them a ſhare in affairs of importance, and my confidence in nice and delicate conjunctures; among theſe, the four brothers of the name of Arnaud were favoured in a particular manner by me. The eldeſt died while he was yet young, many years before the king was aſſaſſinated. I had ſo great a regard for the ſecond, that from being my ſecretary only, I procured him to be made counſellor of ſtate, and intendant of the finances: the third went into the army, and was made a colonel of a regiment of horſe: and to the laſt I gave the poſt of treaſurer of France, and that of overſeer of the highways. All my other ſecretaries were provided

vided for in proportion. I believe I ſhall not be accuſed of having broken one of the laws of nature, which directs that the adherents to us, or perhaps we ſay more properly, to our places, ſhould not be diſappointed of thoſe rewards, which it is in our power to beſtow upon them according to their merit. Duret was preferred to be a treaſurer of France, preſident of the chamber of accounts, and comptroller-general of the finances; Renouard was made auditor of accounts; La-Clavelle overſeer of the bridges and cauſeways; Du-Maurier, who had quitted the duke of Bouillon's ſervice for mine, was employed in public affairs, to which his genius and inclination led him, and has been ſince ambaſſador to Holland; Murat was made treaſurer of the extraordinary of war; La-Font, whom I have often mentioned in theſe Memoirs, acquired the favour and confidence of the late king, who, among other benefits that he beſtowed upon him, made him overſeer of his furniture; Gillot was made ſecretary of the ordnance. All theſe men were truly ſenſible how much they were going to loſe by my retreat, and they omitted no ſort of entreaties or methods to prevail upon me to alter my reſolution. I will do moſt of them the juſtice to declare, that I believe, by acting thus, they thought they were ſerving my intereſt at leaſt as much as their own: but as for the two Arnauds, the eldeſt eſpecially, and two or three more, they were but little affected with my purpoſe. They would even have been grieved if I had altered my opinion; yet it was they who oppoſed it moſt. Arnaud the elder added, on this occaſion, hypocriſy to avarice and ingratitude: meanly as he thought of Jeannin's abilities for the office of ſuperintendant of the finances, for which he looked upon himſelf as much better qualified, he was one of thoſe who ſolicited Conchini moſt earneſtly to procure it for that miniſter, who he flattered himſelf

ſelf would leave the chief management of it to him.

I PENETRATED into the inmoſt receſſes of their hearts. I diſcovered views and deſigns which they probably imagined were ſufficiently concealed; but I ſuppreſſed a reſentment unworthy of me; and, taking them aſide one after the other, I gave them ſuch advice as, from the preſent conjuncture of the times, and the knowledge I had of their diſpoſitions, was moſt likely to advance their fortunes: I told the elder Arnaud, that he had it in his power to make his court very ſucceſsfully to the queen, by the great number of excellent memoirs upon the moſt important affairs of the finances, which were lodged in his hands; and, that this ſacrifice might loſe no part of its merit, I adviſed him to offer it by madame de Conchini, ſeriouſly recommending it to him, at the ſame time, to devote himſelf faithfully to her ſervice: I adviſed his brother to uſe his utmoſt endeavours to obtain the favour of the chancellor, of Villeroi, Jeannin, and, above all, Conchini's, who was the only oracle which it was neceſſary for him to conſult in the exerciſe of his employment; and I deſired the colonel himſelf to make his court to thoſe very perſons.

DURET, beſides all thoſe, might apply himſelf to the commander † and to Dollé; and this I recommended to him to do. Du Maurier needed only to be made known to Villeroi, by carefully cultivating his friendſhip, which I aſſured him would be ſufficient; and with the knowledge he had of foreign affairs, joined to the talents he poſſeſſed of ſpeaking well, and of writing ſtill better, he might eaſily obtain of the queen and the favourite, ſome honourable employment. To Murat, who was accountable for his conduct to the ſecretary of ſtate, I recommended my intereſts at court; but to diſ-

† Noel de Sillery, brother to the chancellor.

charge

charge this truſt cautiouſly, and not without firſt aſking Villeroi's conſent. As for La-Clavelle, his ſubtle wit and proneneſs to flattery, ſecured him all poſſible ſucceſs with the miniſters, and even with d'Eſcures, who had more power than any body elſe to block up his way in the diſcharge of his office. La-Font's employment ſubjecting him wholly to the queen's will, or rather to Conchini's, he had but one path to follow, which I pointed out to him. The advice I gave to Renouard, was not to ſeek any other recommendation from his own court, excepting the importance which the force of his underſtanding might give him amongſt his aſſociates; and I deſired he would to this employment add that of taking care of my domeſtic affairs at Paris. Gillot I placed with my ſon, to ſuperintend the affairs of the ordnance; and, that every thing might be kept in the ſame order in which I had left it, I gave to my inferior ſecretaries and clerks ſuch advice as I thought moſt ſuitable to their humbler ſtation, and obliged thoſe who ſhewed moſt reluctance to comply with my meaſures, to confeſs at length, that, in what I had recommended to them, I had a particular view to that neceſſity which ſooner or later would force them to follow the rules I had preſcribed. This I accompanied with a compliment to each, and an obliging command to follow my directions, which had ſuch an appearance of ſincerity, that they yielded to my arguments; and they have not repented. I had no intention, however, to keep no more ſecretaries in my ſervice; but, being now out of place myſelf, I had no occaſion for men that were in, for this employment. I therefore took two new ſecretaries into my family, whoſe chief buſineſs, in a cabinet no longer occupied with the affairs of ſtate, was collecting and preparing theſe Memoirs for the public.

THIS done, and burying in eternal oblivion thoſe hopes, deſires, reſentments, and regrets, which any other

other in my situation might have formed, I bid a lasting adieu to the court, and with the same indifference as if it had not for so long a course of years been to me the theatre of glory, wealth, and happiness ‡. I lost at one stroke a king who was my benefactor and my support, and with him my fortune, my friends, and my favour. This loss generally brings along with it so many other mortifications, that, to those who have suffered it, it appears but the least part of their unhappiness. If this additional ill fortune is always the effect of particular enmities, certainly no one was more exposed to them than myself; yet history can furnish but few examples of ministers and favourites in disgrace, who were as much honoured and respected in their fall as I was; for it sometimes happens that public esteem succeeds to particular favour in supporting those who are unfortunate only, and when it does not form a counterweight strong enough to incline the ballance to their side, it is because these supposed oppressed persons have always some weak place by which they may be attacked, and which they find it very difficult to defend. Acknowledged probity and innocence will always have the advantage over envy, even at the very time when it seems most to triumph. My enemies therefore (for I have a right to apply this maxim to myself) could satisfy but a small

‡ "Though this blow was not given him unawares, and though he "saw it coming at a distance, he was not able to receive it with com- "posure, nor even without weakness. He submitted, because he "was compelled to it, but could not forbear complaining; and "when, by the queen's order, he was reminded that he had many "times offered her to lay down his employments, he answered, He "did it, not thinking he should be taken at his word, &c." Hist. de la Mere & du Fils, ib. p. 131. This writer adds many other stories of M. de Sully equally spightful: but to the reasons we have already given for not giving any great weight to his testimony, we may add, that he is the only one who speaks of him in this manner.

"On Saturday, the 5th of February, the duke of Sully left Paris, "after returning the grant he had received of 1000,000 crowns. "The duchess of Sully blamed his haughtiness and pride in doing "so." L'Etoile, ib. p. 257.

part

part of their rage againſt me, becauſe the victory they had gained was one of thoſe ſhameful advantages which it is thought neceſſary to conceal, and which is not enjoyed wholly without remorſe; nor did the ſatisfaction my enemies felt for my diſgrace, hinder ſome true Frenchmen, who eagerly embraced every occaſion of ſhewing their reſpect for the memory of the late king, from honouring a man who expected no more than to ſet out on his exile in privacy and peace. I was attended at my leaving Paris by more than three hundred horſe.

It was not while I was preſent, and in a condition to defend myſelf, that I expected to ſee my enemies uſe their utmoſt efforts againſt me: envy is a paſſion whoſe characteriſtic is cowardice, no leſs than malice and detraction: I was always perſuaded that they would ſeize eagerly the advantages my abſence afforded them. In effect, a few days were ſcarce elapſed after my arrival at Sully, when the whole court was filled with reports which tended not only to give a bad impreſſion of my conduct in public affairs, but alſo to render me enough ſuſpected to afford them ſome pretence for commencing a proſecution againſt me, the ſhame and grief of which was all they deſired I ſhould ſuffer §. On this occaſion I took ſuch meaſures as I thought every wiſe man ought to take, which was to diſarm envy the moſt effectual way, by preventing, with frequent letters, the minds of their majeſties from being prejudiced to my diſadvantage.

In the firſt, which I addreſſed to the king and queen, I complained that bad deſigns were formed

§ "He had no ſooner retired," ſays the Hiſtoire de la Mere & du Fils, p. 128, "but many prepared to purſue the victory over him, in "order to come in for a ſhare of his ſpoils.---But the queen at laſt, "with great reaſon, changed her meaſures, it not being held reaſonable to treat with ill uſage a perſon whoſe ſervices had been ſo "advantageous to France, without any other pretext, than that, by "his having been uſeful to the public, he had at the ſame time been "ſo to himſelf."

againſt

againſt me: I offered to juſtify my conduct by every method they could propoſe, and even, if neceſſary, by new ſervices: and, after giving their majeſties the ſtrongeſt aſſurances of obedience, fidelity, and innocence, I repreſented to them with ſome freedom, that, if they had been as well perſuaded of that innocence as they had given me room to believe, I ſhould have received proofs of it ere now, by the orders they would have been pleaſed to give for the performances of the ſeveral promiſes they had made me, with reſpect to my places, and to the gratuities which the king had granted me: that the firſt artifice practiſed by my enemies, had been to defer, and afterwards to hinder, if they could, the effect of thoſe promiſes, which, being ſo many proofs of their majeſties good opinion of me, while they ſubſiſted, it was dangerous to attempt any thing againſt me: and it was for this reaſon that I was ſo ſolicitous for their being accompliſhed.

To this letter I received an anſwer from the queen ſuch as I could have wiſhed: She obſerved in it, that my paſt ſervices, and my preſent inclinations, were ſo well known to the king and to her, that it was not in the power of any perſon whatever to alter their ſentiments with reſpect to me: that hitherto ſhe had not perceived it had been attempted; but, if it ſhould, it would be to no purpoſe; ſhe aſſured me it was not owing to any ill-will towards me, but to chance alone, that ſome little difficulties had been found in performing the agreements between his majeſty and me; but that they ſhould be obſerved with the utmoſt exactneſs. This letter is dated March 7, 1611.

It was not long before I ſent the queen another letter, of which I cannot diſpenſe with myſelf from giving the reader ſome account, becauſe what I there declared concerning the ſtate of my private affairs, was exactly conformable to the ſituation I found myſelf in upon my retiring from public buſineſs. I began

gan with recalling to her remembrance the open profeſſion I had always made of attachment to her perſon, and the proofs I had given of it, as well before as ſince her marriage; and here I mentioned certain particular circumſtances, when I drew upon myſelf ſome reproaches from the late king for ſupporting her againſt him on occaſions, when I thought I was labouring equally for both their intereſts. This led me to an eulogium on the good qualities of the queen regent, on which I founded the opinion I was to appear in this letter to have entertained, that ſhe had no part in the perſecutions raiſed againſt me at court.

THIS article I treated at great length. It being that for which the latter was chiefly written, I gave the queen to underſtand that I was well informed of the diſadvantageous reports which were ſpread againſt me in court; of the obſtacles my enemies were inceſſantly raiſing to hinder me from ſettling peaceably my private affairs; and, in a word, of the perquiſites which their majeſties propoſed to allow me in the offices, of which I could not be deprived. I aſſumed a right from the good intentions which I ſuppoſed this princeſs had towards me, founded upon the repeated aſſurances ſhe had given me of her eſteem, to complain to her of thoſe perſons who rendered theſe intentions ineffectual. I inſiſted particularly upon the favour and protection I had reaſon to expect from their majeſties while I was making that diſpoſition of my affairs, to which, for the ſake of peace, I had ſacrificed my intereſt, when it would have been ſo much the eaſier to have diſputed the ground with my adverſaries, as the motives by which they acted being almoſt generally known, I had every advantage over them which I could deſire. I here laid down conciſely the principal points of my management, and my ſhare of that wealth with which, by my labours and œconomy, I had enriched the kingdom till the year 1610, when I ſaw

saw all the measures I had taken to keep every thing in the same state of order and regularity at once overturned and destroyed; adding that time would shew whether the kingdom had most obligations to my enemies or to me.

I TOOK this opportunity to obviate some of their most specious accusations: I represented to the queen the great folly and absurdity they were guilty of for exclaiming against me for the vast riches they said I had acquired during the course of my favour with the late king, when in their hearts they despised me for not making greater advantages of so fair an opportunity, and were fully resolved not to follow my example. The narrow bounds of a letter would not permit me to say all I could in my own justification: I only observed to the queen, that it was easy for me to prove that that wealth, which they imputed to me as a crime, I acquired either by frugality and œconomy, or by the bounty of a master too generous and too grateful to leave a minister unrewarded, who devoted himself with an assiduity, rarely seen in a superintendant, to continual labours for the public good *: that it was sufficient for me that all the gratuities I had received from my master only, which he laid his commands upon me to accept; and this I could prove as clearly as the use to which I had applied them, which was more, I believed, than those who were going to succeed me would be able to say at the close of their administration. I told the queen that I hoped I should not be charged either with vanity or malice, if I affirmed that the wrong they were now attempting to do me, was a real injury to

* "He retired loaden with riches, which the time he had been in "the ministry had enabled him to acquire.---It may be said with "great truth, that the first years of his administration were very "profitable to him; and if any should say the last were no less so, it "must be allowed that, if they were advantageous to him, they were "greatly so to the public." Hist. de la Mere & du Fils, p. 128. One single proof from any enemy, such as the author of this History, will counterballance a thousand others.

the

the ſtate: that I never deſired to be continued in the direction of the finances, but for the king's advantage; and that having their majeſties for judges of my actions, upon whoſe equity and goodneſs I relied to hinder my enemies from commencing a proſecution againſt me, the privacy I was going to enjoy would no longer appear dangerous to me; but, on the contrary, I ſhould find it ſo much the more pleaſing, as it began now to be ſuitable to my age, and would be interrupted with no reproaches, nor embittered by any remorſe.

TOWARDS the cloſe of this letter, through which I had occaſionally interſperſed many offers of ſervice, aſſurances of fidelity, and all thoſe expreſſions of reſpect and obedience, which I thought I owed to the queen, I told her, that before I ſet out for my government, whither my affairs called me, I would give her notice of it, and receive her orders; and, if ſhe thought I could be of any uſe to her in the aſſembly of the proteſtants, to which I was ſummoned, I would go thither with the ſame diſpoſition and readineſs to ſerve her as the late king my maſter. Such was the purport of this long letter, which the queen anſwered by another, dated April 24. It was conceived almoſt in the ſame terms as her former letter: ſhe left me at liberty to go to Poitou, or to the aſſembly of the proteſtants, and to act there as I ſhould judge proper, knowing better than any other (thoſe were her words) how I could be moſt uſeful to the king in either of thoſe places.

BUT what completely ſecured me againſt all reverſes of fortune was, that her majeſty being deſirous to give a public proof of her eſteem for me, and how little it was in the power of my enemies to hurt me, granted me an augmentation of my penſion, for which the brevet was expedited in leſs than a month after the date of her laſt letter. This augmentation

mentation was twenty-four thouſand livres; ſo that altogether my penſions at that time amounted to forty-eight thouſand four hundred livres a year. It was expreſſed in the brevet, that this additional penſion commenced on the 1ſt of January 1611, altho' it was dated the 20th of May; and that her majeſty thought herſelf under an obligation to grant it to me, as well in acknowledgment for my paſt ſervices, of which the moſt honourable mention was made, as to enable me to continue them for the future.

NOTWITHSTANDING this, I do not think myſelf diſpenſed with from proving that article of the foregoing letter, which regards my wealth. A ſuperintendant of the finances, and any man to whom the management of the kingdom's money has been entruſted, is accountable to the public for all his actions; nor would I refuſe, if called upon, to lay before it my moſt ſecret thoughts, ſince it has been always my ſtudy to regulate them in ſuch a manner, that they would, if known, not only ſubject me to no cenſure, for this is an indiſpenſible obligation upon all men, but alſo that they might in ſome reſpect ſeem worthy to ſerve for a model to thoſe who, ſucceeding to my place, would have the ſame engagements to him. Happy if I could have reaſon to hope that this model would be effaced with one more perfect. I ſhall continue therefore to give the public ſuch an exact ſtate of my domeſtic affairs, following the method I began a few pages above, that any other perſon may be as well acquainted with them as I am myſelf. To ſpare my readers the trouble of collecting together at too great a diſtance the articles of a broken calculation, and that they may view the whole with one ſingle glance, I ſhall here lay before them all that has been ſaid on that ſubject in different parts of theſe Memoirs, beginning with a faithful account of my whole yearly revenue,

revenue, according to the order of time when I was inveſted with thoſe offices, from whence the greateſt part of it aroſe *.

I WAS in the firſt place, while Henry the Great was yet but king of Navarre, preferred to the poſt of firſt gentleman of the bed-chamber, together with that of counſellor of Navarre: the ſalaries of both amounted to two thouſand livres a year. When he became king of France, he made me counſellor of ſtate, for which I had a like allowance, which, with a penſion of three thouſand ſix hundred livres, increaſed my income with the yearly ſum of ſeven thouſand ſix hundred livres. My company of men at arms brought me in four thouſand livres a year. The king giving me afterwards two brevets, one for counſellor of parliament without ſalary, and the other for counſellor of the finances, three thouſand ſix hundred livres were on this occaſion added to my penſions. His majeſty having thought proper to fix the gratuities, penſions, gifts, &c. which he deſigned to beſtow upon me as ſuperintendant of the finances, to a certain ſum, which ſhould be comprehended all in one article, this ſum, which amounted to twenty thouſand crowns, increaſed my revenue with ten thouſand eight hundred livres a year more: add to this the produce of all my other dignities and employments; the office of grand-ſurveyor of the roads of France, and ſurveyor in particular of the Iſle of France, brought me in ten

* The following memoir is an unanſwerable refutation of a reflection caſt on the duke of Sully by the Hiſtoire de la Mere & du Fils, p. 130; and expreſſed in theſe words: "In fine, if, during "his adminiſtration, he had managed the king's affairs well, he "had not forgot to take care of his own. This appeared more evi-"dently from his having come into office with only ſix thouſand "livres a year, and going out with more than a hundred and fifty "thouſand livres, which had obliged him to withdraw out of the "exchequer the rent-roll and inventory of his eſtate and effects, "which had been regiſtered there, when he came into the manage-"ment of the finances, that it might not appear againſt him, under "his own hand and ſeal, how much he had enriched himſelf out "of the king's money."

thouſand

thousand livres a year; that of great master of the ordnance, comprehending the salary, profits, and pensions, annexed to it, twenty-four thousand livres. I always placed under one article the sums arising from the government of Poitou, the superintendance of the buildings, that of the fortifications, ports, &c. which all together amounted to eighteen thousand livres a year. The government of Mante and Gergeau brought me in twelve thousand livres; the queen's company of gendarmes, of which I was captain-lieutenant, five thousand livres; and the government of the Bastile two thousand two hundred livres a year. All these articles put together make up the sum of ninety-seven thousand two hundred livres a year.

EACH of these articles have been already mentioned in different parts of these Memoirs. What remains to be added to them are as follows: Forty-five thousand livres in church benefices, which his holiness was so well satisfied that I should enjoy under the borrowed name of some ecclesiastics, that he generally expedited the bulls gratis, when he was told that the abbeys were for me. I lost no part of this income, when it was decreed that the ecclesiastics should withdraw all their benefices out of the hands of the protestants, because by the pope's bulls, in which this regulation was expressed, the ecclesiastics on whom they were bestowed, were to give the full value of them to the first possessor. My own lands and possessions compose a second article, which I believe I estimate justly, by making them amount to sixty thousand livres a year. These two last sums, added to that of ninety-seven thousand two hundred livres, make a total of two hundred and two thousand two hundred livres a year.

I SHALL prevent the explanation which may be demanded of me, with respect to the article of twenty thousand crowns in lands; and, in the first place, I desire it may be remembered that there was

a kind

a kind of agreement made between the king and myself in the year 1601, by which that prince, who did not think my labours in his services sufficiently rewarded by my ordinary gratuities and pensions, and who likewise was apprehensive as well as I that those sums, which his generosity led him to give me in extraordinary presents and gratuities, would produce bad consequences hereafter, by that appearance of profusion they might have, again settled his gifts and gratuities in a new sum of sixty thousand livres a year, which was to take in all that I was to expect merely from his bounty. This donation was expedited by letters patents, that being known to the whole kingdom, I might not be one day subjected to any dishonourable imputation on account of it. I enjoyed this extraordinary gratuity for eight years, which produced me the sum of four hundred and eighty thousand livres, which I laid out according to the king's desire, in making acquisitions in proportion. I made the same use of the sum of five hundred and thirty thousand livres arising from the following articles: From money which I have received, but which is subject to be repaid, two hundred thousand livres, on the marriage of my son; a hundred thousand livres which I received with my wife; a hundred thousand paid me by La-Borde; as much by M. de Schomberg; and thirty thousand which his majesty gave me for my son d'Orval *, These sums, I say, which added to the above, make one million and ten thousand livres, I laid out in the following manner:

* Francis de Bethune, the founder of the branch of the counts of Orval, was knight of the king's orders, master of the horse to the queen, surveyor-general of France, superintendant of the royal buildings, governor of St. Maixant, camp-master of the regiment of Picardy, lieutenant-general of the king's armies. After the death of Cæsar de Bethune, his brother of the whole blood, who died unmarried, the estates and lordships which the duke of Sully their father had settled on the children of his second marriage (as we shall relate hereafter) became united in him. They were erected into a duchy

I PURCHASED one half of the eſtate of Roſny with two hundred and ten thouſand livres; the eſtate of Dourdon, which I bought of Sancy, who held it of the Swiſs cantons, coſt me, beſide the money he owed me, a hundred thouſand livres. Baugy, one hundred and twenty thouſand livres. I had the lands of Sully from the duke de la Tremouille for a hundred and fifty thouſand livres; and Villebon, by an ordinance, for one hundred thouſand. The three contracts I made with the duke of Nevers amounted to two hundred and ten thouſand livers: namely, for Montrond a hundred thouſand; La-Chapelle fifty-ſix thouſand; and for Henrichemont fifty-four thouſand. I bought the eſtate of Châtelet of the duke of Montpenſier for ſixty thouſand livres; that of Culand, by an ordinance for eighty thouſand; and Des-Is, in Beauce, for ſeventy-five thouſand livres. The whole of theſe purchaſes, which amount to eleven hundred and ninety thouſand livres, exceeding, as appears, that of the two ſums received above by a hundred and nine thouſand livres, this ſum will be found charged in the articles of receipt, which are placed after; for I am deſirous of giving the reader full ſatisfaction, by carrying this detail even farther than he has a right to expect, and for this purpoſe I muſt ſtep a little aſide from the ſubject I am treating of, and give an account of the ſeveral ſums I received after the death

dutchy and peerage, under the title of de Bethune, which was done in conſideration of his ſignal ſervices to the crown, and particularly in having raiſed, at his own expence, a conſiderable body of forces, both foot and horſe, at a time when the king ſtood in great need of them, to carry on the war, in which he was then engaged with the Spaniards, duke Charles of Lorrain, the prince of Condé, and others of his rebellious ſubjects. It is in theſe terms the letters patent for this purpoſe are expreſſed, which are dated at Melun in the month of June 1652. The duchy of Sully devolved on this branch of the family, in 1730, on the death of Maximilian, the fifth duke of Sully, in the perſon of Lewis Peter Maximilian de Bethune, grandſon of this Francis count of Orval, to whom it was adjudged by the council of ſtate, he paying the value of it to the abbé Armand de Bethune his great uncle, afterwards count of Orval.

of

of Henry the Great, as an equivalent for my charges, in gratuities from the young king, &c. even to the time that I resolved to dispose of almost all the employments with which I had been invested.

The three hundred thousand livres which his majesty granted me by letters patent, were at once a gift from this Prince, and a kind of recompence for the superintendance of the finances, and government of the Bastile, which I resigned into his hands. He gave me sixty thousand livres for my company of gendarmes, for which I had refused two hundred thousand. I agreed with Fourcy to resign to him the superintendance of the buildings for fifty thousand livres, which was the price set upon it by his majesty: I refused to take more. I was offered three hundred thousand livres for the government of Poitou, which I yielded to Rohan, who obtained the king's consent that he should purchase it for two hundred thousand. I lost in the same manner a hundred thousand livres upon the offices of grand-surveyor of the roads, and hereditary master of the canals and navigation of rivers. The treasurer of France paid me one hundred and fifty thousand livres for them. His majesty likewise caused me to be paid again the sum of one hundred and fifty thousand livres for the estate of Dourdan, and I agreed with the prince of Condé to give him back the lands of Villebon for a hundred and fifty thousand livres, which he has since paid me. I destined these two last sums for the portion of my youngest daughter, for whom it was more difficult to procure an establishment than her elder sister. To these sums, I add those which arose from the sale of my benefices; for I thought it was equally allowable for me to take money for them, as for the ecclesiastics, by whom they were purchased, to give it me; or for the pope to permit it, as he did by his bulls. I therefore took, without making any scruples, an allowance of eighty thousand livres of an abbé, who was re-

commended to me by the prince of Condé, for my abbey of Coulon. Bethune, who, as well as his ſon, was the moſt ſcrupulous Roman catholic I ever knew, purchaſed under the ſanction of theſe bulls, the abbey of Jard of me for forty thouſand livres; an abbé, a friend of the duke of Rohan, bought that of l'Or at Poitiers of me for ſeventy thouſand; and l'Argentier Vaucemain, or rather his ſon, that of l'Abſie for fifty thouſand livres. All theſe ſums together make a total of thirteen hundred thouſand livres. Let us now ſee to what uſe it was applied.

I BOUGHT of M. de Lavardin the eſtate of Montricoux, and that of Cauſſade, from the ſieur Palliers, for a hundred and ſixty thouſand livres both. My youngeſt daughter * having, on account of ſome perſonal diſadvantages, as I obſerved before, occaſion for a larger portion than her ſiſter to marry her ſuitable to her birth, I gave with her to M. de Mirepoix four hundred and fifty thouſand livres in ſpecie: the other expences of this marriage, in jewels, furniture, &c. formed an article of fifty thouſand livres more, which in all makes up the ſum of five hundred thouſand livres. I ſhall only ſlightly obſerve here, that ſuch diſtinguiſhing proofs of paternal tenderneſs were repaid both by my daughter and her huſband, with the moſt ſtriking inſtances of ingratitude. I lent to ſeveral cities, and to that of Rochelle in particular, more than two hundred and fifty thouſand livres, which, by the ſiege and reduction of this city, and the wars raiſed againſt the proteſtants, I have almoſt wholly loſt. The money I lent, at different times, to the marquis of Roſny, and the debts I paid for him, amount at leaſt to three hundred thouſand livres; the yearly incomes which came to me from Languedoc and Guyenne, by the purchaſe I made of certain regiſtries and rents there, coſt me four

* Louiſa de Bethune. She was married on the 29th of May, 1620, to Alexander de Levis, marquis of Mirepoix.

hundred

hundred thousand livres; and the house I bought in Paris two hundred and twenty thousand livres. By calculating my accounts of the money I laid out in buildings and other works, in furniture, in journies, and other expences of that kind, I find a capital of seven hundred thousand livres. The sum total of all these several articles, amounts to two millions five hundred and thirty thousand livres, which makes it superior to the total of receipt, which precedes it, by twelve hundred and thirty thousand livres.

THE reader may have observed, from the beginning of these Memoirs, that my application to my domestic œconomy extended itself to things which might be naturally expected would have been excepted from it; I mean in the military profits, arising either from prisoners I had taken, from ransoms, or at the sacking of towns taken by assault, and on other occasions of the same kind, which it is not necessary to give a minute account of here. When the peace of Vervins was concluded, I found that these profits, which when considered separately, appear so slight that they scarce deserve to be mentioned, yet made a total of one hundred thousand livres, or thereabouts. The war of Savoy, which fell out afterwards, was worth as much more to me in cannon, arms, ammunition, &c. taken from the enemy, of which I had a large portion, as great-master of the ordnance. Of all this I make an article of three hundred thousand livres. By calculating the value of all those presents that were made me on different occasions, I found the whole amount to a sum nearly equal to the former. It must be observed, that I mean only such presents as I received in the character of a public person, and in occurrences when it would not have been decent for me to have refused them, as in my embassies and negotiations; upon the king's marriage from the queen, and the grand-duke; on the marriage of the princess Catharine with the duke of Lorrain; on every new-years day from their ma-

jesties and queen Margaret. It would have been a ridiculous affectation to shew myself as scrupulously nice about these presents, and others of the same nature, as I did when they were offered to me with interested views. However, I would not receive any thing in this manner without its being expressed in a brevet, which I entreated his majesty to grant me for each of these gifts, which, tho' in jewels and trinkets, composed a sum of one hundred thousand crowns. I sold again the lands of Dourdan for a hundred and fifty thousand livres, before my gratuities were settled to twenty thousand crowns, as I have already mentioned, and which did not happen till the year 1601. The late king listening only to the dictates of his own generous mind, and to the friendship with which he honoured me, obliged me to accept many other donations which have not been particularized here, and which, I believe, do not amount to less than two hundred thousand livres. Lastly, since my income was become so considerable as the reader has seen, it is not surprizing that by strictly observing a maxim, which from my earliest years I had laid down as absolutely necessary for the advantage of my domestic affairs; namely, that one ought never to spend to the whole extent of one's income, I should at the end of a certain number of years have laid by a very considerable sum. If we suppose this sum to amount to three hundred and fifty thousand livres, and add to it the four former ones, we shall find that it will, within a very little matter, make up the twelve hundred thousand livres, which is wanting to produce a perfect equality between the receipt and expence. I think it unnecessary to repeat here what I have formerly said, with respect to the current expences of my house.

What I am going to relate concerning my transactions with the prince of Condé may appear as a matter of mere curiosity only; but I was notwilling

ling to omit it, as it has some connection with the subject I am on at present. When the war broke out against the protestants under the new reign, the prince of Condé being solicitous to remove me from his governments, where I had several very fine estates, and some strong castles, proposed to me to sell them all to him. I was apprehensive that, if I refused to comply with this proposal, the war would furnish him with pretences to drive me from thence, which force would have rendered valid. I was sensible that his councils had not a little contributed to that resolution they had lately taken against us, and I was forewarned that he was meditating something worse with regard to me. I therefore agreed with him for the lands of Villebon, Montron, Orval, Culand, and Le-Châtelet, and with the greater willingness, as he offered me more than they had cost me, and indeed more than they were worth. Accordingly a contract was signed by us both, in which the prince of Condé obliged himself to give me twelve hundred thousand livres for those estates: he did not pay me the money down indeed; but I readily consented to wait till it suited his own conveniency.

However, I did not expect that, at the expiration of a certain time, this prince would find out an easy method of discharging at once both the principal and interest, by demanding of the king that my estates should be confiscated, a practice which the war made then very common. His majesty was so good as to remember me on this occasion, and rejected with a kind of horror so infamous a request. When the peace was concluded, the prince found himself obliged to come to an account with me. His inclination for the lands of Baugy increasing, there was a necessity for yielding him that likewise, as well as all the others, in order that I might not on any side be his neighbour. He took a dislike to the lands of Villebon, which, together with those

of Muret, he reſtored to me as an equivalent for the eſtate which he ſo eagerly coveted. The exchange was not diſadvantageous to me. This method of paying me being moſt convenient for this prince, he made over to me, one after the other, the lands of Nogent, Montigny, Chanrond, Vitrai, the marquiſate of Conty, Breteuil, Francatel, and La-Falaiſe, inveſted with the ſame rights as the lands that I had exchanged, the principal of which, in my eyes, was the liberty of calling them, according to the king's patent, A poſſeſſion which I held by the liberality and immediate grant of the king my maſter *. Thus I

† Amongſt the papers containing the proofs of what M. de Sully here relates of his diſputes with the prince of Condé, which the preſent duke of Sully has done me the honour to communicate to me, I find two letters, which it may not be improper to inſert here: one is from the prince of Condé to the firſt duke of Sully; the other from the prince of Conty to the marquis de Bethune (Maximilian Alpinus) grandfather of the duke of Sully now living.

Letter from the Prince of CONDE to the Duke of SULLY.

"MONSIEUR,

"I hope to have the honour of ſeeing you ſoon. The bearer hereof will inform you from whence this comes, and explain the contents of it to you. You will find, from my actions, how much I have at heart the king's ſervice, the public good, and your friendſhip in particular, which I paſſionately covet. I beg you will aſſuredly rely on the truth of theſe profeſſions. I am preparing, in performance of our mutual engagements, to conclude our bargain for Villebon, and will let you know (begging you will meet me for that purpoſe) in what place I can have the honour of converſing with you.

I am, Monſieur,

Your couſin, and moſt humble ſervant,

HENRY de BOURBON."

Letter from the Prince of CONTY to the Marquis of BETHUNE.

"MONSIEUR,

"I am extremely preſſed by the count of Orval to conſent to the agreement he is deſirous of making with the viſcount of Meaux, for the eſtate of Chanrond; and he even offered to give me ſecurity to indemnify me againſt the warrantry my late father entered into. I would not however make him any promiſe, after having engaged to your mother-in-law not to do any thing in this affair without acquainting you with it; and as it is for the benefit of all parties, that this matter ſhould be ſettled, and made an end of as ſoon as poſſible, I am willing to refer my pretenſions to the judgment of the count

got out of the dispute with the prince, who, it must be confessed, was guilty of a double injustice in endeavouring to get possession of my estates by procuring them to be confiscated.

I HAVE been a witness of very miserable times since the death of the king my master. The war which I saw kindled against the protestants, filled me with grief: I was incited by a thousand different motives to take part in it; but I courageously resisted this snare: I never gave the king the least reason to look upon me as a rebel, or an abettor of rebels. I have punctually obeyed all his majesty's commands; am always ready to present myself at court whenever he is pleased to require it: in a word, I have had the good fortune to continue as faithful in the performance of those promises I made to the king my benefactor, as in that of the duties of a good citizen.

count de Bethune your kinsman, and beg you will do so too, and submit to what he shall direct. The count of Orval and the viscount of Meaux are content to submit their claims to him, and abide by his determination. I make no doubt of your consenting to this proposal, as otherwise I shall be obliged to do what is desired of me, and accept of the proposed security. I earnestly beseech you not to make any difficulty of coming into this agreement. In the mean time, I am

Your most affectionate servant,

ARMAND de BOURBON."

Toulouse, 19th of Oct. 1656.

BOOK XXX.

Wherein is discussed the POLITICAL SCHEME, COMMONLY CALLED The Great Design of HENRY IV.

AS this part of these Memoirs will be chiefly taken up with an account of the great design of Henry IV. or the political scheme, by which he proposed to govern, not only France, but all Europe; it may not be improper to begin it with some more general reflections on this monarchy, and on the Roman empire, upon whose ruins we know it has been formed as well as all the other powers which at this day compose the christian world.

IF we consider all those successive changes which Rome has suffered from the year of the world 3064, which is that of its foundation *, its infancy, youth, and virility; its declension, fall and final ruin; these vicissitudes, which is experienced in common with the great monarchies by which it was preceded, would almost incline one to believe, that empires, like all other sublunary things, are subject to be the sport, and at last to sink under the pressure of time. And if we extend this idea still farther, we shall perhaps perceive, that they are all liable to be disturbed or interrupted in their courses, by certain extraordinary incidents; which for any thing we can discover to the contrary, may be termed epidemical distempers, that very frequently precipitate their

* The opinion now most generally received is that of Varro, who places the time of the foundation of Rome near 200 years later.

destruction;

deſtruction; and their cure by this diſcovery becoming eaſier, we may at leaſt recover ſome of them from thoſe criſis's which threaten their deſtruction.

But if we endeavour to diſcover more viſible and natural cauſes of the ruin of this vaſt and formidable empire, we ſhall perhaps ſoon perceive they were produced by a deviation from thoſe wiſe laws, and that ſimplicity of manners, which were the original of all its grandeur, into luxury, avarice, and ambition; yet there was, finally, another cauſe, the effect of which could hardly have been prevented or foreſeen by the utmoſt human wiſdom; I mean, the irruptions of thoſe vaſt bodies of barbarous people, Goths, Vandals, Huns, Herulians, Rugians, Lombards, &c. from whom, both ſeparately and united, the Roman empire received ſuch violent ſhocks, that it was at laſt overthrown by them: Rome was three times ſacked by theſe Barbarians ‡; in 414, under Honorius, by Alaric, chief of the Goths; in 455, by Genſeric, king of the Vandals, under Martin; and in 546, under Juſtinian, by Totila and the Goths. Now if it be true, that after this, the city retained the ſhadow of what ſhe had been; if we muſt regard her as diveſted of the empire of the world, when her weakneſs and the abuſes of her government made this event to be looked upon, not ſimply as inevitable, but as very near, and, in fact, already arrived; the epocha of her fall may then be marked long before the reign of Valentine III. to whom it will be doing a favour, to call him the laſt emperor of the Eaſt *; for ſeveral of thoſe emperors whom he ſuc-

‡ Theſe three epochas are not quite juſt; the firſt was in 410, inſtead of 414; the ſecond in 455, or 456; and the third in 524, under Tagus, ſucceſſor of Totila, and the laſt king of the Goths: the ſacking the city this laſt time laſted forty days.

* It would be unjuſt, ſurely, to refuſe the title of emperors of the Eaſt to Valentinian III. to Honorius, &c. The expreſſions here uſed by our author ſhould not be underſtood in their moſt rigorous ſenſe, but only as meaning an empire weakened, and approaching to its final deſtruction.

ceeded were, in reality, no better than tyrants, by whom the empire was torn and divided, and the ſhattered remnants left to be the ſpoil of the Barbarians, who, indeed, by their conqueſts, acquired an equal right to them.

ROME, nevertheleſs, by intervals, beheld ſome faint appearances of a revival; thoſe of which ſhe was moſt ſenſible were under the reign of the great Conſtantine, whoſe victories once more united this vaſt body under one head; but when he tranſported the ſeat of his empire from Rome to Conſtantinople, he, by that ſtep, without being ſenſible of it, contributed more to the deſtruction of a work which had coſt him ſo much labour, than all the ill conduct of his predeceſſors had been able to effect; and this even he rendered irremediable, by dividing his empire equally between his three ſons. Theodoſius, who by good fortune, or from an effect of his great valour, found himſelf in the ſame circumſtances with Conſtantine, would not perhaps have committed the ſame fault, had he not been influenced by the force of Conſtantine's example; but this in a manner neceſſarily obliged him to divide his empire in two; Arcadius had the Eaſt, Honorius the Weſt: and from that time there never was any hopes nor opportunity of reuniting them.

ACCORDING to the order of nature, by which the deſtruction of one king becomes the inſtrument for the production of others; ſo, in proportion, as the moſt diſtant members of the empire of the Eaſt fell off from it, from thence there aroſe kingdoms; though indeed they did not at firſt bear that rank. The moſt antient of theſe (its origin appearing to have been in the eighth year of the empire of Honorius) is, undoubtedly, that which is founded in Gaul by the French, ſo called from Franconia, from whence they were invited by the Gauls, who inhabited the countries about the Moſelle, to aſſiſt them in their deliverance from the oppreſſion of the Roman

man armies. It being a cuſtom among theſe Franks or French, to confer the title of king upon whatever perſon they choſe to be their leader; if the firſt or ſecond of theſe chiefs have not borne it, it is certain, at leaſt, that the third, which was Merovius, and more particularly Clavius, who was the fifth, were inveſted with it §, and ſome of them ſupported it with ſo much glory; among others, Pepin and Charles Martel, to whom it would be doing an injuſtice to refuſe them this dignity; that their worthy ſucceſſor Charlemagne, in Gaul, revived an imperfect image of the now extinguiſhed empire in the Eaſt: this indeed was facilitated by thoſe natural advantages France enjoys of numerous inhabitants trained to war; and a great plenty of all things ſerving the different neceſſities of life, joined to a very great conveniency for commerce, ariſing from its ſituation, which renders it the centre of four of the principal powers of Europe; Germany, Italy, Spain, and Britain, with the Low Countries.

Let us here juſt ſay one word upon the three races which compoſe the ſucceſſion of our kings: in the firſt of them I find only Merovius, Clovis I. and Clovis II. Charles Martel, Pepin le Bref, and Charlemagne, in the ſecond, who have raiſed themſelves above the common level of their race. Take away theſe ſix from the thirty-five, which we

§ The whole of what is here ſaid, may be allowed to be right: according to Petau and Sirmond, the chiefs of the French bore the title of kings from the reign of Valentinian II. which was long before the year 445, when Claudian, by the taking of Cambray, &c. firſt eſtabliſhed himſelf on this ſide of the Rhine. They firſt eſtabliſhed themſelves on the other ſide of the Rhine, about the middle of the third century, and extended themſelves, nearly from the Texel, as far as Frankfort. This revolt of a part of Gaul againſt the Romans, happened in 434, in the twelfth year of the reign of Valentinian III. and the author's opinion on the eſtabliſhment of the French in Gaul, is confirmed by a learned academic, who has cleared up this critic l point as much as it was poſſible (the late abbé Du-Bos.) Hiſt. Crit. de l'etab. de la monarchie Franç. dans les Gaules. Tom. I. liv. i. ch. 17. liv. ii. ch. 7, 8.

compute in these two races, and all the rest, from their vices or their incapacity, appear to have been either wicked kings, or but the shadow of kings; though among them we may distinguish some good qualities in Sigebert and Dagobert, and a very great devotion in Lewis le Debonnaire, which, however, ended in his repenting the loss of empire and his kingdom, together with his liberty, in a cloister.

The Carlovingian race having reigned obscurely, and ended so too, the crown then descended upon a third; the four first kings of which, in my opinion, appear to have been perfect models of wise and good government. The kingdom which came under their dominion had lost much of its original splendor, for from its immense extent in the time of Charlemagne, it was reduced to very near the same bounds which it has at this day; with this difference, that though they might have been desirous to restore its ancient limits, the form of the government, which rendered the kings subject to the great men and people of the kingdom, who had a right to chuse, and even to govern their sovereigns, left them no means by which they could succeed in such an attempt. The conduct, therefore, which they pursued was, to condemn arbitrary power to an absolute silence; and, in its place, to substitute equity itself: a kind of dominion which never excites envy. Nothing now was done without the consent of the great men and the principal cities, and almost always in consequence of the decision of an assembly of the states. A conduct so moderate and prudent put an end to all factions, and stifled all conspiracies, which are fatal to the state or the sovereign. Regularity, œconomy, a distinction of merit, strict observance of justice, all the virtues which we suppose necessary qualifications for the good of a family, where what characterized this new government, and produced what was never before beheld, and what per-

haps we may never see again, an uninterrupted peace for one hundred twenty-two years: what these gained by it for themselves in particular, and which all the authority of the Salic law could never have procured them, was, the advantage of introducing into this house an hereditary right to the crown. But they, nevertheless, thought it a necessary precaution, not to declare their eldest sons for their successors till they had modestly asked the consent of the people, preceded it by a kind of election, and usually by having them crowned in their own life-time, and seated with them upon the throne,

PHILIP II. whom Lewis VII. his father, caused to be crowned, and reign with him in this manner, was the first who neglected to observe this ceremony between the sovereign and his people: several victories, obtained over his neighbours and over his own subjects, which gained him the surname of Augustus, served to open him a passage to absolute power; and a notion of the fitness and legality of this power, by the assistance of favourites, ministers, and others, became afterwards so strongly imprinted in his successors, that they looked upon it as a mark of the most profound good policy, to act contrary to those maxims; the general and particular utility of which had been so effectually confirmed by experience. And this they did without any fear, or perhaps without any conception of the fatal consequences which such a proceeding, against a nation that adored its liberty, might, and even necessarily would incur*; of which they might easily

* The abbé Du-Bos, from the same principle with our author, draws quite different conclusions, which, to me, appear to be as just, as these are the contrary, in that excellent work of his, the design of which is, to refute the error into which the author of these Memoirs has here fallen: "This error," says he, Disc. Prelim. p. 51. "would lead one to suppose, that whatever has been done by the successors of Hugh Capet, in favour of the royal authority, whether "in freeing the subjects from their vassalage to the lords, or in placing "royal officers in fiefs of any consequence, or by divesting the "lords of the power which they exercised, of assembling their vas-

"sals

have become ſenſible, from the means to which the people had immediate recourſe, to ſhake off the yoke of tyranny with which they ſaw themſelves menaced. The kings could never obtain of their people any other than that kind of conſtrained obedience which always inclines them to embrace with eagerneſs, all opportunities of mutiny. This was the ſource of a thouſand bloody wars: that by which almoſt all France was ravaged by the Engliſh; that which we had with Italy, Burgundy, Spain; all of them can be attributed to no other cauſes, than the civil diſſenſions by which they were preceded: and here the weakeſt ſide, ſtifling the voice of honour, and the intereſt of the nation, conſtantly called in foreigners to aſſiſt them in the ſupport of their tottering liberties. Theſe were ſhameful and fatal remedies: but from that time they were conſtantly employed, down even to our doors, by the houſe of Lorrain, in a league, for which religion was nothing more than the pretence. Another evil, which may at firſt appear to be of a different kind, but which, in my opinion, proceeds from the ſame ſource, was a general corruption of manners, a thirſt for riches, and a moſt ſhameful degree of luxury: theſe, ſometimes ſeparately, and ſometimes united, were alternate cauſes and effects of many of our miſeries.

" ſals, to make war upon other lords their neighbours; or by purſuing other methods which ſovereigns only juſtly make uſe of; have all of them been only ſo many attempts to deſtroy the primitive conſtitution of the kingdom. Were this true, we could then conſider Lewis le Gros, Philip Auguſtus, and the other moſt illuſtrious kings of the third race, in no other light than as ſo many tyrants: tho' they have only reclaimed the impreſcriptible rights of their crown and people, from thoſe uſurpers, who, in the ninth and tenth centuries, had ſeized on both. Indeed theſe princes, by thus recovering a part of their rights, have been ſo far from doing any injury to the ancient conſtitution of the kingdom, that they have thereby only reſtored, ſo far as in their power, its primitive ſtate." And this he afterwards proves to a demonſtration, in the ſixth book of the ſame work. See alſo the Memoirs of M. de Foncemagne, both with reſpect to the Salic law and the ſucceſſion to the crown, which we have cited before.

THUS,

THUS, in a few words, I have expoſed the various ſpecies of our bad policy, with reſpect both to the form of the government, ſucceſſively ſubjected to the will of the people, the ſoldiers, the nobles, the ſtates, and the kings; and in regard to the perſons likewiſe of theſe laſt, whether dependent, elective, hereditary, or abſolute.

FROM the picture here laid before us, we may be enabled to form our judgment upon the third race of our kings: we may find a thouſand things to admire in Philip Auguſtus, Saint-Lewis, Philip le Bel, Charles le Sage, Charles VII. and Lewis XII. But it is to be lamented, that ſo many virtues, or great qualities, have been exerciſed upon no better principles; with what pleaſure might we beſtow upon them the titles of great kings. could we but conceal that their people were miſerable: what might we not, in particular, ſay of Lewis IX? of the forty-four years which he reigned, the firſt twenty of them exhibits a ſcene not unworthy to be compared with the eleven laſt of Henry the Great. But I am afraid all their glory will appear to have been deſtroyed in the twenty-four following; wherein it appears, that the exceſſive taxes upon the ſubjects, to ſatisfy an ill-judged and deſtructive devotion; immenſe ſums tranſported into the moſt diſtant countries, for the ranſom of priſoners; ſo many thouſand ſubjects ſacrificed; ſo many illuſtrious houſes extinguiſhed; cauſed an univerſal mourning throughout France, and all together a general calamity.

LET us for once, if it is poſſible, fix our principles; and being, from long experience, convinced, that the happineſs of mankind can never ariſe from war, of which we ought to have been perſuaded long ago; let us upon this principle, take a curſory view of the hiſtory of our monarchy. We will paſs by the wars of Clovis and his predeceſſors, becauſe they ſeem to have been, in ſome degree, neceſſary to confirm the recent foundations of the monarchy:

but

but what ſhall we ſay of thoſe wars, in which the four ſons of Clovis, the four ſons of Clotaire I. and their deſcendants, were engaged, during the uninterrupted courſe of one hundred and ſixty years? and of thoſe alſo, by which, for the ſpace of one hundred ſeventy-two other years, commencing with Lewis le Debonnaire, the kingdom was harraſſed and torn? What follows is ſtill worſe: The ſlighteſt knowledge of our hiſtory is ſufficient to convince any one, that there was no real tranquillity in the kingdom from Henry VIII. to the peace of Vervins: and, in ſhort, all this long period may be called a war of near four hundred years duration. After this examination, from whence it inconteſtibly appears, that our kings have ſeldom thought of any thing but how to carry on their wars, we cannot but be ſcrupulous in beſtowing on them the title of, Truly Great kings; though we ſhall, nevertheleſs, render them all the juſtice which appears to have been their due: for I confeſs (as indeed it would be unjuſt to attribute to them only, a crime which was properly that of all Europe) that ſeveral of theſe princes were ſometimes in ſuch circumſtances as rendered the wars juſt, and even neceſſary: and from hence, when indeed there were no other means to obtain it, they acquired a true and laſting glory. For herein, from the manner in which ſeveral of theſe wars were foreſeen, prepared for, and conducted, we may in their councils diſcover ſuch maſter-ſtrokes of policy, and in their perſons ſuch noble inſtances of courage, as are deſerving of our higheſt praiſes. From whence then can proceed the error of ſo many exploits, in appearance ſo glorious, though the effect of them has generally been the devaſtation both of France and all Europe? I repeat it again, of all Europe, which even yet ſeems ſcarce ſenſible, that in her preſent ſituation, a ſituation in which ſhe has been, for ſeveral centuries, every attempt which ſhall tend to her ſubjection, or only to the too conſiderably

ſiderably augmenting of any one of her principal monarchies, at the expence of the others, can never be any other than a chimerical and impoſſible enterpriſe. There are none of theſe monarchies, but whoſe deſtruction will require a concurrence of cauſes infinitely ſuperior to all human force. The whole, therefore, of what ſeems proper and neceſſary to be done, is to ſupport them all in a kind of equilibrium; and whatever prince thinks, and in conſequence acts otherwiſe, may indeed cauſe torrents of blood to flow through all Europe, but he will never be able to change her form.

When I obſerved, that the extent of France is not now ſo conſiderable as it was in the time of Charlemagne, my intention, moſt certainly, was not, that this diminution ſhould be conſidered as a misfortune. In an age when we feel the ſad effects of having had ambitious princes, from time to time, for our kings, were all to concur in flattering this fatal ambition, it would be the cauſe of ſtill greater evils; and it may be generally obſerved, that the larger the extent of kingdoms, the more they are ſubject to great revolutions and misfortunes. The baſis of the tranquillity of our own, in particular, depends upon preſerving it within its preſent limits. A climate, laws, manners, and language, different from our own; ſeals, and chains of mountains almoſt inacceſſible, are all ſo many barriers, which we may conſider as fixed even by nature. Beſides, what is it that France wants! will ſhe not always be the richeſt and moſt powerful kingdom in Europe? It muſt be granted. All therefore which the French have to wiſh or deſire is, that Heaven grant them pious, good, and wiſe kings; and that theſe kings may employ their power in preſerving the peace of Europe; for no other enterprize can truly be to them either profitable or ſucceſsful.

And this explains to us the nature of the deſign which

which Henry IV. was on the point of putting in execution, when it pleased God to take him to himself, too soon by some years for the happiness of the world. From hence likewise we may perceive the motives to his pursuing a conduct so opposite to any thing that had hitherto been undertaken by crowned heads: and here we may behold what it was that acquired him the title of Great. His designs were not inspired by a mean and despicable ambition, nor guided by base and partial interests: to render France happy for ever was his desire; and she cannot perfectly enjoy this felicity, unless all Europe likewise partake of it; so it was the happiness of Europe in general which he laboured to procure, and this in a manner so solid and durable, that nothing should afterwards be able to shake its foundations.

I MUST confess I am under some apprehensions, lest this scheme † should at first be considered as one

† The Memoirs of Sully are the only monument which has preserved to posterity an account of the great design of Henry IV. We find no traces of it in any of the historians, authors of Memoirs, or other writers, that were cotemporary with that prince; their silence in this manner proceeded, no doubt, from their not knowing enough of it to say any thing with certainty about it. The world did not begin to descant upon it till the *Memoirs of Sully*, wherein it is so clearly described, were published; and among all those who have considered it ever since about the middle of the seventeenth century, I find scarce any who have questioned the possibility of executing it: doubtless, because they lived near enough to the times in which it was formed, to be convinced, even from the mouths of those who had been witnesses of the preparations and disposition's which were made, that all the measures had been taken precisely in the same manner as related by the duke of Sully; and consequently, that it would have had but few of those obstacles to encounter which have since been raised against it.

The author of a manuscript discourse in the king's library, which to me appears to be the most ancient Memoirs we have of that time, seems not in the least to have doubted of success in its execution. And M. de Perefixe, who in the third part of his history of Henry the Great, has given a short but very accurate account of the scheme, says positively that it would have succeeded; and farther confirms his assertion by proofs, which he gives, p. 383. and the following. The continuator of Thuanus, in what little he has said of it, anno 1609, and 1610, does not appear to have been of a different sentiment.

of thoſe darling chimeras, or idle political ſpeculations, in which a mind ſuſceptible of ſtrange and

ment. The marechal de Baſſompierre alſo, in his Journal, tom. I. ſeems to be in its favour. To theſe authorities we may alſo join that of the author of the life of the duke de Epernon, and ſome others, who all ſeem to be of the ſame opinion. Indeed, till the beginning of the preſent century, all authors appear to have been unanimous in this point; and ſeveral of our modern hiſtorians have joined them herein.

Vittorio (Mem. Recond. tom. I. p. 29, 514. tom. II. p. 45, &c.) is the firſt that I know by whom this great enterprize has been treated as abſurd and impoſſible: but the ignorance which he ſhews in the whole affair, even in thoſe points which are the leaſt conteſted: his attachment to the Spaniſh politics, and his diſtance from the perſons of Henry IV. and his miniſter, which is every way apparent in all he ſays on the ſubject, render him, in this reſpect, very juſtly exceptionable: his ſentiments have been adopted by the author of the Hiſtory of the Mother and Son, tom. I. p. 44. and for a ſimilar reaſon of attachment to the queen, mother of Lewis XIII. But this writer, ſuch as he is, producing no better authority for his opinion, than the age of Henry IV. who was then near ſixty, appears alſo to have been ſo entirely unacquainted with the affair, that we may, without ſcruple, pronounce, he was ignorant of the diſpoſition which had been made for the complete execution of it within the ſpace of three years, and that he condemns the deſign without underſtanding it.

I have much greater reverence for the authority of ſome modern politicians, who conſider it as a kind of impoſſibility, thus to change the face of all Europe, in the manner propoſed by Henry IV. and who imagine, that in our days a much more happy expedient has been diſcovered, whereby to obtain the equilibrium of Europe, than by reviving the ancient council of the Amphyctions: what I mean, is the precaution now obſerved, of having all the principal powers of Europe accede to, and become the guarantees of every particular treaty. But all thoſe calamities which we have ſuffered in conſequence of war, do but too plainly evince its inſufficiency. In regard to the main ſtreſs of the queſtion, I agree with them, that Europe could not now, but with great difficulty, be conſtituted in the manner propoſed by Henry the Great; nevertheleſs I believe, without pretending to ſubject any one to my opinion, that thoſe who treat this prince's deſign as a chimera, do not pay all the neceſſary attention to the circumſtances of thoſe times, wherein Europe, from her frequent dangers of being ſubjected to the houſe of Auſtria, and by the bloody wars which a difference of religion had excited, and continued daily to excite, found herſelf in a manner compelled to have recourſe to extraordinary means to put a period to her miſeries.

I cannot finiſh this remark better, than in the words of M. l'Abbé de Saint Pierre, in his Diſcours ſur le Grand Homme: "From "hence we may perceive, that if Henry IV. king of France, had "executed his celebrated and well-projected deſign, whereby to ren-"der peace perpetual and univerſal among the ſovereigns of Europe,

"he

ſingular ideas, may be ſo eaſily engaged: thoſe who ſhall thus think of it, muſt be of that ſort of people on whom the firſt impreſſions upon a prejudiced imagination, have the force of truth; or thoſe, who by their diſtance from the times, and their ignorance of the circumſtances, confound the wiſeſt and nobleſt enterpriſes that have ever been formed, with thoſe chimerical projects which princes, intoxicated with their power, have in all ages amuſed themſelves in forming. I confeſs, that if we attentively examine the deſigns which have been planned from motives of vanity, confidence in good fortune, ignorance, nay, from ſloth, and even timidity itſelf, we muſt be ſurpriſed to behold ſovereigns plunged blindly into ſchemes, ſpecious perhaps in appearance, but which at bottom have not the leaſt degree of poſſibility. The mind of man, with ſo much complacency, nay, even with ſo much ardour, purſues whatever it fancies great or beautiful, that it is ſorry to be made ſenſible, that theſe objects have frequently nothing real or ſolid in them. But in this, as well as in other things, there is an oppoſite extreme to be avoided; which is, that as we uſually fail in the execution of great deſigns, from not commencing and continuing them with

" he would have procured the greateſt benefit that it was poſſible, not " only to his own ſubjects, but to all the chriſtian kingdoms; and " even, by a neceſſary conſequence, to the world in general: a be- " nefit of which all generations, preſent and to come, would have " participated down to the lateſt time; a benefit, by which we ſhould " have been exempted from thoſe terrible and numerous evils, which " are the effects of foreign and domeſtic wars; a benefit, which " would have been the ſource of all thoſe ſweets which naturally flow " from an uninterrupted and univerſal tranquillity: if, I ſay, he had " been ſo happy as to have executed this great deſign, it would have " rendered him, beyond all compariſon the greateſt man the world " ever has, or probably ever will, produce." After ſome farther reflections upon the means ſtill more practicable, this judicious author adds: "This prince, however, has always had the honour of being " conſidered as the author of the moſt important invention and moſt " uſeful diſcovery, for the benefit of mankind, that has yet appeared " in the world; the execution of which may, perhaps, be reſerved " by Providence for the greateſt and moſt capable of his ſucceſſors."

ſufficient

sufficient vigour and spirit; so likewise we are defective in the knowledge of their true worth and tendency, because we do not thoroughly and properly consider them in all their dependencies and consequences. I have myself been more difficult to persuade in this matter, than perhaps any of those who shall read these Memoirs; and this I consider as an effect of that cold, cautious, and unenterprizing temper, which make so considerable a part of my character.

I REMEMBER the first time the king spoke to me of a political system, by which all Europe might be regulated and governed as one great family, I scarce paid any attention to what he said, imagining that he meant no more by it than merely to divert himself, or perhaps to shew, that his thoughts on political subjects were greater, and penetrated deeper, than most others: my reply was a mixture of pleasantry and compliment. Henry said no more at that time. He often confessed to me afterwards, that he had long concealed from me what he meditated on this subject, from a principle of shame, which many labour under, lest they should disclose designs which might appear ridiculous or impossible. I was astonished when, some time after, he renewed our conversation on this head, and continued from year to year, to entertain me with new regulations and new improvements in this scheme.

I HAD been very far from thinking seriously about it. If by accident it came into my thoughts for a moment, the first view of the design, which supposed a re-union of all the different states of Europe; immense expences, at a time when France could scarce supply her own necessities; a concatenation of event, which to me appeared infinite: these were considerations which had always made me reject the thought as vain; I even apprehended there was some illusion in it: I recollected some of those enterprizes in which we had endeavoured to

engage

engage Europe. I conſidered thoſe in particular which had been formed by ſome of our kings, from much leſs conſiderable motives, and I felt myſelf diſguſted with this, from the bad ſucceſs of all the former. The diſpoſition of the princes of Europe to take umbrage againſt France, when ſhe would have aſſiſted them to diſſipate their fears from the too great power of Spain, this alone to me appeared an unſurmountable obſtacle.

STRONGLY prejudiced by this opinion, I uſed my utmoſt efforts to undeceive Henry, who, on his ſide, ſurpriſed not to find me of his ſentiment in any one point, immediately undertook, and readily ſuccedeed in convincing me, that my thus indiſcriminately condemning all parts of his project, in which he was certain that every thing at leaſt was not blameable, could proceed from nothing but ſtrong prejudices. I could not refuſe, at his ſolicitations, to uſe my endeavours to gain a thorough comprehenſion of it: I formed a clearer plan of it in my mind: I collected and united all its different branches: I ſtudied all its proportions and dimenſions, if I may ſay ſo; and I diſcovered in them a regularity and mutual dependence, of which, when I only conſidered the deſign in a confuſed and careleſs manner, I had not been at all ſenſible. The benefit which would manifeſtly ariſe from it to all Europe, was what moſt immediately ſtruck me, as being in effect the plaineſt and moſt evident; but the means to effect ſo good a deſign were, therefore, what I heſitated at the longeſt. The general ſituation of the affairs of Europe, and of our own in particular, appeared to me every way contrary to the execution: I did not conſider that, as the execution of it might be deferred till proper opportunity, we had all thoſe reſources whereby to prepare ourſelves, which time affords thoſe who know how to make the beſt uſe of it. I was at laſt convinced, that however diſproportionate the means might appear to the effect, a

courſe

courſe of years, during which every thing ſhould as much as poſſible be made ſubſervient to the great object in view, would ſurmount many difficulties. It is indeed ſomewhat extraordinary, that this point, which appeared to be, and really was, the moſt difficult of any, ſhould at laſt become the moſt eaſy.

HAVING thus ſeen all parts of the deſign in their juſt points of view, having thoroughly conſidered and calculated, and from thence diſcovered and prepared for all events which might happen, I found myſelf confirmed in the opinion, that the deſign of Henry the Great was, upon the whole, juſt in its intention, poſſible, and even practicable in all its parts, and infinitely glorious in all its effects: ſo that, upon all occaſions, I was the firſt to recal the king to his engagements, and ſometimes to convince him by thoſe very arguments which he himſelf had taught me.

THE conſtant attention this prince paid to all affairs tranſacted round him, from an effect of thoſe ſingularly unhappy circumſtances, by which, in almoſt every inſtant of his life, he found himſelf embarraſſed, had been the cauſe of his forming this deſign, even from the time when, being called to the crown by the death of Henry III. he conſidered the humbling of the houſe of Auſtria as what was abſolutely neceſſary for his ſecurity; yet, if he was not beholden to Elizabeth * for his thought of the de-

* The preſent duke of Sully is poſſeſſed of the original of an excellent letter of Henry the Great, ſuppoſed to have been wrote by him to queen Elizabeth, though this princeſs is not named, neither in the body of the letter, nor in the ſuperſcription, which is in theſe words: *To her who merits immortal praiſe.* The terms in which Henry herein ſpeaks of a certain political project, which he calls, *The moſt excellent and rare enterprize that ever the human mind conceived*----*a thought rather divine than human*; the praiſes which he beſtows upon *this diſcourſe ſo well connected and demonſtrative of what would be neceſſary for the government of empires and kingdoms*----; on thoſe *conceptions and reſolutions* from which nothing leſs may be hoped than *moſt remarkable iſſues both of honour and glory*; all theſe paſſages can relate to none, but Elizabeth, nor mean any other than the great deſign in queſtion concerning

ſign, it is, however, certain, that this great queen had herſelf conceived it long before, as a means to revenge Europe for the attempts of its common enemy. The troubles in which all the following years were engaged, the war which ſucceeded in 1595, and that againſt Savoy after the peace of Vervins, forced Henry into difficulties which obliged him to lay aſide all thoughts of other affairs; and it was not till after his marriage, and the firm re-eſtabliſhment of peace, that he renewed his thoughts upon his firſt deſign, to execute which, appeared then more impoſſible, or at leaſt more improbable, than ever.

He, nevertheleſs, communicated it by letters to Elizabeth, and this was what inſpired them with ſo ſtrong an inclination to confer together in 1601, when this princeſs came to Dover, and Henry to Calais. What the ceremony of an interview would not have permitted them to do, I at laſt begun by the voyage which I made to this princeſs. I found her deeply engaged in the means by which this great deſign might be ſucceſsfully executed; and, notwithſtanding the difficulties which ſhe apprehended in its two principal points, namely, the agreement of religions, and the equality of the powers, ſhe did not to me appear at all to doubt of its ſucceſs, which ſhe chiefly expected, for a reaſon, the juſtneſs of which I have ſince been well convinced of; and this was, that, as the plan was only contrary to the deſign of ſome princes, whoſe ambitious views were ſufficiently known to all Europe? this difficulty, from which the neceſſity of the deſign more evidently appeared, would rather promote than retard its ſucceſs. She farther ſaid, that its execution by any other means than that of arms,

* concerning which it from hence evidently appears, that the queen of England had by letters diſcloſed her thoughts to Henry. The letter from which theſe extracts are taken, is dated from Paris, the 12th of July; but without the date of the year. Lettres de Henry le Grand.

would

would be very desirable, as this has always something odious in it: but she confessed, that indeed it would be hardly possible to begin it any otherwise. A very great number of the articles, conditions, and different dispositions, is due to this queen; and sufficiently shew, that in respect of wisdom, penetration, and all the other perfections of the mind, she was not inferior to any king, the most truly deserving of that title.

It must indeed be considered as a very great misfortune, that Henry could not at this time second the intention of the queen of England; who wished to have the design put in immediate execution; but when he thus laid the foundation of the edifice, he scarce hoped to see the time when the finishing hand would be put to it. The recovery of his own kingdom from the various maladies by which it was afflicted, was a work of several years; and unhappily he had himself seen forty-eight when he began it: he pursued it, nevertheless, with the greatest vigour. The edict of Nantz had been published with this view, and every other means was used which might gain the respect and confidence of the princes of Europe. Henry and I, at the same time, applied ourselves with indefatigable labour to regulate the interior affairs of the kingdom. We considered the death of the king of Spain as the most favourable event that could happen to our design, but it received so violent a shock by the death of Elizabeth, as had like to have made us abandon all our hopes. Henry had no expectation that the powers of the north, nor king James, the successor to Elizabeth, when he was acquainted with his character, would any of them so readily consent to support him in his design, as this princess had done. However, the new allies which he daily gained in Germany, and even in Italy, comforted him a little for the loss of Elizabeth. The truce between Spain and the Low

Countries may also be numbered among the incidents favourable to it.

YET, if we consider all the obstacles which afterwards arose in his own kingdom, from the protestants, the catholics, the clergy, nay even from his own council, it will appear as if all things conspired against it. Could it be imagined that Henry, in his whole council, should not find one person, besides myself, to whom he could, without danger, disclose the whole of his designs? and that the respect due to him could scarce restrain those who appeared most devoted to his service, from treating what, with the greatest circumspection, he had entrusted them with, as wild and extravagant chimeras? But nothing discouraged Henry, who was an able politician and a better judge than all his council, and than all his kingdom: when he perceived that, notwithstanding all these obstacles, affairs began, both at home and abroad, to appear in a favourable situation, he then considered the success as infallible.

NOR will this his judgment, when thoroughly considered, be found so presumptuous as, from a slight examination, it may to some appear. For what did he hereby require of Europe? Nothing more than that it should promote the means by which he proposed to fix in the position, towards which, by his efforts, it for some time had tended. These means he rendered so easy to execute, that it would scarce require what many of the princes of Europe would voluntarily sacrifice, for advantages much less real, less certain, and less durable. What they would gain by it, besides the inestimable benefits arising from peace, would greatly exceed all the expences they would be at. What reason then could any of them have to oppose it? and, if they did not oppose it, how could the house of Austria support itself against powers, in whom the desire and pleasure of depriving it of that strength which it

it had used only to oppress them, would have raised against it as many open as it had secret enemies; that is, all Europe entire? Nor would these princes have any reason to be jealous of the restorer of their liberty; for he was so far from seeking to re-imburse himself for all the expences which his generosity would hereby engage him in, that his intention was voluntarily and for ever to relinquish all power of augmenting his dominions; not only by conquest, but by all other just and lawful means. By this he would have discovered the secret to convince all his neighbours that his whole design was to save, both himself and them, those immense sums which the maintenance of so many thousand soldiers, so many fortified places, and so many military expences require; to free them for ever from the fear of those bloody catastrophes so common in Europe; to procure them an uninterrupted repose; and, finally, to unite them all in an indissoluble bond of security and friendship, after which they might live together like brethren, and reciprocally visit like good neighbours, without the trouble of ceremony, and without the expence of a train of attendants, which princes use at best only for ostentation, and frequently to conceal their misery. Does it not indeed reflect shame and reproach on a people who affect to be so polished and refined in their manners, that all their pretended improvements have not yet (I will not say procured them tranquillity, but only) guarded them from these barbarities which they detest in nations the most savage and uncultivated? and to destroy these pernicious seeds of confusion and disorder, and to prevent the barbarities of which they are the cause, could any scheme have been more happily and perfectly contrived than that of Henry the Great?

HERE then is all that could be reasonably expected or required. It is only in the power of man to prepare and act, success is the work of a more

mighty hand. Senſible people cannot be blamed for being prejudiced in favour of the ſcheme in queſtion, from this circumſtance only, that it was formed by the two potentates whom poſterity will always conſider as the moſt perfect models of the art of governing. In regard to Henry in particular, I inſiſt that it belongs only to princes, who, like him, have had a conſtant ſucceſſion of obſtacles to encounter in all their deſigns. Theſe, I ſay, are the princes who alone are privileged to judge what are real obſtacles; and, when we behold them willing to lay down their lives in ſupport of their opinions, ſurely we may abide by their ſentiments, without fear of being deceived. For my own part, I ſhall always think with regret, that France, by the blow which it received from the loſs of this great prince, was deprived of a glory far ſuperior to that which his reign had acquired †. There remains only to explain the ſeveral parts of the deſign, and the manner in which they were to be executed. We will begin by what relates to religion.

Two religions principally prevail in Chriſtendom, the Roman and the reformed; but, as this latter admits of ſeveral variations in its worſhip, which render it, if not as different from itſelf as from the Roman, at leaſt as far from being re-united, it is therefore neceſſary to divide it in two, one of which may be called the reformed, and the other the proteſtant religion. The manner in which theſe three religions prevail in Europe is extremely various. Italy and Spain remain in poſſeſſion of the Roman religion, pure and without mixture of any other. The reformed religion ſubſiſts in France with the Roman, only under favour of the edicts, and is the weakeſt.

† From hence we may diſcover what credit ſhould be given to Siri, when he ſays, that the ſole paſſion of Henry the Great was to amaſs riches; that his miniſter forced him into the deſign againſt his inclination; and that the duke of Sully, whom he believes to be the ſole author of it, was himſelf prepoſſeſſed in its favour only from mere obſtinacy, or perhaps from motives of ſelf-intereſt.

Eng-

England, Denmark, Sweden, the Low-Countries, and Switzerland, have alſo a mixture of the ſame kind, but with this difference, that in them the proteſtant is the governing religion, the others are only tolerated. Germany unites all theſe, and even in ſeveral of its circles, as well as in Poland, ſhews them equal favour. I ſay nothing of Muſcovy and Ruſſia. Theſe vaſt countries, which are not leſs than ſix hundred leagues in length, and four hundred in breadth, being in great part ſtill idolaters, and in part ſchiſmatics, ſuch as Greeks and Armenians, who have introduced ſo many ſuperſtitious practices in their worſhip, that there ſcarce remains any conformity with us among them; beſides, that they belong to Aſia at leaſt as much as to Europe, we may indeed almoſt conſider them as a barbarous country, and place them in the ſame claſs with Turkey, though for theſe five hundred years, we have ranked them among the chriſtian powers.

EACH of theſe three religions being now eſtabliſhed in Europe, in ſuch a manner that there is not the leaſt appearance that any of them can be deſtroyed, and experience having ſufficiently demonſtrated the inutility and danger of ſuch an enterprize, the beſt therefore that can be done, is to preſerve, and even ſtrengthen all of them in ſuch a manner, nevertheleſs, that this indulgence may not become an encouragement to the production of new ſects or opinions, which ſhould carefully be ſuppreſſed on their firſt appearance. God himſelf, by manifeſtly ſupporting what the catholics were pleaſed to call the new religion, has taught us this conduct, which is not leſs conformable to the Holy Scripture, than confirmed by its examples; and, beſides, the unſurmountable difficulty of forcing the pope's authority to be received in thoſe places where it is no longer acknowledged, renders what is here propoſed abſolutely neceſſary. Several cardinals equally ſaga-

cious and zealous, and even some popes, as Clement VIII. and Paul V. were of this opinion.

ALL, therefore, that remains now to be done, is to strengthen the nations, who have made choice of one of these religions, in the principles they profess, as there is nothing in all respects so pernicious as a liberty in belief; and those nations, whose inhabitants profess several, or all these religions, should be careful to observe those rules which they find necessary to remedy the ordinary inconveniencies of a toleration, which in other respects they probably experience to be beneficial. Italy, therefore, professing the Roman religion, and being moreover the residence of the popes, should preserve this religion in all its purity, and there would be no hardship in obliging all its inhabitants, either to conform to it, or quit the country. The same regulations, very nearly, might be observed in regard to Spain. In such states as that of France, where there is at least a governing religion, whoever should think the regulation too severe, by which Calvinism would be always subordinate to the religion of their prince, might be permitted to depart the country. No new regulations would be necessary in any of the other nations; on violence on this account, but liberty unrestrained, seeing this liberty is become even a fundamental principle in their governments.

THUS we may perceive every thing on this head might be reduced to a few maxims, so much the more certain and invariable, as they were not contrary to the sentiments of any one. The protestants are very far from pretending to force their religion upon any of their neighbours, by whom it is not voluntarily embraced. The catholics, doubtless, are of the same sentiments, and the pope would receive no injury in being deprived of what he confesses himself not to have possessed for a long time. His sacrificing these chimerical rights would be abundantly compensated by the regal dignity with which it would be proper to invest him, and by the honour

honour of being afterwards the common mediator between all the chriſtian princes, a dignity which he would then enjoy without jealouſy, and for which it muſt be confeſſed this court, by its ſagacious conduct, has ſhewn itſelf the moſt proper of any.

ANOTHER point of the political ſcheme, which alſo concerns religion, relates to the infidel princes of Europe, and conſiſts in forcing thoſe entirely out of it who refuſe to conform to any of the chriſtian doctrines of religion. Should the grand duke of Tuſcany, or czar of Ruſſia, who is believed to be the ancient khan of Scythia, refuſe to enter into the aſſociation after it is propoſed to him, he ought to be treated like the Sultan of Turkey, deprived of his poſſeſſions in Europe, and confined to Aſia only, where he might, as long as he pleaſed, without any interruption from us, continue the wars in which he is almoſt conſtantly engaged againſt the Turks and Perſians.

To ſucceed in the execution of this, which will not appear difficult, if we ſuppoſe that all the chriſtian princes unanimouſly concurred in it, it would only be neceſſary for each of them to contribute, in proportion to their ſeveral abilities, towards the ſupport of the forces, and all the other incidental expences, which the ſucceſs of ſuch an enterprize might require. Theſe reſpective quotas were to have been determined by a general council, of which we ſhall ſpeak hereafter. The following is what Henry the Great had himſelf conceived on this head. The pope for this expedition ſhould have furniſhed eight thouſand foot, twelve hundred horſe, ten cannons, and ten gallies; the emperor and the circles of Germany, ſixty thouſand foot, twenty thouſand horſe, five large cannons, and ten gallies or other veſſels; the king of France twenty thouſand foot, four thouſand horſe, twenty cannons, and ten ſhips or gallies; Spain, Britain, Denmark, Sweden, and Poland, the like number with France, obſerving only, that theſe powers ſhould together ſupply what belonged to the

ſea ſervice in the manner moſt ſuitable to their reſpective conveniences and abilities therein; the king of Bohemia five thouſand foot, fifteen hundred horſe, and five cannons: the king of Hungary twelve thouſand foot, five thouſand horſe, twenty cannons, and ſix ſhips; the duke of Savoy, or king of Lombardy, eight thouſand foot, fifteen hundred horſe, eight cannons, and ſix gallies; the republic of Venice ten thouſand foot, twelve hundred horſe, ten cannons, and twenty-five gallies; the republic of the Swiſs cantons, fifteen thouſand foot, five thouſand horſe, and twelve cannons; the republic of Holland twelve thouſand foot, twelve hundred horſe, twelve cannons, and twelve ſhips; the Italian republics ten thouſand foot, twelve hundred horſe, ten cannons, and eight gallies; the whole together amounting to about two hundred and ſeventy thouſand foot, fifty thouſand horſe, two hundred cannons, and one hundred and twenty ſhips or gallies, equipped and maintained at the expence of thoſe powers, each contributing according to his particular proportion.

THIS armament of the princes and ſtates of Europe appear ſo inconſiderable and ſo little burdenſome, when compared with the forces which they uſually keep on foot to awe their neighbours, or perhaps their own ſubjects, that were to have ſubſiſted, even perpetually, it would not have occaſioned any inconvenience, and would have been an excellent military academy; but, beſides that the enterprizes for which it was deſtined, would not always have continued; the number and expence of it might have been diminiſhed in proportion to the neceſſities, which would always have been the ſame. Though I am perſuaded ſuch an armament would have been ſo highly approved of by all theſe princes, that, after they had conquered with it whatever they would not that any ſtranger ſhould ſhare with them in Europe, they would have ſought to join to it ſuch parts of Aſia as were moſt commodiouſly ſituated, and

and particularly the whole coaſt of Africa, which is too near to our own territories for us not to be frequently incommoded by it The only precaution to be obſerved in regard to theſe additional countries, would have been to form them into new kingdoms, declare them united with the reſt of the chriſtian powers, and beſtow them on different princes; carefully obſerving to exclude thoſe who before bore rank among the ſovereigns of Europe.

THAT part of the deſign which may be conſidered as purely political, turned almoſt entirely on a firſt preliminary, which, I think, would not have met with more difficulty than the preceding article. This was to diveſt the houſe of Auſtria of the empire, and of all the poſſeſſions in Germany, Italy, and the Low-Countries; in a word, to reduce it to the ſole kingdom of Spain, bounded by the ocean, the Mediterranean, and the Pyrenean mountains. But that it might, nevertheleſs, be equally powerful with the other ſovereignties of Europe, it ſhould have Sardinia, Majorca, Minorca; and, in the other iſlands on its own coaſts, the Canaries, the Azores, and Cape-Verd, with its poſſeſſions in Africa, Mexico, and the American iſlands which belong to it: countries, which alone might ſuffice to found great kingdoms: finally, the Philippines, Goa, the Moluccas, and its other poſſeſſions in Aſia

FROM hence a method ſeems to preſent itſelf, whereby the houſe of Auſtria might be made amends for what it would be deprived of in Europe, which is to increaſe its dominions in the three other parts of the world, by aſſiſting it to obtain, and by declaring it the ſole proprietor, both of what we do know, and what we may hereafter diſcover in thoſe parts. We may ſuppoſe, that on this occaſion, it would not have been neceſſary to uſe force to bring this houſe to concur in ſuch a deſign; and, indeed, even on this ſuppoſition, it was not the prince of this houſe reigning in Spain, to whom theſe parts of the world were to be ſubjected, but to different

princes, of the ſame or of different branches, who in acknowledgment of their poſſeſſions, ſhould only have rendered homage to the crown of Spain, or, at moſt, a tribute, as due to the original conquerors. This houſe, which is ſo very deſirous of being the moſt powerful in the world, might hereby have continued to flatter itſelf with ſo pleaſing a preheminence, without the other powers being endangered by its pretended grandeur.

THE ſteps taken by the houſe of Auſtria to arrive at univerſal monarchy, which evidently appears from the whole conduct of Charles V. and his ſon, have rendered this ſeverity as juſt as it is neceſſary; and I will venture to ſay, that this houſe would not have had any reaſonable cauſe to complain of it. It is true, it would be deprived of the empire; but when impartially conſidered, it will appear that all the other princes of Germany, and even of Europe, have an equal right to it. Were it neceſſary to prove this, we need only recollect on what conditions Charles V. himſelf, the moſt powerful of them all, was acknowledged emperor; conditions, which, at Smalcalde, he ſolemnly ſwore to obſerve, in preſence of ſeven princes or electors, and the deputies of twenty-four proteſtant towns; the landgrave of Heſſe and the prince of Anhalt being ſpeakers for them all. He ſwore, I ſay, never to act contrary to the eſtabliſhed laws of the empire, particularly the famous golden bull, obtained under Charles IV. unleſs it were to amplify them, and even that only with the expreſs conſent and advice of the ſovereign princes of Germany; not to infringe nor deprive them of any of their privileges; not to introduce foreigners into their council; not to make either war or peace without their conſent; not to beſtow honours and employments but on natives of Germany; not to uſe any other but the German language in all writings; not to levy any taxes by his own authority, nor apply any conqueſts which might be made, to his own particular profit. He, in particular,

ticular, formally renounced all pretences of hereditary right in his houſe to the imperial dignity; and, according to the ſeveral articles of the golden bull, he ſwore never in his life-time to recognize a king of the Romans. When the proteſtants of Germany after they had in a manner driven Ferdinand out of it, conſented to have the imperial crown placed on his head, they were careful to make him renew his engagements in regard to all theſe articles, and to all theſe new regulations relative to the free exerciſe of their religion.

As to the poſſeſſions of the houſe of Auſtria in Germany, Italy, and the Low-Countries, of which it was to be deprived, not to mention here how much it is indebted for them to a tyrannical uſurpation, it would, after all, be only depriving it of territories which it keeps at ſo prodigious an expence (I ſpeak, in particular, of Italy and the Low-Countries) as all its treaſures of the Indies have not been able to defray: and beſides, by inveſting it with the excluſive privilege above-mentioned, of gaining new eſtabliſhments, and appropriating to its own uſe the mines and treaſures of the three other parts of the world, it would be abundantly indemnified; for theſe new acquiſitions would be at leaſt as conſiderable, and undoubtedly far more rich, than thoſe. But what is here propoſed muſt not be underſtood as if the other nations of Europe were excluded from all commerce to thoſe countries; on the contrary, it ſhould be free and open to every one, and the houſe of Auſtria, inſtead of conſidering this ſtipulation, which is of the greateſt conſequence, as an infringement of its privileges, would rather have reaſon to regard it as a farther advantage.

FROM a farther examination and conſideration of theſe diſpoſitions, I do not doubt but the houſe of Auſtria would have accepted the propoſed conditions, without being forced to it; but, ſuppoſing the contrary, what would a reſiſtance have ſignified? The

promiſe made to all the princes of Europe, of enriching themſelves by the territories of which this houſe was to be diveſted, would deprive it of all hopes of aſſiſtance from any of them.

Upon the whole then it appears, that all parties would have been gainers by it, and this was what aſſured Henry the Great of the ſucceſs of his deſign: the empire would again become a dignity to which all princes, but particularly thoſe of Germany, might aſpire: and this dignity would be ſo much the more deſirable, though, according to its original inſtitution, no revenues would be annexed to it, as the emperor would be declared the firſt and chief magiſtrate of the whole chriſtian republic; and as we may ſuppoſe this honour would afterwards be conferred only on the moſt worthy, all his privileges in this reſpect, inſtead of being diminiſhed, would be enlarged, his authority over the Belgic and Helvetic republics would be more conſiderable, and upon every new election they would be obliged to render him a reſpectful homage. The electors would ſtill continue to enjoy the right of electing the emperor, as well as of maintaining the king of the Romans; with this reſtriction only, That the election ſhould not be made twice together out of the ſame family. The firſt to have been elected in this manner, was the elector of Bavaria, who was alſo, in conſequence of the partition, to have had thoſe territories poſſeſſed by the houſe of Auſtria which joined to his own on the ſide of Italy.

The reſt of theſe territories were to have been divided and equally diſtributed by the kings of France, England, Denmark, and Sweden, among the Venetians, the Griſons, the duke of Wirtemberg, and the marquis of Baden, Anſpach, and Dourlach. Bohemia was to have been conſtituted an elective kingdom, by annexing to it Moravia, Silcſia, and Luſatia. Hungary was alſo to have been an elective kingdom, and the pope, the emperor, the kings of France,

France, England, Denmark, Sweden, and Lombardy, were to have had the right of nomination to it: and becauſe this kingdom may be conſidered as the barrier of Chriſtendom againſt the infidels, it was to have been rendered the moſt powerful and able to reſiſt them; and this was to have been done by immediately adding to it the monarchy of Auſtria, Styria, Carinthia, and Carniola; and by afterwards incorporating with it whatever might be acquired in Tranſilvania, Boſnia, Sclavonia, and Croatia. The ſame electors were to have obliged themſelves, by oath, to aſſiſt it upon all occaſions; and they were to have been particularly careful never to grant their ſuffrages from partiality, artifice, or intrigue; but always to confer the dignity on a prince who, by his great qualifications, particularly for war, ſhould be generally acknowledged as moſt proper. Poland being, from its nearneſs to Turkey, Muſcovy, and Tartary, in the ſame ſituation with Hungary, was alſo to have been an elective kingdom, by the ſame eight potentates; and its power was to have been augmented, by annexing to it whatever ſhould be conquered from the infidels adjoining to its own frontiers, and by determining in its favour thoſe diſputes which it had with all its other neighbours. Switzerland, when augmented by Franche-compté, Alſace, Tirol, and other territories, was to have been united into a ſovereign republic, governed by a council or ſenate, of which the emperor, the princes of Germany, and the Venetians, were to have been umpires.

The changes to be made in Italy were, that the pope ſhould be declared a ſecular prince, and bear rank among the monarchs of Europe, and under this title ſhould poſſeſs Naples, Apulia, Calabria, and all their dependencies, which ſhould be indiſſolubly united to St. Peter's patrimony: but in caſe the holy father had oppoſed this, which indeed could ſcarce have been ſuppoſed, the diſpoſition muſt then have

have been changed, and the kingdom of Naples would have been divided and disposed as the electoral king should have determined. Sicily was to have been ceded to the republic of Venice, by letters from the same eight principal potentates, upon condition that it should render homage for it to every pope, who should bear the title of immediate chief of the whole Italian republic; otherwise, for this reason, called The republic of the church. The other members of this republic were to have been Genoa, Florence, Mantua, Modena, Parma, and Lucca, without any alterations in their government: Bologna and Ferrara were to have been rendered free cities; and all these governments were every twenty years to have rendered homage to the pope their chief, by the gift of a crucifix of the value of ten thousand crowns.

Of the three great republics of Europe, it appears, upon the first glance, that this would have been the most brilliant and the richest. Nevertheless, it would not have been so; for what belonged to the duke of Savoy was not comprized herein. His territories were to have been constituted one of the greatest monarchies of Europe, hereditary to males and females, and to have borne the title of the kingdom of Lombardy; wherein, beside the territory so called, the Milanese and Montferrat would also have been comprized; and the duke of Mantua, in exchange for these, was to have the duchy of Cremona. An authentic testimony of the institution would have been given by the pope, the emperor, and the other sovereigns of the christian republic.

Among all these different dismemberings, we may observe that France received nothing for itself, but the glory of distributing them with equity. Henry had declared this to be his intention long before. He even sometimes said, with equal moderation and good sense, that were these dispositions

once

once firmly eſtabliſhed, he would have voluntarily conſented to have the extent of France determined by a majority of ſuffrages *. Nevertheleſs, as the diſtricts of Artois, Hainault, Cambreſis, Tournay, Namure, and Luxembourg, might more ſuitably be annexed to France than any other nation, they were to have been ceded to Henry; but to have been divided into ten diſtinct governments, and beſtowed on ſo many French princes or lords, all of them bearing rank as ſovereigns.

In regard to England it was preciſely the ſame: this was a determined point between Elizabeth and Henry, the two princes who were authors of the ſcheme, probably from an obſervation made by this queen, that the Britannic iſles, in all the different ſtates through which they had paſſed, whether under one or ſeveral monarchs, elective, hereditary, maſculine or feminine, and among all the variations of their laws and policy, had never experienced any great diſappointments or misfortunes, but when their ſovereigns had meddled in affairs out of their little continent. It ſeems, indeed, as if they were concentered in it even by nature, and their happineſs appears to depend intirely on themſelves, without having any concerns with their neighbours, provided that they ſeek only to maintain peace in the three nations ſubject to them, by governing each according to its own laws and cuſtoms. To render every thing equal between France and England, Brabant from the duchy of Limbourg, the juriſdiction of Malines, and the other dependencies on Flemiſh Flanders, Gallican or Imperial, were to have been formed into eight ſovereign

* What then does Siri mean, when he entertains us with the deſign which he falſly affirms Henry the Great had to join Lorrain to France, tom. I. p. 555? and to get Savoy ceded to him, tom. II. p. 61? What he ſays of the diſpoſitions, in regard to the Pope and the Venetians, &c. tom II. p. 180, is equally falſe. This writer ſeems indeed to have been in the pay of the houſe of Auſtria.

fiefs,

fiefs, to be given to ſo many princes or lords of this nation.

THESE two parts excepted, all the reſt of the ſeventeen United Provinces, whether belonging to Spain or not, were to be erected into a free and independent ſtate, under the title of the Belgic republic; though there was one other fief to be formed from them, bearing the title of a principality, to be granted to the prince of Orange; alſo ſome other inconſiderable indemnities for three or four other perſons. The ſucceſſion of Cleves was to have been divided among thoſe princes whom the emperor would have deprived of it, as the means whereby to gratify them at the expence of the houſe of Auſtria, as well as ſome other princes of the ſame diſtrict, to whom the imperial towns ſituated therein would have been granted. Even Sweden and Denmark, though they were to be conſidered as under the influence of the ſame law which England and France had impoſed on themſelves, would, by this diſtribution, have enlarged their territories, and acquired other conſiderable advantages. An end would have been put to the perpetual trouble which agitated theſe two kingdoms; and this, I think, would have been rendering them no inconſiderable ſervice. All theſe ceſſions, exchanges, and tranſpoſitions towards the north of Germany, were to have been determined by the kings of France, England, Lombardy, and the republic of Venice.

AND now perhaps the purport of the deſign may be perceived, which was to divide Europe equally among a certain number of powers, in ſuch a manner, that none of them might have cauſe either of envy or fear; from the poſſeſſions or power of the others. The number of them was reduced to fifteen; and they were of three kinds: ſix great hereditary monarchies, five elective monarchies, and four ſovereign republics. The ſix hereditary monarchies were France, Spain, England or Britain, Denmark, Sweden,

Sweden, and Lombardy; the five elective monarchies were the Empire, the Papacy or Pontificate, Poland, Hungary, and Bohemia; the four republics were the Venetian, the Italian, or what, from its dukes, may be called the ducal, the Swiss, Helvetic or Confederate, and the Belgic or provincial republic.

The laws and ordinances proper to cement an union between all these princes, and to maintain that harmony which should be once established among them, the reciprocal oaths and engagements in regard both to religion and policy, the mutual assurances in respect to the freedom of commerce, and the measures to be taken to make all these partitions with equity, and to the general content and satisfaction of the parties: all these matters are to be understood; nor is it necessary to say any thing of the precaution taken by Henry in regard to them. The most that could have happened would have been some trifling difficulties, which would easily have been obviated in the general council, representing all the states of Europe; the establishment of which was certainly the happiest invention that could have been conceived, to prevent those innovations which time often introduces in the wisest and most useful institutions.

The model of this general council of Europe had been formed on that of the antient Amphictyons of Greece, with such alterations only as rendered it suitable to our customs, climate, and policy. It consisted of a certain number of commissaries, ministers, or plenipotentiaries from all the governments of the christian republic, who were to be constantly assembled as a senate, to deliberate on any affairs which might occur; to discuss the different interests, pacify the quarrels, clear up and determine all the civil, political, and religious affairs of Europe, whether within itself or with its neighbours. The form and manner

manner of proceeding in the ſenate would have been more particularly determined by the ſuffrages of the ſenate itſelf. Henry was of opinion that it ſhould be compoſed of four commiſſaries from each of the following potentates: The Emperor, the Pope, the kings of France, Spain, England, Denmark, Sweden, Lombardy, Poland, and the republic of Venice; and of two only from the other republics and inferior powers, which all together would have compoſed a ſenate of about ſixty-ſix perſons, who ſhould have been rechoſe every three years

In regard to the place of meeting, it remained to have been determined, whether it would be better for the council to be fixed or ambulatory, divided in three, or united into one. If it were divided into three, each containing twenty-two magiſtrates, then each of them muſt have been fixed in ſuch a centre as ſhould appear to be moſt commodious, as Paris or Bourges for one, and ſomewhere about Trente and Cracovia for the two others. If it were judged more expedient not to divide their aſſembly, whether fixed or ambulatory, it muſt have been nearly in the centre of Europe, and would conſequently have been fixed in ſome one of the fourteen cities following: Mentz, Luxembourg, Nancy, Cologne, Mayence, Treves, Francfort, Wirtzbourg, Heidelberg, Spire, Straſbourg, Bale, Bizancon.

Besides this general council, it would perhaps have been proper to have conſtituted ſome others, of an inferior degree, for the particular convenience of different diſtricts. For example, were ſix ſuch created, they might have been placed at Dantzick, Nuremburg, Vienna, Bologna, Conſtance; and the laſt, wherever it ſhould be judged moſt convenient for the kingdoms of France, Spain, England, and the Belgic republic. But whatever the number or form of theſe particular councils might have been, it would have been abſolutely neceſſary, that they ſhould

ſhould be ſubordinate, and recur, by appeal, to the great general council, whoſe deciſions, when conſidered as proceeding from the united authority of all the ſovereigns, pronounced in a manner equally free and abſolute, muſt have been regarded as ſo many final and irrevocable decrees.

But let us quit theſe ſpeculative deſigns, in which practice and experience would perhaps have cauſed many alterations; and let us come to the means actually employed by Henry to facilitate the execution of his great deſign.

To gain one of the moſt powerful princes of Europe, with whom to concert all his deſigns, was what Henry had always conſidered as of the utmoſt conſequence: and this was the reaſon, that after the death of Elizabeth, who had indiſſolubly united the intereſt of the two crowns of France and England, every means was uſed which might inſpire her ſucceſſor, king James, with all her ſentiments. Had I but ſucceeded in the ſolemn embaſſy, the particulars of which I have related already, ſo far as to have gained this prince's conſent to have his name appear openly with Henry's, this military confederacy, eſpecially if it had, in like manner, been ſtrengthened with the names of the kings of Denmark and Sweden, would have prevented the troubles and difficulties of many negotiations: but nothing farther could be obtained of the king of England, than the ſame promiſes which were required of the other courts; namely, that he would not only not oppoſe the confederacy, but when Henry had made his deſigns public, would declare himſelf in his favour, and contribute towards it in the ſame manner as the other powers intereſted therein. A means was indeed afterwards found to obtain the execution of this promiſe, in a manner ſo much the more eaſy, as it did not diſturb the natural indolence of this prince; and this was, by getting what he heſitated to undertake in his own name, executed

by

by his ſon, the prince of Wales, who, as ſoon as he had obtained his father's promiſe, that he would at leaſt not obſtruct his proceedings, prevented Henry's utmoſt wiſhes; being animated with a thirſt of glory, and deſire to render himſelf worthy the eſteem and alliance of Henry, for he was to marry the eldeſt of the daughters of France. He wrote me ſeveral letters upon this ſubject, and expreſſed himſelf in the manner I have mentioned. He alſo farther ſaid, that the king of France might depend on having ſix thouſand foot and fifteen hundred horſe, which he would oblige himſelf to bring into his ſervice whenever they ſhould be required: and this number was afterwards augmented by two thouſand more foot, and eight cannons, maintained in all reſpects at the expence of England for three years at leaſt. The king of Sweden did not ſhew himſelf leſs zealous for the common cauſe; and the king of Denmark alſo appeared to be equally well diſpoſed in its favour.

In the mean time we were indefatigable in our negotiations in the different courts of Europe, particularly in the circles of Germany and the United Provinces, where the king, for this purpoſe, had ſent Boiſiſe, Freſne-Canaye, Baugy, Ancel, and Bongars. The council of the States were very ſoon unanimous in their determinations: the prince of Orange ſent the ſieurs Malderet and Brederode from them, to offer the king fifteen thouſand foot, and three thouſand horſe. They were ſoon followed by the landgrave of Heſſe, and the prince of Anhalt, to whom as well as to the prince of Orange, the confederacy was obliged for being increaſed by the duke of Savoy; by all of the reformed religion in Hungary, Bohemia, and lower Auſtria; by many proteſtant princes and towns in Germany; in fine, by all the Swiſs Cantons of this religion. And when the ſucceſſion of Cleves, which the Emperor ſhewed himſelf diſpoſed to uſurp, became another incen-

incentive to the confederacy, there was then ſcarce any part of Germany that was not for us; which evidently appeared from the reſult of the general aſſembly at Hall. The elector of Saxony, who perhaps remained alone of the oppoſite party, might have been embarraſſed in an affair, out of which he would probably have found it difficult to extricate himſelf; and this was to have been done, by ſuggeſting to him the branch of John Frederic, deprived of this electorate by Charles V.

THERE were ſeveral of theſe powers, in regard to whom I am perſuaded nothing would have been riſked, by diſcloſing to them the whole intent and ſcope of the deſign. On the contrary, they would probably have ſeconded it with the greater ardour, when they found the deſtruction of the Auſtrian grandeur was a determined point. Theſe powers were more particularly, the Venetians, the United Provinces, almoſt all the proteſtants, and eſpecially the evangelics of Germany. But as too many precautions could not be taken, to prevent the catholic powers from being prejudiced againſt the new alliance in which they were to be engaged; a too haſty diſcovery, either of the true motives, or the whole intent of the deſign, was therefore cautiouſly avoided. It was at firſt concealed from all without exception, and afterwards revealed but to a few perſons of approved diſcretion, and thoſe only ſuch as were abſolutely neceſſary to engage others to join the confederacy. The aſſociation was for a long time ſpoke of to others only as a kind of general treaty of peace, wherein ſuch methods would be projected, as the public benefit, and the general ſervice of Europe, might ſuggeſt as neceſſary to ſtop the progreſs of the exceſſive power of the houſe of Auſtria. Our ambaſſadors and agents had orders only to demand of theſe princes a renewal or commencement of alliance, in order more effectually to ſucceed in the projected peace; to conſult with them upon the means

means whereby to effect it; to appear as if they were sent only, in conjunction with them, to endeavour the discovery of these means; but yet to second them, and according to the disposition in which they were, to insinuate, as if by accidental conjecture, some notion of a new method more proper to maintain the equilibrium of Europe, and to secure to each religion a more undisturbed repose than they had hitherto enjoyed. The proposals made to the kings of England and Sweden, and the dukes of Savoy and Lorrain, for alliances by marriage, proved very successful: it was absolutely determined, that the Dauphin should espouse the heiress of Lorrain, which dutchy still continued, as before, to depend on the Empire.

But no precaution appeared so necessary, nor was more strongly recommended to our negotiators, than to convince all the princes of Europe of the disinterestedness with which Henry was resolved to act on this occasion. This point was indefatigably laboured, and they were convinced of it, when, on the supposition that it would be necessary to have recourse to arms, we strongly protested, that the forces, the treasures, and even the person of Henry, might be depended on; and this in a manner so generous on his side, that, instead of expecting to be rewarded, or even indemnified for them, he was voluntarily inclined to give the most positive assurances, not to reserve to himself a single town, nor the smallest district. This moderation, of which at last no one doubted, made a suitable impression, especially when it was perceived to be so much the more generous, as there was sufficient to excite and satisfy the desires of all. And in the interim, before the solemn publication of this absolute renunciation, which was to have been made in the manifestoes that were preparing, Henry gave a proof of it, that was an absolute demonstration to the pope.

No

No one being ignorant that as it was, at leaſt, intended to deprive Spain of thoſe of its uſurpations which were the moſt manifeſtly unjuſt; Navarre and Rouſillon would infallibly revert to France; the king therefore voluntarily offered to exchange them for the two kingdoms of Naples and Sicily; and at the ſame time to make a preſent of both to the Pope and the republic of Venice. This, certainly, was renouncing the moſt inconteſtible right he could have to any of the territories of which this crown was to be deprived; and by ſubmitting this affair, as he did, to the determination of the Pope and the Venetians, he the more ſenſibly obliged them, as both the honour and profit which might ariſe therefrom would be in their favour. The Pope, therefore, on the firſt propoſition made to him, even prevented Henry's intentions; he immediately demanded whether, as affairs were then circumſtances, the ſeveral powers would approve his taking upon him the office of common mediator, to eſtabliſh peace in Europe, and convert the continual wars among its ſeveral princes, into a perpetual war againſt the infidels; which was a part of the deſign he had been very careful to acquaint him with: and the pope ſufficiently ſhewed, that he was deſirous nothing ſhould be done without his participation; and that he was ſtill leſs diſpoſed to refuſe the advantage offered to him.

Paul V. when a favourable opportunity offered, explained himſelf more openly on this head. Ubaldini, his nuncio, told the king, that his holineſs, for the confederacy againſt the houſe of Auſtria, would, on various pretences, engage to raiſe ten thouſand foot, fifteen hundred horſe, and ten cannons; provided that his majeſty would promiſe to defray the neceſſary expences of their ſubſiſtence for three years; would give all poſſible ſecurity for the ceſſion of Naples, and the other rights of homage, according to promiſe; and would ſincerely conſent to the other conditions, in regard to the

treaty

treaty which he ſhould think neceſſary to impoſe. Theſe conditions, at leaſt the principal of them, were, that only catholics ſhould be elected emperors; that the Roman religion ſhould be maintained in all its rights, and the eccleſiaſtics in all their privileges and immunities; and the proteſtants ſhould not be permitted to eſtabliſh themſelves in places where they were not eſtabliſhed before the treaty. The king promiſed Ubaldini, that he would religiouſly obſerve all theſe conditions; and farther, he relinquiſhed to the pope the honour of being the arbitrator of all thoſe regulations to be made in the eſtabliſhment of the new republic.

THE removing of theſe difficulties in regard to the pope, was of no inconſiderable conſequence; for his example would not fail to be of great force in determining the other catholic powers, eſpecially thoſe of Italy. Nothing was neglected which might promote the favourable diſpoſitions in which they appeared to be, by punctually paying the cardinals and petty princes of Italy their penſions, and even by adding to them ſeveral other gratuities. The eſtabliſhment of a new monarchy in Italy was the only pretence theſe petty courts had for not joining in the confederacy; but this vain apprehenſion would be eaſily diſſipated. The particular advantages which each would acquire, might alone have ſatisfied them in this reſpect; but if not, all oppoſers might have been threatened with being declared, after a certain time, diveſted of all right to the propoſed advantages, and even of all pretenſions to the empire, or the elective kingdoms; and that the republics amongſt them ſhould be converted into ſovereignties, and ſovereignties into republics. There is but little probability that any of them would even have demurred what to do. The puniſhment of the firſt offender would have compelled the ſubmiſſion of all theſe petty ſtates, who were beſides ſufficiently ſenſible of their importance. But this method was not

not to be uſed but on failure of all others; and even then, no opportunity would have been neglected of ſhewing them favour.

And now we are arrived at the point to which every thing was advanced, at the fatal moment of the death of Henry the Great; and the following is a circumſtantial detail of the forces for the war, which all the parties concerned had, in conjunction with him, agreed to furniſh: The contingents of the kings of England, Sweden, and Denmark, were each eight thouſand foot, fifteen hundred horſe, and eight cannons; to be raiſed and maintained, in all reſpects, at their expence, at leaſt for three years; and this expence, reckoning ten livres a month for each foot ſoldier, thirty livres for each trooper, the pay of the officers included, and the year to be compoſed of ten months, would amount, for each of theſe ſtates, to three millions three hundred and ſeventy thouſand livres for three years; the expence of the artillery, fifteen hundred livres a month for each piece, being alſo included. The princes of Germany, before mentioned, were to furniſh twenty-five thouſand foot, ten thouſand horſe, and forty cannons: they had themſelves computed the expence at nine or ten millions for three years. The United Provinces, twelve thouſand foot, two thouſand horſe, and ten cannons: the expence twelve millions. Hungary, Bohemia, and the other evangelics of Germany, the ſame number, and nearly at the ſame expence. The Pope, ten thouſand foot, fifteen hundred horſe, and eight cannons. The duke of Savoy, eighteen thouſand foot, two thouſand horſe, and twelve cannons. The Venetians, twelve thouſand foot, two thouſand horſe, and twelve cannons. The expence of theſe laſt mentioned armaments the king himſelf had engaged to defray. The total of all theſe foreign forces, allowing for deficiencies, which might probably have happened, would always have been, at leaſt, one

hundred thouſand foot, from twenty to twenty-five thouſand horſe, and about one hundred and twenty cannons.

THE king, on his ſide, had actually on foot two good and well furniſhed armies; the firſt, which he was to have commanded in perſon, conſiſted of twenty thouſand foot, all native French, eight thouſand Switzers, four thouſand Lanſquenets or Walloons, five thouſand horſe, and twenty cannons. The ſecond, to be commanded by Leſdiguieres, in the neighbourhood of the Alps, conſiſted of ten thouſand foot, one thouſand horſe, and ten cannons; beſides a flying camp, of four thouſand foot, ſix hundred horſe, and ten cannons; and a reſerve of two thouſand foot to garriſon ſuch places where they might be neceſſary *. We will make a general calculation of all theſe troops.

THE twenty thouſand foot, at twenty-one livres a month to each man, including the appointments of generals and officers, would, by the month, require four hundred and twenty thouſand livres, and by the year, five millions and forty thouſand livres; the eight thouſand Switzers and four thouſand Lanſquenets, three millions; the five thouſand horſe, at ſixty livres a month to each, by the month, would require two hundred and forty thouſand livres, and by the year, two millions eight hundred and forty thouſand livres: this computation is made ſo high as ſixty livres a month to each, becauſe the pay of the officers, and particularly of the king's white troops, compoſed of a thouſand men of the firſt rank in

* There are ſome variations in our Memoirs in regard to the number of men, both in the royal grand army, which, in different places, is ſaid to be compoſed of thirty, thirty-two, and thirty ſix thouſand foot, of four, five, ſix, and eight thouſand horſe, and from thirty to fifty cannons; and in that of the confederate princes of Germany, ſometimes computed even at forty thouſand foot, and twelve thouſand horſe; ſimilar differences do often occur in regard to thoſe of Italy, and the other confederate princes: neither are the calculations of the expences always the ſame, nor quite juſt in their eſtimates.

the

the kingdom, who ſerved as volunteers, was therein included. The expence of the twenty large cannons, ſix culverins, and four demi-culverins, ſuppoſing all neceſſary furniture for them provided, would amount to three thouſand ſix hundred livres a month for each piece; the thirty together would conſequently require one hundred and eight thouſand livres. Extraordinary expences and loſſes, in regard to the proviſions and ammunition for his army, might be computed at one hundred and fifty thouſand livres.

And for expences, whether ordinary or extraordinary, in ſpies, for ſick and wounded, and other unforeſeen contingencies, computing at the higheſt, a like ſum of one million eight hundred thouſand livres. To ſupply the deficiencies which might happen in the armies of the confederate princes, to pay the penſions, and to anſwer other particular exigences which might ariſe in the kingdom, three hundred thouſand livres a month; for the year, three millions ſix hundred thouſand livres. The army of Leſdiguieres would require three millions a year; and as much for each of the armies of the Pope, the Venetians, and the duke of Savoy. Theſe four laſt articles together, make twelve millions a year; which, added to the preceding ſums, amount in the whole to about thirty millions one hundred and ſixty thouſand livres a year.

It remains only to triple this total for three years, during which it was ſuppoſed there might be occaſion for the forces, and the whole amount will appear to be between ninety and ninety-one millions, which might nearly be neceſſary to defray the expences of the intended war; I ſay nearly, for in this calculation I have not included the flying camp, nor the two thouſand men for garriſons: the firſt of theſe two articles, at the rate of eighteen livres a month to each foot ſoldier, and fifty livres to each trooper, would require a farther ſum of about one hundred

and thirty thousand livres a month ; which, for a year, would be one million five hundred thousand livres, and four millions five hundred thousand livres for three years : the second article for the three years, would require about twelve hundred thousand livres.

On a supposition that the expence of France, on this occasion, would not have amounted to more than between ninety and ninety-five millions ; which supposition is far from being hazardous, because we have here computed every thing at the highest it would bear ; it is easy to shew, that at the expiration of three years, Henry would have remaining in his coffers thirty millions over and above what would be expended. The total amount of all the receipts from the several funds, formed and to be formed for these three years, being one hundred twenty-one millions five hundred and forty thousand livres, as appears from the three estimates which I drew up and presented to his majesty.

The first of these estimates, which contained only a list of the sums actually deposited in the Bastile, amounted to twenty-two millions four hundred and sixty thousand livres, in several coffers, marked Phelipeaux, Puget, and Bouhier : the second was another list of the sums actually due from the farmers, partizans, and receivers-general ; which might be considered as in possession, and produced another total of eighteen millions six hundred and thirteen thousand livres ; these two totals together made forty-one millions seventy-three thousand livres, which the king would immediately have at his disposal : to acquire the rest of these hundred and twenty one millions, I had no recourse, in the third estimate, to any new taxations. The whole remainder would arise solely from the offers of augmentation upon the several royal revenues which the farmers and partizans had made for a lease of three years, and from what the officers of justice

and

and the finances had voluntarily engaged to furniſh, provided they might be permitted the free enjoyment of certain privileges: ſo that in theſe one hundred twenty-one millions, I had not comprehended the three years receipts of the other royal revenues. And in caſe it were afterwards neceſſary to have recourſe to means ſomewhat more burthenſome, I had given the king another eſtimate, whereby, inſtead of theſe one hundred twenty-one millions, it appeared that one hundred ſeventy-five millions might have been raiſed. I alſo demonſtrated, that, upon any preſſing emergency, this kingdom could open itſelf reſources of treaſure that are almoſt innumerable.

It was very much to be wiſhed, that the ſums of money and the number of men to be furniſhed by the other confederates, would be equally well ſecured by ſuch eſtimates: but whatever deficiencies might have happened, having forty-one millions to diſtribute where-ever it might be found neceſſary, what obſtacles could Henry have to fear from a power who was known to be deſtitute of money, and even of troops? no one being ignorant, that the beſt and moſt numerous forces which Spain had in its ſervice were drawn from Sicily, Naples, and Lombardy; or elſe were Germans, Switzers, and Walloons.

Every thing therefore concurring to promote ſucceſs, and good magazines being placed in proper parts of the paſſage, the king was on the point of marching, at the head of his army, directly to Mezieres; from whence, taking his route by Clinchamp, Orchimont, Beauraing, Offais, Longpré, &c. after having cauſed five forts to be erected in theſe quarters, and therein placed his two thouſand men deſtined for that purpoſe, with the neceſſary proviſions and ammunition, he would, near Duren and Stavelo, have joined the two armies, which the princes of Germany and the United Provinces would have cauſed to march thither; and then beginning by

occupying all thoſe paſſages through which the enemy might find entrance into the territories of Juliers and Cleves, theſe principalities, which were a pretext for the armament, would conſequently have immediately ſubmitted to him, and would have been ſequeſtrated, till it ſhould appear how the Emperor and the king of Spain would act, in regard to the deſigns of the confederate princes.

THIS was the moment fixed on to publiſh and make known throughout Europe, the declarations, in form of manifeſtos, which were to open the eyes of all in regard to their true intereſts, and the real motives which had cauſed Henry and the confederate princes thus to take up arms. Theſe manifeſtos were compoſed with the greateſt care; a ſpirit of juſtice, honeſty, and good faith, of diſintereſtedneſs and good policy, were every where apparent in them: and without wholly diſcovering the ſeveral changes intended to be made in Europe, it was intimated, that their common intereſt had thus compelled its princes to arm themſelves; and not only to prevent the houſe of Auſtria from getting poſſeſſion of Cleves, but alſo to diveſt her of the United Provinces, and of whatever elſe ſhe unjuſtly poſſeſſed; that their intentions were to diſtribute theſe territories among ſuch princes and ſtates as were the weakeſt; that the deſign was ſuch, as could not ſurely give occaſion to a war in Europe; that, though armed, the kings of France and the North rather choſe to be mediators in the cauſes of complaint which Europe, through them, made againſt the houſe of Auſtria, and only ſought amicably to determine all differences ſubſiſting among the ſeveral princes; and that whatever was done on this occaſion ſhould be not only, with the unanimous conſent of all theſe powers, but even of all their people, who were hereby invited to give in their opinions to the confederate princes: ſuch alſo would have

have been the ſubſtance of the circular letters which Henry and the aſſociated princes would at the ſame time have ſent to all places ſubject to them; that ſo the people being informed, and joining their ſuffrages, an univerſal cry from all parts of Chriſtendom would have been raiſed againſt the houſe of Auſtria.

As it was determined to avoid, with the utmoſt caution, whatever might give umbrage to any one, and Henry being deſirous to give ſtill more convincing proofs to his confederates, that to promote their true intereſts was his ſole ſtudy and deſign; to theſe letters already mentioned he would have added others to be written to different courts, particularly to the electors of Cologne and Treves, the biſhops of Munſter, Liege, and Paderborn; and the duke and dutcheſs of Lorrain; and this conduct would have been purſued, in regard even to our enemies, in the letters which were to be written to the arch-duke, and the infanta his wife, to the Emperor himſelf, and to all the Auſtrian princes, requeſting them, from the ſtrongeſt and moſt preſſing motives, to embrace the only right and reaſonable party; in all places, nothing would have been neglected, to inſtruct, convince, and gain confidence; the execution of all engagements, and the diſtribution or ſequeſtration of whatever territories might require to be ſo diſpoſed would have been ſtrictly, and even ſcrupulouſly, obſerved; force would never have been employed, till arguments, intreaties, embaſſies, and negotiations, ſhould have failed; finally, even in the uſe of arms, it would have been not as enemies, but pacifiers; the queen would have advanced as far as Metz, accompanied by the whole court, and attended by ſuch pomp and equipage as were ſuitable only to peace.

HENRY had projected a new method of diſcipline in his camp, which very probably would have produced the good effects intended by it, eſpecially if his ex-

ample had been imitated by the other princes his allies; he intended to have created four marſhals of France, or at leaſt four camp marſhals, whoſe ſole care ſhould have been to maintain univerſal order, diſcipline, and ſubordination: the firſt of theſe would have had the inſpection of the cavalry, the ſecond of the French infantry, the third of the foreign forces, and the fourth of whatever concerned the artillery, ammunition, and proviſions; and the king would have required an exact and regular account from theſe two officers, of whatever was tranſacted by them in their reſpective diviſions. He applied himſelf with equal ardour to make all military virtues to be revered and honoured in his army, by granting all employs and places of truſt to merit only, by preferring good officers, by rewarding good ſoldiers, by puniſhing blaſphemies and other impious language, by ſhewing a regard both for his own troops and thoſe of his confederates, by ſtifling a ſpirit of diſcord, cauſed by a difference of religions; and, finally, by uniting emulation with that harmony of ſentiments which contributes more than all the reſt to obtain victory.

THE conſequence of this enterpriſe, with regard to war, would have depended on the manner in which the Emperor and the king of Spain would receive the propoſitions, and reply to the manifeſto's of the confederate princes; it ſeems probable that the emperor, ſubmitting to force, would have conſented to every thing: I am even perſuaded he would have been the firſt to demand an amicable interview with the king of France, that he might at leaſt extricate himſelf with honour out of the difficulties in which he would have been involved; and he would probably have been ſatisfied with aſſurances, that the imperial dignity, with all its rights and prerogatives, ſhould be ſecured to him for his life. The arch-dukes had made great advances; they engaged to permit the king, with all his troops, to enter their territories and

and towns, provided they committed no hoſtilities in them, and paid punctually, in all places, for whatever they required: if theſe appearances were not deceitful, Spain being abandoned by all, muſt, though unwillingly, have ſubmitted to the will of its conquerors.

But it may be ſuppoſed, that all the branches of the houſe of Auſtria would, on this occaſion, have united, and, in defence of their common intereſts, would have uſed all the efforts of which they were capable. In this caſe, Henry and the confederate princes, by declaring war in form againſt their enemies, and depriving the Spaniards of all communications, eſpecially with the Low-Countries: and having, as we have ſaid, united all their forces, given audience to the princes of Germany, promiſed aſſiſtance to the people of Hungary and Bohemia who ſhould come to implore it of them; and finally, ſecured the territory of Cleves: theſe princes, I ſay, would then have cauſed their three armies to advance towards Bale and Straſbourg to ſupport the Switzers, who after having, for form's ſake, aſked leave of the emperor, would have declared for the union. The United Provinces, though at a conſiderable diſtance from theſe armies, would yet have been ſufficiently defended by the flying camp, which Henry would have cauſed to advance towards them; by the arms of England and the North, to whoſe protection they would be entruſted; by the care which at firſt would have been taken to get poſſeſſion of Charlemont, Maeſtricht, Namur, and other places near the Meuſe; and finally, by the naval forces of theſe provinces, which, in conjunction with thoſe of England, would have reigned abſolute maſters at ſea.

These meaſures being taken, the war could have fallen only in Italy or Germany; and ſuppoſing it to have happened in the former, the three armies of Henry, the prince of Orange, and the princes of

Germany, quitting Franche-Compté, after having fortified it in the ſame manner as the Low-Countries, by a ſmall body of troops, would have marched with their forces towards the Alps, where they would have been joined by thoſe of Leſdiguieres, the pope, the Venetians, and the duke of Savoy; who then would have declared themſelves openly; the duke of Savoy, by requiring a portion for his ducheſs, equal to what had been given to the infanta Iſabella; and the other powers, by demanding the execution of the agreement in regard to Navarre, Naples, and Sicily: and thus, from all parts of Europe, war would be declared againſt Spain. If the enemy ſhould appear inclined to draw the war into Germany, then the confederates, having left a conſiderable number of troops in Italy, would have penetrated even into the heart of Germany, where, from Hungary and Bohemia, they would have been ſtrengthened by thoſe powerful ſuccours which were there preparing.

THE other events, in conſequence of theſe diſpoſitions, can only be conjectured, becauſe they would greatly depend on the degree of alacrity with which the enemy ſhould oppoſe the rapidity of our conqueſts, and on the readineſs with which the confederates, eſpecially thoſe at the extremity of Germany, ſhould make good their engagements. Nevertheleſs, I am perſuaded, that from the diſpoſitions as here laid down, there are none but muſt regard the houſe of Auſtria as penetrated by the blow whoſe force was for ever to annihilate its power, and open a paſſage to the execution of the other projected deſigns, to which this attack could only be conſidered as the preliminary: I will add too (and here the voice of all Europe will vindicate me from the imputation of partiality) that if the force neceſſary to render ſuch an enterprize ſucceſsful does always depend on the perſon of the chief who conducts it, this could not have been better conferred, than upon

Henry

Henry the Great. With a valour alone capable of ſurmounting the greateſt difficulties; and preſence of mind, which neither neglected nor loſt any opportunities of advantage; with a prudence which, without precipitating any thing, or attempting too many things at a time, could regularly connect them together, and perfectly knew what might and what might not be the reſult of time; with a conſummate experience; and finally, with all thoſe other great qualifications, whether as a warrior or politician, which were ſo remarkable in this prince; what is there which might not have been obtained? This was the meaning of that modeſt device which this great king cauſed to be inſcribed on ſome of the laſt medals that were ſtruck under his reign, *Nil ſine concilio.*

SUPPLEMENT

TO

The LIFE of the DUKE of SULLY,

After his RETREAT.

THE first time we find the duke of Sully mentioned by the historians after his retreat, is upon his appearance at the assembly of protestants, held at Châtelleraut, in the year 1611. His mind was still embittered by the treatment he had met with at court; he was well informed that the duke of Bouillon, who, contrary to his real interest and character, was preparing to go thither to support the queen's rights against the protestants, had put himself at the head of his enemies, and was endeavouring to deprive him of the government of Poitou, and of his post of grand-master of the ordnance, which the queen regent had promised to bestow upon him, in reward for the services she expected from him upon this occasion; it is not therefore surprising that, in such a conjuncture, the duke of Sully should act there with vigour and spirit. Those who favour the duke of Bouillon have, thro' resentment that he failed in his attempt, accused the dukes of Sully and Rohan of seeking to rekindle the war between the protestants and the catholics; but they are the only persons who speak in this manner. All the other writers agree that the conduct of M. de Sully was wholly free from blame; and indeed his enemies acted with so much heat and malignity

againſt him, that the author of the French Mercury *, whom I ſhall follow in this period of the duke of Sully's hiſtory, condemns him for not taking the only meaſures that remained to ſecure his repoſe. Here follows a ſhort account of what paſſed, with regard to the duke of Sully, at the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, or of Saumur; for his enemies, being apprehenſive that he would be too powerful if it was held at Châtelleraut, cauſed it to be transferred to Saumur.

THE duke of Bouillon making no ſecret of his intentions to reduce the Calviniſts his brethren, and the duke of Sully in particular, to the laſt extremity, the common intereſt re-united the latter with Du-Pleſſis-Mornay and the principal proteſtant miniſters, who, till then, as has been ſeen through the courſe of theſe Memoirs, had acted with great reſerve towards him, and great diſtruſt of his ſentiments. They began by refuſing the dignity of preſident of their aſſembly to the duke of Bouillon, and conferred it on Du-Pleſſis; and made him ſenſible how much they were offended at the part he had acted, by continually oppoſing him; ſo that he could not obtain any of thoſe demands which might probably have been granted to an agent of the catholic religion, which was a convincing proof that the queen regent committed a great error when ſhe made choice of the duke of Bouillon to ſerve her on this occaſion. However, a kind of reconciliation was made between him and the duke of Sully, through the interpoſition of Du-Pleſſis; and from that time the duke found no more obſtacles to hinder him from intereſting the proteſtant body in his particular cauſe, which became one of the chief ſubjects of their deliberations.

THE aſſembly addreſſed him, entreated, and enjoined him, (theſe are the terms made uſe of by the French Mercury) not to reſign his employments,

* Anno 1611. p. 75.

pro-

promiſed to ſupport him, &c. To which the duke of Sully anſwered by a ſpeech, in which he aſked the advice of the aſſembly upon four things. 1ſt, If he ought to take no notice of the proceedings of his enemies with reſpect to him? 2d, If, on the contrary, he ought himſelf to make a demand of being again reſtored to his places? 3d, If it was more eligible to accept of a recompence for them? and laſtly, If this recompence ought to be honour and ſecurity rather than profit? For it was to conceal the deſign they had of ruining him entirely, that the court made a propoſal to him to receive a marſhal's ſtaff, or a conſiderable ſum of money in exchange for his poſt of grand-maſter of the ordnance, and his government of Poitou. M. de Sully concluded this diſcourſe, in which he could not forbear mingling ſome complaints of the rigour which the council of the queen regent uſed towards him, with excuſing himſelf for not having ſooner laid before them the hardſhips he ſuffered on account of the great difficulty he found to perſuade himſelf that there were really ſuch plots formed againſt him, as well as of his fears of diſpleaſing ſome perſons to whom he owed all imaginable reſpect.

This diſcourſe was as agreeable to the proteſtants, as it was diſpleaſing to Bouillon and the reſt of the queen's agents. In their anſwer they gave indeed very high praiſes to the duke of Sully's adminiſtration; but they taxed him with being ungenerous, and of having entertained a deſign to force the queen to reſtore him to his place in the miniſtry. M. de Sully anſwered this accuſation by another remonſtrance, in which he referred his intereſts to the aſſembly. The duke of Bouillon perceiving what was likely to be the event, took off the maſque a ſecond time, and began to cabal with all the proteſtants whom he thought there was a poſſibility of gaining. In effect, he drew over ſome; but all his endeavours to gain the duke of Rohan were fruitleſs: and having

having neither been able, with all his addreſs, to hinder the greater number from adhering to the party of his adverſary, or to ſuſpend the concluſion, they paſſed on to their deliberations, the reſult of which was, that they would aſſiſt M. de Sully, if his adminiſtration was enquired into, *by unlawful ways.*

Bouillon, and the reſt of the queen's creatures, put every thing in motion to obtain a recantation or reſtriction. As for the duke of Bouillon, he broke out in a rage and exclamation: he gave the moſt violent counſels to the queen, who contented herſelf, however, with ſending letters in the king's name to the aſſembly, which Du-Pleſſis, for fear of the conſequences they might produce, thought proper to ſuppreſs. They now had recourſe to mediums and modifications. All the other articles were amicably ſettled, and that which regarded M. de Sully was ſuffered to reſt, becauſe it was apparent to the whole world that they could not, with any ſhadow of juſtice, accuſe him of being an unfaithful miniſter, much leſs an enemy to the ſtate; and becauſe the duke of Bouillon, being diſguſted with the queen for diſappointing him in his expectations of reward, ceaſed on a ſudden to act with the ſame heat and animoſity. The duke of Sully, therefore, remained in the ſame ſituation as when he retired from court.

The following year the war between the two religions was upon the point of being reſumed, by an incident for which our Memoirs ſeem to prepare us. Braſſac, whom his majeſty had appointed to be king's lieutenant of St. John D'Angely, after the death of Des-Ageaux, was driven out of that city by the duke of Rohan, whoſe whole conduct, from that time, ſufficiently declared that his ſentiments were very different from thoſe of his father in-law. Although the regent was then in a condition to give him law, and all the proteſtants were greatly in fear

of

of her, yet this affair was terminated wholly to the duke's advantage, who obtained all that he demanded. M. de Sully ſigned the agreement, which was made in the ſynod of Privas, between the duke of Rohan on one ſide, and the queen's agents on the other. This was all the ſhare he had in this great rupture.

THE two following letters, which I have tranſcribed from the originals, in the cabinet of the preſent duke of Sully, prove that the queen-mother had recourſe to Maximilian on many occaſions, and that he laboured with great diligence to prevent or appeaſe the troubles which afterwards aroſe between the princes and the grandees of the kingdom.

A Letter from the Queen-mother to the Duke of SULLY.

"COUSIN,

"I HAVE ſent the ſieur de Bethune your brother "to confer with you concerning the preſent occur- "rences, and have charged him to aſſure you of my "affection, and of my reliance on the continuance "of yours, for the ſervice of the king, monſieur "my ſon. You may give abſolute credit to what "he ſhall ſay to you on both theſe ſubjects, as you "would to the perſon of your good couſin,

Paris, Feb. 12, 1614. "MARY."

IT is ſuperſcribed, "To my Couſin, the Duke of "Sully, peer, and grand maſter of the ordnance of "France."

Another Letter from the Queen to M. de SULLY.

"COUSIN,

"HAVING received your letter of the 1ſt inſtant "on the 9th, I delayed anſwering it till my arrival "in this province, to the end that, being better in- "formed of the particular things which happened, "and the ſtate affairs are in at preſent, I might tell

"you

" you with more certainty, my opinion of them all
" in general: but I have found here so much con-
" fusion and tumult, so many complaints and in-
" fringements of the agreement of St. Menoult,
" that I confess I know not where to begin, or
" what to desire you to do for me on this occasion.
" Declarations are every where made, and assurances
" given me of zeal and fidelity for the service of
" the king my son, and the public good, which are
" indeed very acceptable; but I find effects so con-
" trary to all this, that I no sooner entertain any
" favourable hopes, than they vanish in an instant.
" I do not write this upon your own particular ac-
" count; for I depend upon your affection to the
" good of your country and our own happiness, in
" proportion to the experience I have had of it, and
" the assurance you have given me; but I write to
" condole with you upon the changeableness and
" uncertainty of such proceedings. I have with-
" in these two days received your last letter here;
" the bearer of this will tell you what I think of
" it.

" I do not doubt but that you have, with a free-
" dom and zeal becoming a good subject and an ho-
" nest man, made those remonstrances to my nephew
" the prince of Condé, which you have given me an
" account of in your letter, and I am rejoiced to
" hear that he has taken them well of you: but, if
" he approves of your advice, what hinders him
" from following it? By so doing he will get rid
" of those perplexities in which you tell me he
" is involved; he will receive of me every reason-
" able proof he can desire of my good-will, and all
" the respect and deference due to his quality. If to
" assure him of this, any thing depends upon me, I
" shall be glad to know it, and to have your opi-
" nion: but I have not yet received those letters,
" which he told you he wrote to me upon that sub-
" ject. I wish they may be such as may give me

" that

" that satisfaction, both with respect to him and " his friend, for the service of the king my son, as " he has often made me hope for, and even re- " quest; and, this done, I shall make him such re- " turns as he shall have just reason to be contented " with: as likewise all those who shall follow his " example.

" I HAVE not yet seen the duke of Vendôme; " so that I know not what I ought to hope from his " obedience; for I have advice that he continues " to fortify Lamballe, and has engaged a great num- " ber of soldiers, who have served, or rather dis- " served him during these last commotions, and es- " pecially since the contract of St. Menoult, to " which the king my son and myself are endeavour- " ing to apply the necessary remedies, by the ad- " vice of the states of the country, which we are to " propose to-morrow. As I promise myself that " you will always continue faithful to the interests " of the king my son, and that you will readily em- " brace every opportunity of serving him, you may " make what use you think proper of this for that " purpose; and I beseech God, cousin, &c. Writ- " ten at Nantz, August 18, 1614.

" Your good cousin,

" MARY."

IN the year 1616 the revolt of the protestants broke out. On this occasion the duke of Sully gave a convincing proof that he preferred the welfare of the state to the interest of his party, and even to his own particular interest; for, when it was proposed to him to re-unite the party of the prince of Condé with that of the protestant, a design which, according to all appearance, would have ruined the kingdom, the duke of Sully, whose suffrage was of the utmost consequence, refused absolutely to give it, and remained constantly attached to the king. Let us see what marshal Bassompierre says on this subject

ſubject in his Memoirs. "M. de Sully, ever ſolicitous for the good of the ſtate, maintained himſelf in the eſteem and reſpect of both parties, and endeavoured to ſet them right, as long as they could ſubſiſt in the ſtate they were, by ſending information ſometimes to the queen-mother, and ſometimes to the prince; and, on Auguſt the 26th, the duke of Sully demanded an audience of the queen. He then told her, that matters were brought to ſuch extremity, that it was not poſſible they could continue eight days longer in the ſame ſituation; that as the ballance was now held, the whole authority muſt neceſſarily fall into the hands of the prince; that it was ſtill in her own choice whether to keep or ſuffer herſelf to be diſpoſſeſſed of her's. He declared that ſhe was not ſecure in Paris, and that ſhe and her children would be ſafer in the field, with a thouſand horſe, than in the Louvre, while the minds of the nobles and people were thus enraged. He ſaid, that his duty, and the obligations he had to the deceaſed king, required that he ſhould make her theſe remonſtrances; and that, if there was no other remedy for the preſent evils but the loſs of his life, he would ſacrifice it willingly for the preſervation of the king, herſelf, and the ſtate; then, taking leave of her, he implored her to conſider well what he had ſaid: and added, that, if ſhe did not apply the only fit and reaſonable remedy to theſe commotions, ſhe would be anſwerable for all the conſequences of them, ſince ſhe had been warned beforehand of what was likely to happen."

The author of the Hiſtory of the Mother and Son * renders, in ſpite of himſelf, this juſtice to the duke of Sully. "M. de Sully, ſays he, demanded an audience of the queen, that he might confer with her upon an affair, which he ſaid was of no leſs importance than the preſervation of the king's life and her's. The queen had taken phy-

* Tom. II. p. 61, 62.

"ſic,

" ſic that day; but, upon a matter of ſuch conſe-
" quence, ſhe thought ſhe could not diſpenſe with
" herſelf from ſeeing him. The king happened, by
" chance, to be preſent; as were likewiſe the ſieurs
" Mangot and Barbin. The duke of Sully then
" made a ſpeech, in which he expatiated upon the
" bad deſigns of the princes, and the inevitable
" dangers which he foreſaw for the king. The
" ſieurs Mangot and Barbin told him, that it was
" not enough to diſcover an evil; he ought like-
" wiſe to propoſe ſome proper remedies to obviate it.
" To this he only added, that the attempt was
" hazardous, and that they muſt expect to ſee very
" fatal conſequences; then, quitting the queen's
" cloſet, he ſaid, Sire, and you, madam, I entreat
" your majeſties to think well on what I have ſaid:
" I have diſcharged my conſcience; would to God
" you were in the midſt of twelve hundred horſe:
" I ſee no other remedy." Saying this he went away.

It muſt be confeſſed, that to the hatred which this writer bore the duke of Sully, is owing the following recital †: " The prince of Condé being
" arreſted, the miniſters told the queen, that, unleſs
" ſhe releaſed him, all was loſt. M. de Sully,
" whoſe vehemence of temper would not allow him
" time for reflection, nor to give his advice in the
" preſent exigence on what might be apprehended
" for the future, without blaming paſt proceedings,
" ſaid, that whoever had counſelled the queen to
" arreſt the prince, had ruined the ſtate. The queen
" replied, that ſhe was aſtoniſhed to hear him ſpeak
" in that manner; and that he muſt certainly have
" loſt his reaſon, ſince he did not remember what
" he himſelf had ſaid to the king and her but three
" days before. Theſe words threw him into ſuch
" confuſion that he withdrew immediately, to the
" great aſtoniſhment of all the lords who were pre-

† Tom. II. p. 94.

" ſent.

" ſent. His wife endeavoured afterwards to excuſe
" him, by alledging that it was the terrors he la-
" boured under at that time which had forced him
" to ſpeak ſo, having been informed that the princes
" and nobles of the prince of Condé's party had re-
" ſolved to murder him, through a ſuſpicion that he
" was the cauſe of the prince's detention, by the
" diſcoveries he had made of their deſign."

WITHOUT examining here whether the duke of Sully contradicted himſelf in the advice he gave the queen at theſe two different times, we ſhall grant that the reſolution they had taken to arreſt the prince of Condé, was both prudent and neceſſary; and the inference I ſhall draw from theſe circumſtances is, that the miniſter never ſwerved from his attachment to the intereſt of the king and the public good, on any occaſion ſo favourable to the proteſtant party, where he himſelf ran great riſks.

HE obſerved the ſame conduct during the reſt of his life. He was inveſted with the king's authority in the aſſemblies of Rouen and Loudun: he ſupported, like a good citizen and a loyal ſubject, his majeſty's party againſt the proteſtants, when the war was declared under the adminiſtration of cardinal Richelieu: he was preſent at the ſiege of Montauban and other encounters: he even performed all the functions of grand-maſter of the ordnance at the ſiege of St. Jean D'Angely, and the train of artillery there was furniſhed and conducted with the greateſt care. He kept this office till his death, although the writer of the duke of Bouillon's life ſays that it was taken from him. Lewis XIII. gave him a marſhal's ſtaff, September 18, 1634. The preceding year pope Urban VIII. wrote him a letter in Latin, to which M. de Sully ſent an anſwer by his grand ſon the prince of Henrichemont, and which produced a ſecond brief from the pope, in Latin likewiſe, dated July 16, 1633.

IN the ſame year he loſt the marquis de Roſny,

his

his eldeſt ſon, whoſe conduct had been a continula ſource of affliction to him, not only becauſe the marquis followed none of the wiſe counſels he gave him, and joined himſelf to the enemies of the ſtate, but becauſe the duke of Sully felt, in more ways than one, the extreme diſorder of his ſon's affairs. And here it is neceſſary we ſhould give ſome account of the duke of Sully's domeſtic concerns, which will ſerve to explain ſeveral parts of theſe Memoirs where the marquis of Roſny is mentioned, and particularly what is ſaid of him in the twenty-ninth book.

The duke of Sully, beſides two daughters, the eldeſt of whom was married to the duke of Rohan, and the youngeſt to the marquis of Mirepoix, had three ſons; Maximilian de Bethune, marquis of Roſny, he had by his firſt wife Anne de Courtenay; and Cæſar and Francis de Bethune, by his ſecond, Rachel de Cochefilet. The great eſtates he was poſſeſſed of being acquired ſince his ſecond marriage, the children by that marriage ſeemed intitled to the largeſt ſhare of them; nevertheleſs, the duke of Sully thinking himſelf obliged to ſecure to the marquis de Roſny ſuch an eſtate as might enable him to ſupport the grandeur of his houſe, of which he was the eldeſt, to the poſts of grand-maſter of the ordnance, ſuperintendant of the fortifications, and to the governments of Mante and Gergeau, the reverſion of which he obtained for him, and which he eſtimated at ſixty thouſand livres a year, he added, among other gifts, a donation of lands producing a yearly revenue of fifty thouſand livres, conſiſting of the duchy of Sully, the marquiſate of Roſny, the principality of Henrichemont and Boiſbelle, with all their dependencies, the property of which, however, he reſerved to himſelf during his life. The deed of entail, which is dated March 17, 1609, has in it this ſingular clauſe: "That on the ſuppoſition "that none of thoſe, whether male or female, choſe "to fulfil the aforeſaid terms and conditions, the "ſaid

" ſaid lord, who makes this ſettlement, gives, by the " preſent writing, the aboveſaid lands to the king " or his deſcendants, according to their ſeniority, " on condition that the ſaid lands ſhould never be " diſunited from the crown; and that he who " ſhould poſſeſs them, if he be not the king or the " king's eldeſt ſon, ſhall be obliged, and his deſcen- " dants after him, together with his own name and " arms, to bear the ſirname and arms of Bethune."

But afterwards being ſolicitous to prevent any occaſion for diſunion in his family, M. de Sully the following year made two other donations and conveyances of his other poſſeſſions in the ſame form, and by an act of the ſame kind, in favour of Cæſar and Francis de Bethune his youngeſt ſons: namely, of the land and lordſhip of Villebon to Cæſar; and to Francis de Bethune, called the count of Orval, of the lands of Montrond, Orval, Bruyeres, Epineuil, Beaucheſal, La-Roche-Guillebaut, and Le-Châtelet, in Berry. The value of each of theſe donations is eſtimated at ten thouſand livres a year. It is there ſtipulated that the fortifications, arms, ammunition and furniture, as well thoſe which were in all theſe caſtles when the donation was made, as thoſe which ſhould be found there at the death of the duke of Sully, ſhould be comprehended in the donation; and if either of his two ſons, to whom they were made over, ſhould die without heirs, his portion was to go intire to the ſurvivor. This happened four years after; for, Cæſar de Bethune dying unmarried in 1614, the count of Orval re-united in himſelf the two articles of conveyance. In 1620 his father married him to Jaqueline de Caumont, daughter to the grand-marſhal de La Force, and grand-daughter of the firſt marſhal Biron; and he confirmed, by the marriage contract, the act of entail, made in the year 1610.

Before and after the duke of Sully had made theſe diſpoſitions of his eſtates, the marquis of Roſny con-

continued to hold his poſſeſſions jointly with his father. This community of goods was wholly to the advantage of the ſon, his mother's eſtate alone being not ſufficient to ſupply his expences: but it expoſed the duke of Sully to the proſecution of his ſon's creditors. The duke paid his debts ſeveral times; but they became ſo conſiderable, by the prodigality and bad management of the marquis of Roſny, that he took a reſolution, at length, to leave him to himſelf. Such was the beginning of his domeſtic troubles.

THIS was ſoon followed by others more conſiderable; for after the death of the marquis of Roſny, his creditors, taking the advantage of the community of goods, made an attempt to ſeize upon ſome of the poſſeſſions of the duke of Sully. The prince of Henrichemont *, his grand-ſon, joined with them to annul theſe conveyances, in which he was greatly aſſiſted by the circumſtances the duke of Sully was then in, who, to get himſelf clear of the prince of Condé, had been obliged to do and undo many eſtabliſhments, and had gained, and ſold, and gained again, at ſeveral times, a great part of the lands contained in thoſe conveyances; ſuch as Villebon, Montrond, &c. This kept the duke of Sully in continual perplexity with diſputes and law-ſuits, part of which, however, were amicably ſettled by the marriage of the prince Henrichemont with the daughter of the chancellor Seguier†, in the year 1639; upon which the duke of Sully, who was then upon good terms with the prince of Condé, having Villebon reſtored, and all his other acquiſitions ſecured to him, made over again, in the year 1640 a new conveyance, confirming the former, by

* Maximilian Francis de Bethune, the third of that name, duke of Sully, prince of Henrichemont and Boiſbelle, marquis of Roſny, lieutenant-general for the government of Dauphiny and the Païs-Vexin, governor of Mante and Meulan: he died in 1661.

† Charlotte Seguier, daughter of the chancellor Seguier.

which

which he gave other lands, in the place of thoſe that might be alienated.

THE diſcontent of the prince of Henrichemont broke out again upon this new conveyance, and ſet on foot a law-ſuit, of which Lewis XIII. and his firſt miniſter took the cognizance to themſelves, and which continued during the years 1640 and 1641; the petitions and principal pieces of this ſuit have been printed: the duke of Sully complains there bitterly, that his grandſon and the chancellor Seguier, who ſupported him ſought to take advantage of ſome failures in the formalities of the ſettlements, unavoidable perhaps in affairs ſo long and ſo complicated. But it would be improper here to enter into a diſcuſſion of this point of the law. Suppoſing that all poſſible right was not on the ſide of the duke of Sully, yet it muſt be confeſſed, that the voice of nature, and a principle of gratitude, ought to have carried it in favour of a man who had raiſed his family to ſuch a degree of ſplendor: however that may be, the duke of Sully had the mortification to find himſelf, by a decree of council given in December, 1641, obliged to revoke his conveyance of four of thoſe eſtates which had been given in the room of the former that had been alienated. He was then eighty-two years old, and it is probable that, jealous as he was of the paternal authority, and convinced in his own mind, that in all he had done he had exactly followed the laws of equity, this ſtroke affected him ſo ſenſibly, that it contributed to ſhorten his life: he died eight days afterwards at Villebon, December 22, 1641.

HIS bowels were put into a kind of leaden urn, and depoſited in the vault of the collegiate church of Saint-Anne in Villebon, and upon the vault over it this inſcription:

Here lie the bowels of the moſt high, moſt puiſſant, and moſt illuſtrious lord, Maximilian de Bethune, duke of Sully, peer and marſhal of France.

His body was carried to Aumône, or Hotel Dieu of Nogent, but the mauſoleum which was erecting for him there, not being finiſhed, it was laid in a leaden coffin, and placed in the duke of Sully's chamber in the caſtle of Villebon, where he died. The cielings, the floors, and walls of this apartment, were hung with black cloth: it was left there expoſed to view, under a canopy of black velvet, with bands of ſilver ſtuff, and the arms of Bethune at the four corners.

In the mean time, the ducheſs of Sully cauſed a cloſet to be built in the lower gallery of the caſtle of Villebon, in order to place a ſtatue in it, which ſhe deſigned to erect to the memory of her huſband; and for this purpoſe ſhe bought a block of white marble, the fineſt that could be procured, and ſent for one of the moſt excellent ſculptures of that time from Italy. In the front of this cloſet is written, in large characters, the ten commandments, as they ſtand in the book of Exodus; on one of the ſides, the epitaph of the deceaſed; upon the other, his coat of arms, with all the enſigns of his office; the top, and all the reſt of the cloſet, is filled with pictures, emblems, and mottos, which it is not neceſſary to deſcribe here: it is enlightened by a long window, which takes up the farther end. The ſtatue is placed in the midſt of the cloſet, ſtanding upon a pedeſtal of white marble likewiſe; it is a little larger than the life, and repreſents the duke of Sully, armed from his neck to his feet, with a crown of laurel upon his head, and the ducal mantle on his ſhoulders; in his right hand, ſtretched out, he holds the marſhal's ſtaff; and his left is leaning upon his coat of arms: the marſhal's ſtaff, as well as his caſque, adorned with a plume of feathers, which lies at the left ſide of the ſtatue, are cut out of the ſame block. This whole piece is ſo beautiful and ſo highly finiſhed, that it may vie with the antient monuments of Greece and Rome. Over the door of the cloſet is written, in cartouche: *Rachel*

Rachel de Cochefilet, Ducheſs Dowager of Sully, after the death of Maximilian de Bethune, Duke of Sully, her husband, with whom ſhe lived forty-nine years in marriage, to honour his memory, and in teſtimony of her grief for his loſs, has erected this ſtatue, in the year 1642.

THE body of this lady being, after her death, depoſited by that of her huſband, the mauſoleum, which we are going to deſcribe, was common to them both: it is a round chapel, built on the ſide of that of Saint James de l'Aumône, or the Hoſpital of Nogent, called from their name Nogent le Bethune; it has no communication with the church, becauſe the duke and ducheſs of Sully were ſo unhappy as to die in the principles of the pretended reformed religion. Under this chapel is a vault, where both their bodies are interred. The walls on the inſide of this chapel are adorned with the coats of arms and alliances of the houſe of Bethune; the dome is only coloured with a plain blue, ſprinkled with flowers de luce: the effigies of the duke and ducheſs are of white marble, as large as the life; they are kneeling upon a pedeſtal, three feet in height, with their faces turned towards the eaſt: by an inſcription upon the pedeſtal we are told, that this work, which is very well executed, was the performance of B. Boudin, in the year 1642. Behind the ſtatue of the duke of Sully, is this inſcription:

Here lies the body of the moſt high, moſt puiſſant, and moſt illuſtrious, lord, Maximilian de Bethune, Marquis of Roſny, who ſhared in all the fortunes of king Henry the Great, among which was that memorable battle which gave the crown to the Victor; where by his valour, he gained the white ſtandard, and took ſeveral priſoners of diſtinction. He was by that Great Monarch, in reward of his many virtues and diſtinguiſhed merit, honoured with the dignities of Duke, Peer, and Marſhal of France, with the governments

of the Upper and Lower Poitou, with the office of Grand Maſter of the Ordnance, in which, bearing the thunder of his Jupiter, he took the caſtle of Montmelian, till then believed impregnable, and many other fortreſſes of Savoy; he was likewiſe made Superintendant of the Finances, which office he diſcharged ſingly with a wiſe aud prudent œconomy, and continued his faithful ſervices till that unfortunate day when the Cæſar of the French nation loſt his life by the hand of a parricide. After the lamented death of that great King, he retired from publick affairs, and paſſed the remainder of his life in eaſe and tranquility. He died at the caſtle of Villebon, December 22, 1641, aged eighty-two years.—Here alſo lies the moſt high, moſt puiſſant, and moſt illuſtrious lady, Madame Rachel de Cochefilet, his wife, who died at Paris in the ninety-ſeventh year of her age, in the year 1659.

THE way to the chapel is through a long court, planted with a walk of elms; at the entrance of which is a portal, of very beautiful architecture, with the arms of the houſe of Bethune in raiſed work, and all the additions belonging to the arms of the duke of Sully. The houſe of Bethune bears *d'argent, facé de gueules*, ſupported by two ſavages armed with clubs.

BEFORE Villebon was reſtored to the duke of Sully, he divided his reſidence between Sully, La Chapelle-d'Angillon, which is a very fine houſe and barony dependent on the duchy of Sully, and Roſny, which, of all his houſes, he moſt embelliſhed, as he reckoned upon this being always kept in his family: he was building the wings when he had the misfortune to loſe the king, his benefactor; and as a witneſs of his grief for that loſs, he left thoſe wings imperfect, and in the ſame condition they were in at the time of that ſad event. But when he became again poſſeſſed of Villebon, the beauty of that caſtle, its ſituation in a moſt agreeable country, its contiguity

tiguity to Paris, for Villebon is not more than twenty leagues distant from that city, and the advantage of being in the center of several great estates which he had purchased with the money arising from the sale of those he had been obliged to part with to the prince of Condé; all these considerations determined him to fix his stay there during six whole months of the year, which were the autumn and the winter: he used in the spring, to make some short journies to Sully; but that place was become very disagreeable to him, on account of the conduct of his eldest son: the rest of the year he passed at La Chapelle-d'Angillon, at Rosny, and his other estates.

The life he led in his retreat was accompanied with decency, grandeur, and even majesty; such as might be expected from a character so grave and so full of dignity as his Besides a great many gentlemen and pages, by whom he was attended, and ladies and maids of honour about the person of the duchess of Sully, he had one company of guards, with their officers, and another of Swiss; and so great a number of domestics, that there are but few examples of subjects who have kept so grand and so numerous an household. Monsieur the present duke of Sully, has conversed with the son of an ancient surgeon belonging to his ancestor the duke of Sully, the last of this branch, who died at the age of eighty-eight years, and who was about fourteen when the duke of Sully, of whom we are speaking, died: this man told him, that he had accompanied his father in his visits to the sick in the castle of Villebon; and had reckoned fourscore of them, without perceiving that the service of the house suffered the least disorder or delay upon that account.

M. de Sully always continued his custom of rising very early in the morning; after some time spent in prayers and reading, he set himself to work with his four secretaries: this work consisted in putting his

papers in order, in digesting his Memoirs, in answering the several letters he received, in regulating his domestic affairs, and, lastly, in taking cognizance of those which related either to his governments or his posts; for he continued, till his death, governor of the Upper and Lower Poitou and of Rochelle, grand master of the ordnance, grand surveyor of France, and superintendant of the fortifications. He usually passed the whole morning in these occupations; except that he sometimes went out to take the air half an hour or an hour before dinner; they then rung a great bell which was upon the bridge, to give notice that he was going out; the greatest part of his household ranged themselves on each side, from the bottom of the stair-case to the door of his apartment; his equerries, gentlemen, and officers, walked before him, preceded by two Swiss with their halberts; the duke came next, with some of his friends and relations on each side of him, with whom he conversed; then followed the officers of his French and Swiss guards; and the procession was always closed by four Swiss.

At his return, he went into the hall, where he dined: this was a very large room, in which he had caused the most memorable actions of his own life, together with those of Henry the Great, to be painted; at the upper end of the table two armed chairs were placed for the duke and duchess; all his children, married as well as unmarried, of whatever rank or dignity, had only stools; for at that time, the subordination between parents and their children was so great, that they were not permitted to sit in their presence, without being commanded to do so. His table was served with taste and magnificence; he admitted to it none but the nobility in his neighbourhood, some of the principal gentlemen, and the ladies and maids of honour who belonged to the duchess of Sully: except his guests, all the company retired as soon as the desert was brought in.

After

After dinner they withdrew into a cabinet adjoining to the hall where they dined: this was called the cabinet of illuſtrious men, becauſe it was adorned with the portraits of popes, kings, princes, and other great and celebrated perſons, from whom he had received them; many of theſe portraits are ſtill to be ſeen at Villebon.

In another adjoining hall magnificently furniſhed, the captain of his guards had a ſecond table, ſerved with almoſt as much grandeur as the firſt; here ſat the younger ſort, and indeed thoſe only whom, on account of the diſproportion of age, he choſe not to receive at his own table. The preſent duke of Sully has been told by ſeveral perſons of quality, that when they have accompanied their fathers in the viſits they made to his anceſtor, he kept only them at his own table, ſaying to the young men, *You are not old enough to eat with us, we ſhould grow weary of one another.*

When he had ſtaid ſome time with the company, heretired to his own apartment, where for two or three hours he employed himſelf in the ſame manner as in the morning. If the ſeaſon and the weather permitted it, he took a walk in the afternoon, attended with the ſame train as before: he often went into his gardens, and paſſing through a little covered alley, which ſeparated the flower from the kitchen garden, aſcended by a ſtone ſtair-caſe (which the preſent duke of Sully has cauſed to be deſtroyed) into a large walk of linden trees, upon a terrace on the other ſide of the garden. It was then the taſte to have a great number of narrow walks, very cloſely ſhaded with four or five rows of trees or paliſadoes: here he uſed to ſit upon a ſettee painted green, and large enough to hold two perſons, and leaning his elbows upon a large grated window, which has been lately taken away likewiſe, amuſed himſelf with beholding, on the one ſide, an agreeable landſcape; and on the other, a ſecond alley,

on a terrace, extremely beautiful which ſurrounded a large piece of water, called the New Pond, and terminated by a wood of lofty trees, called the Great Park. In this park alſo he uſed ſometimes to walk, and often was drove about it in his chariot or coach, with the ducheſs his wife. The interval between theſe airings and ſupper, he ſpent in the ſame occupations as the morning: at ſupper, the ſame form was obſerved as at dinner: after which, every one retired to their reſpective apartments.

The duke of Sully, on account of his religion, could not be admitted into any order: he therefore made one for himſelf. In the inventory of his effects there were ſeveral diamond rings for that uſe. He wore about his neck, and more eſpecially after the death of Henry IV. a chain of gold or diamonds, to which hung a large gold medal which had in relievo the figure of that great prince. He uſed often to take this medal out of his boſom, ſtop, and contemplate it, and then kiſs it with the utmoſt reverence and affection: he never would quit it, not even when he went to court, any more than his ancient dreſs, which he always preſerved, for he would not ſubject himſelf to the change of faſhions. It is well known what happened to him one day when he went to court in conſequence of a meſſage from Lewis XIII. "Monſieur de Sully, ſaid the young "prince to him, I ſent for you as being one of "the chief miniſters of the king my father, and "a man in whom he placed great confidence, to "aſk your advice, and to confer with you upon ſome "affairs of importance." The duke of Sully ſeeing none but young courtiers about the king, who, to make their court to the conſtable de Luines, ridiculed his dreſs and the gravity of his manners, made this anſwer: "Sire, I am too old to change my "habits but for ſome good cauſe. When the late "king your father, of glorious memory, did me the "honour to ſend for me to confer with me upon "mat-

"matters of importance, the first thing he did was "to send away the buffoons." The young king seemed not to disapprove of this freedom: he ordered every one to withdraw, and remained alone with M. de Sully.

THE most exact order, subordination, and peace, reigned throughout his numerous household: no person knew better how to make himself be served, respected, and obeyed, than the duke of Sully. The catholics in his service saw no difference between his treatment of them and his protestant domestics, except the great care he took to oblige the former to an exact performance of all the duties of good roman catholics. This was one effect of that esteem, and even inclination, which, in the course of these Memoirs, he has always shewn for the true religion, and which would probably have led him to embrace it, but for the considerations he there mentions. The misfortune was, that, being persuaded he could work out his salvation in either of the two religions, he was too much governed by his own delicacy, which would not suffer him to have the appearance of being swayed either by ambition or interest, in taking a resolution which would have gratified both in so high a degree. All his children, except the duchess of Rohan, died in the bosom of the roman church.

THE duchess his wife, although brought up in the principles of the roman catholic religion, quitted it after the death of M. de Châteaupers her first husband, to marry the duke of Sully. The lords of Villebon had, in the church of that parish, which is a collegiate, a chapel on the side next the castle, which they caused to be demolished, and built in its place two galleries, of which the lower one was so inclosed, that those who were within could not be seen by the congregation; and the one above, to which the ascent is by a little stair-case of wood, is also obscured by a grate. It is publickly known,

that the two ducheſſes of Sully and Rohan, came often into the lower gallery to hear the pſalms during the canonical hours. They waſhed with their own hands all the linen that was uſed in the ſervice of the altar. The preſent duke of Sully heard this circumſtance from Catherine de La-Porte, one of his anceſtors. This lady, who lived a long time with the ducheſs of Rohan her aunt, heard from her an anecdote which no one at that time was ignorant of, namely, that the duke of Sully always gave a moſt gracious reception to the capuchins who viſited him, and had ſo great an eſteem for them, that during his laſt ſickneſs, and a few days before he died, he deſired to confer with ſome of theſe religious; but that, when they preſented themſelves for that purpoſe upon the bridge of the caſtle, the ducheſs of Sully gave orders that they ſhould not be admitted, and threatened to have them thrown into the moat.

THIS lady employed her time in regulating the interior of her houſhold; in having leaſes drawn out, and the accounts of the farmers and receivers given in; and always viſited the ſeveral eſtates of her huſband, when neceſſary. In her leiſure hours ſhe amuſed herſelf with working tapeſtry and embroidery with her ladies and maids of honour. The beauty and elegance of her work is ſtill admired in ſome pieces of tapeſtry that remain in the poſſeſſion of the duke of Sully, out of a great number which have been either loſt or carried into other families.

THE works of the duke of Sully are more durable. Beſides all the other monuments of his liberality, of which we have had occaſion to ſpeak, he has immortaliſed his memory by a great number of fine buildings in ſeveral parts of the kingdom, particularly in his government of Poitou. He would, if he had continued in the adminiſtration till his death, have procured all the roads in that province to have been made eaſy and commodious for travel-

ling. It was he who caused that magnificent bridge and causeway to be built at Châtelleraut, which is still to be seen there.

There was scarce one of his estates, those especially which had castles on them, where he did not leave marks of his magnificence, to which he was chiefly incited by a principle of charity, and a regard to the public good. He built most part of the Hôtel Dieu of Nogent. This city and lordship, which was distinguished by the surname of Nogent Le-Rotrou, was by the prince of Condé's erecting it into a duchy, called D'Enguien; but, when it came into the possession of the duke of Sully, it lost both these names, and was called the earldom of Nogent-le-Bethune. He at first designed to carry on very considerable buildings in the castle of this city, but he met with so many obstacles from the religious of St. Denis, that he was determined to turn all his views upon Villebon. Messieurs D'Estouteville, to whom that house had formerly belonged, had left it built only up to the first story: he raised it and completed it after the model of the Bastile, of which he was governor, but with more beauty. The front presents three sets of chambers covered with slates between the towers. The towers have flat roofs, covered with lead, with pinnacles, and the battlements alternately round and pointed; the spouts are of the same metal with cast cannon, and the inner spouts which receive those of the corners of the house, are likewise of cast metal, eight feet high, terminating in dolphins heads. The grand staircase is extremely large and luminous. At the first story is a large room, with the beams and joints gilt; as likewise the chimney, which is of beautiful workmanship. The apartments are very numerous, and have their chimneys gilt, and the greatest part of their pannels. The park is enclosed with stone walls, and contains a great number of pools and re-

ſervoirs. The gardens, which join the houſe on three ſides, the courts, and court-yards, are all the work of the duke of Sully.

To give employment to the poor, who offered themſelves during a famine, and whom he thought it no real charity to ſupport in idleneſs, he made a pond about ſeven hundred and twenty yards long, and a hundred and twenty broad. This he called Chapel Pond. The earth which was dug out, he threw up into four terraces parallel to the canal, which reach to the New Pond, another piece of water above the Chapel Pond. Between theſe terraces and the canal, were two levels of turf, which the preſent duke of Sully has cut into ſquares, into graſs-plats and bowling-greens. All thoſe who offered were ſet to work indifferently, even to little children, ſome of whom did not carry, at a time, more than half a pound of earth: and for this purpoſe an infinite number of hand-carriages of all ſizes had been provided. To each of theſe poor people was given in the morning a piece of bread; at dinner-time a diſh of ſoop; and at ſupper-time another piece of bread: together with wages in money in proportion to their age and labour. This work, which the duke of Sully never would have undertaken merely for the decoration of his houſe, coſt him fourſcore thouſand livres.

Every body knows that he built the caſtle of Roſny completely, ſurrounded it with dry ditches extremely wide, where, when batteries were placed, the ſhot croſſed each other in a ſurprizing manner; a thing very rare at that time. He raiſed that fine terrace which runs acroſs the ſea to a prodigious extent, and thoſe great gardens filled with groves and grottoes with water-works.

He embelliſhed Sully with gardens, of which the plants are the fineſt in the world; and with a canal, very long and very broad, which is ſupplied with freſh

freſh water by the little river of Sangle, which he turned that way, and which afterwards is loſt in the Loire. He erected a machine to convey the water to all the baſons and fountains, of which the gardens are full. The machine is yet in being; but the water-works have been ſuffered to go to ruin. With regard to the caſtle, he had it covered with ſlates: he wainſcoted, painted, and gilt, almoſt all the apartments, and worked in the walls the galleries which paſs from the little lodges, at the gate, to the main caſtle. The court-yard, and a ſecond court-yard, which was formerly called the Little Park, are likewiſe his work. There are, in this ſecond court, ſeveral eminencies, or enormous heaps of earth, which appear plainly to be the work of men. This expence, which produced no good, and of which the effect is even diſagreeable, might ſurpriſe thoſe who do not know that the duke of Sully had no other way of ſupporting a multitude of poor people who demanded work in a time of ſcarcity. St. Ithier was anciently a little church, almoſt cloſe to the caſtle: he removed it to the middle of a city, where he built, at his own coſt, a very fine church covered with ſlate. I ſhall not mention ſeveral other works for which this city is obliged to him: among others, an hoſpital, which he founded there.

THE principal apartment of this caſtle, is that which he fitted up in memory of Henry the Great, and which is called, for that reaſon, the King's apartment. He determined to leave another monument of his gratitude to this great prince, in the great hall of Sully. This hall, which, next to that of Montargis, is the largeſt in France, has a proſpect of the Loire. Henry IV. is there painted, in a picture of the firſt ſize, upon a very fine ſorrel horſe. This is the moſt perfect, and the moſt like, of all the pictures of that prince. It is hung over the chimney, which is uncommonly large, adorned with carved

carved work, and covered, both on the front and the ſides, with ſquares of painting, containing each an emblem or a device relating either to the king or the duke of Sully. One of theſe pieces has ſomething ſingular: it is in the front, where the ſun is repreſented caſting a weak and pale light, with the moon below it, ſhining with extraordinary brightneſs; and lower yet, the earth, which ſeems obſcured by the great brightneſs of the moon. This is the only emblem that has no motto; and may be therefore ſuppoſed to contain ſomething myſterious.

THE duke of Sully likewiſe repaired and enlarged the caſtle of La-Chapelle D'Angillon, built by mademoiſelle D'Albert: he embelliſhed it with gardens and terraces, and a park about two hundred and thirty acres, ſurrounded with ſtone walls, which, though ſtrongly built, are now almoſt ruined by the negligence of his ſucceſſors. Facing the meadow is a great terrace, remarkable for its height and length, all faced with hewn ſtone, with pilaſters of brick and ſtone from ſpace to ſpace, which contributed at once to the ſtrength and beauty of the work. At the foot of this terrace was a mean church, which the duke of Sully pulled down and rebuilt, with great expence and magnificence, at the foot of the citadel of La-Chapelle, of which he is conſidered not only as the lord, but as the founder.

THE caſtle of Montigny is indebted to him, among other embelliſhments, for a fine avenue of trees; and, behind the houſe, a wall or kind of court, very agreeable, with four rows of elms.

TO conclude, it was he that built, and cut in the rock, the famous caſtle of Montrond, which was long conſidered as impregnable. The way to it was by a winding path, very broad, cut likewiſe in the rock; as were alſo the out-works of the palace, within which there was a well never dry, and ſheltered againſt all violence from without. The prince

of

of Condé, as has been already ſhown, obliged the duke of Sully to give him up Montrond, which, in the times of confuſion, was his principal fortreſs againſt the king, whoſe army was ſtopped by it eighteen months, and at laſt took it only by ſtratagem; after which the fortifications were blown up, and the place deſtroyed.

END OF THE MEMOIRS OF SULLY.

THE

THE TRIAL OF FRANCIS RAVAILLAC,

FOR THE

Murder of King HENRY IV. 1610.

INTERROGATORIES *exhibited to the accused of the murder of the late king, on the 17th of* May, 1610, *at the suit of the attorney-general, by* ACHILLES DE HARLAY, *first president*; NICOLAS POTIER, *president*; JOHN COURTIN *and* PROSPER BAVIN, *counsellors of our lord the king in his court of parliament, commissioners appointed by the said court for that purpose.*

THE prisoner sworn; and asked his name, age, rank, and place of abode?

He said, that his name was Francis Ravaillac, born and dwelling at Angoulême, between thirty-one and thirty-two years of age.

He was asked if he was married?

He answered, No.

Whether he ever had been married?

He answered, No.

How he had spent his youth? and to what he had applied himself?

He

He ſaid, that he had been employed in ſoliciting law-ſuits in this court.

Whether he had been bred up to the practice of the law?

He ſaid, that he had ſolicited law-ſuits for fourteen years; that he lodged at the Rats, oppoſite to the Green pillar, in Harp-ſtreet, at a cobler's; and near the three pair of beads, in Calender-ſtreet.

How long he had been in this city the laſt journey?

He ſaid about three weeks.

Whether he has had any intention to go back again?

He ſaid, Yes.

How far he had gone back?

He ſaid, he had gone beyond the town of d'Eſtampes, at the ſign of the *Ecce Homo*.

He was asked, what made him return?

He ſaid, a deſire to kill the king.

He was asked, what was his motive?

He anſwered, that among other reaſons there was this, that the king had not, as he was able to do, brought back the followers of the pretended reformation to the catholic, apoſtolic, and Roman church.

He was asked, what other reaſons he had?

He anſwered, that he was come to this city to ſpeak to the king, and admoniſh him to bring back thoſe of the pretended reformed religion to the catholic church; and for that purpoſe he had been ſeveral times at the Louvre to meet with his majeſty; that he had been at madame d'Angoulême's, to get ſomebody to introduce him; and likewiſe at the houſe of the cardinal Du-Perron, to whom he never ſpoke, but only to his chaplains, whoſe names he could not tell, but ſhould know them if he ſaw them; that he ſpoke of it to father Daubigny, a jeſuit, in his laſt journey, which was before Chriſtmas; he ſpoke of it to the parſon of Saint Severin, and

and to the father of Saint-Mary-Magdalen, provincial of the feuillants.

It was asked him, where he ſpoke to father Daubigny?

He ſaid, he ſpoke to him in the church of Saint-Antony's-ſtreet, at the concluſion of maſs.

He was asked, at what time he talked to him?

He ſaid, that he ſet out from his own country thirteen days before Chriſtmas; that he was fourteen days coming to this city; that three or four days after his arrival, he went to the houſe of the Jeſuits near Saint-Antony's gate, where the ſaid father Daubigny ſaid maſs; after which, he deſired one of the lay-brothers to procure him the means of ſpeaking to the ſaid Daubigny; which he did; and he told him ſeveral viſions which had preceded the meditations that he had made by the permiſſion of his provincial Francis Mary Magdalen of the feuillants.

He was asked, why he uſed the expreſſion, *My provincial?*

He ſaid, becauſe the ſaid Mary Magdalen had received him as lay-brother at the feuillants.

It was asked, how long he had wore the habit of a feuillant? and why he had quitted it?

He ſaid, that he had worn it about ſix weeks; and they had taken it from him, becauſe he had viſions in his meditations.

On being asked again about it, he ſaid he had deſired it again, but it was refuſed him on account of the ſaid meditations.

Upon this he began to weep, and ſaid, God had given him that habit, and his grief was, that they would not reſtore it to him.

He was asked, if he knew the ſuperior, and his name?

He ſaid, that he did not know him nor his name; but that he had asked for the habit again, only becauſe it being our Lord's pleaſure that he ſhould continue

tinue in the world, from which it was his wiſh to retire, he reſolved to ſerve as a lay-brother.

This he uttered with tears.

He ſaid, that he had a great deal of uneaſineſs, in not having ſtaid with the feuillants in the favour of God.

He was aſked, what viſions he had ſpoke of to father Daubigny?

He ſaid, that he had told him, that while he was a priſoner for debt at Angoulême he had viſions, repreſenting fire, ſulphur, and incenſe; and being releaſed from priſon, the Saturday after Chriſtmas, having at night made his meditation, as was his cuſtom, in bed, with his hands claſped, and his feet croſſed, he felt his face and his mouth covered with ſomething which he could not diſcern, becauſe it was midnight; and being in that ſtate, he felt in himſelf a deſire to ſing the Pſalms of David; he began the pſalm, *Dixit Dominus*, and ſung it thro'; and afterwards, *Miſerere*, and *De profundis*, at full length; and that it ſeemed to him, that he had a trumpet in his mouth, which made a ſound as loud as that which is made in war.

The next day in the morning, as ſoon as he got out of bed, having made his meditation on his knees, and recollected in God, as his manner was, he ſat down in a low chair before the hearth, and having combed his head, it being not yet light, he perceived one of the ſticks yet on fire; and having finiſhed dreſſing himſelf, he found part of a bundle of twigs, which he put to the ſtick that had kept fire, and kneeling down upon the ground, ſet himſelf to blow it, when immediately, on both ſides of his face, both to the right and to the left, he ſaw, by the glimmering of the fire which was produced by his breath, hoſts like thoſe which are uſed at the communion of catholics in the church of God; and below his face, at the right ſide of his mouth, he ſaw a roll of the ſame ſize with that which the prieſt elevates

elevates at the celebration of divine ſervice. Of this revelation he gave an account to father Daubigny, who, fearing that his head was diſordered, told him, that he was not to think of all this, but to tell his beads, and pray to God: but that he was determined in his own mind to addreſs himſelf to ſome great man to ſpeak to the king.

It was enquired, if he had asked Daubigny whether, if he ſhould have viſions that incited him to kill the king, he ought to confeſs them?

He anſwered, that he had ſaid nothing to him but what he had already told, except that his purpoſe was to ſpeak to the king to drive out all the followers of the pretended reformed religion, and convert them to the Roman catholic church.

It was asked, what Daubigny ſaid to this?

He ſaid, that he ſhould put all theſe things out of his head, ſay his prayers, and tell his beads.

It was asked, whether he had no other converſation with him? and whether he never ſaw him but that time?

He anſwered, No.

Why did he chuſe to addreſs himſelf to Daubigny rather than to any other?

He anſwered, that it was becauſe, when he was turned out of the feuillants, he had a mind to become a jeſuit, or to entreat him to ſpeak to his provincial to replace him among the feuillants; but that, not having found him the firſt time, one of the lay-brethren told him, that they never receive in their houſe thoſe who had been in another order.

He ſaid farther, that, not having been able to ſpeak to the king, he went back to the jeſuits to ſpeak a ſecondtime to the ſaid Daubigny, and ſpoke to him as he has already ſaid, and ſhewed him a little knife on which there was a heart and a croſs, telling him, that the heart of the king ſhould be diſpoſed to make war againſt the huguenots.

He

He was asked, what hindered him from speaking to the king?

He said, that it was the grand provost who had given him the torture with the gun while he was kept prisoner at the Hôtel de Retz.

He was asked to whom he had applied himself that he might speak with the king;

He said, to the archers, and they carried him to speak to the provost, who told him that the king was sick.

He was asked, when he was at the Louvre?

He said, that it was after Christmas, and some two or three days afterwards he met his majesty near St. Innocent's in his coach, and, desiring to speak to him, he cried out in these words: *Sire, I speak to you in the name of our Lord Jesus, and of the Holy Virgin*; but the king put him back with a little stick, and would not hear him. He then considered of retiring into his own country, and went away. And, being at Angoulême, he went to look for friar Gilles there, who had been formerly visitor of the franciscan friars in Paris, to whom he confessed his visions and meditations, telling him, that he saw it to be the will of our Lord to bring back the followers of the pretended reformation to the catholic church: that the visitor told him he need not doubt of it. A few days afterwards, and the first Sunday in Lent, he went to mass at the monastery of the franciscan friars in Angoulême, where he reconciled himself to God, made his confession to a friar of the order, whose name he does not know, and in his confession told the voluntary murder.

He was desired to explain what he meant by the word *voluntary?*

He said, his meaning was, that he returned into this city with an intention to murder the king, which, nevertheless, he did not tell his confessor, who did not desire the meaning of those words.

Upon being further questioned, he said, that he then

then loſt that intention, but that, when he returned to this city, he reſumed his intention.

He was asked, when he came to the city?

He ſaid, that he travelled on foot, and arrived eight days after his ſetting out.

He was asked, how he had employed himſelf during his ſtay in Paris?

He ſaid, that he lodged at the Three Half Moons, in the ſuburbs St. James; and afterwards, that he might be near the Louvre, he went to lodge at the Three Pigeons, in the ſuburb St. Honore; from thence he went to take a lodging at an inn, near the *quinze vingts*, but, there being too many gueſts there, he was refuſed; upon which he took up a knife that lay upon a table, not upon account of his being refuſed a lodging, but becauſe it ſeemed to him a very fit one for the execution of his deſign, and he kept it for ſome days, or three weeks, in a bag in his pocket.

He farther ſaid, that, having deſiſted from his intention, he ſet out upon his journey home, and went as far as Eſtampes; that, as he was walking, he broke the point of the knife againſt a cart near the garden of Chanteloup, and, coming oppoſite to the *Ecce Homo*, of the ſuburb of Eſtampes, he again took it into his head to kill the king, and, no longer reſiſting the temptation as he had done formerly, he returned to Paris with that reſolution, becauſe the king did not convert the followers of the pretended reformation, and becauſe he had heard it reported, that the king intended to make war upon the pope, and transfer the ſeat of the holy ſee to Paris.

He was then asked, where he lodged? and who procured him lodgings in this city?

He ſaid, that he ſought for an opportunity to kill the king; and that, for this purpoſe, he ſharpened, with a ſtone, the point of the knife which had been broke, and waited till the queen was crowned, and came back to the city, ſuppoſing that there would

not

not be ſo much confuſion in France, if he killed the king after the coronation, as if he had done it before.

He was told, that, ſince he deferred killing the king through a hope that there would be fewer commotions after the coronation, the ſaid coronation could not prevent the troubles which the king's death muſt neceſſarily bring along with it.

He ſaid, that he ſubmitted to the will of God.

He was asked, where he went to meet the king?

He ſaid, that he went to the Louvre, where he had been ſeveral times ſince he had reſolved upon killing him; that he went there laſt Wedneſday, and intended to kill him between the two gates, as he was going into his coach; that he followed him as far as St. Innocent's, near the place where he happened to meet him before, when he would not ſpeak to him; and obſerving that the coach was ſtopt by two carts, and that his majeſty turned his face and leaned towards that ſide where monſieur d'Epernon ſat, he ſtruck him twice in the ſide with his knife, paſſing his arm above the coach-wheel.

He was asked, what was his own opinion of the action he had committed?

He ſaid, that he thought he had committed a great fault, for which he asked pardon of God, of the queen, the dauphin, the whole court, and of every one who was injured by it.

We ſhewed him the knife, which lay before us: it was double edged at the point, with the handle made of a ſtag's horn. He acknowledged it to be the ſame with which he had ſtabbed the king, and that it was immediately taken from him by a gentleman on horſeback.

He was told, that he could have no reaſon for committing ſo wicked and traiterous an act, and that he had certainly been incited to it by ſome other perſon?

He ſaid, that no perſon whatever had incited him to

to do it, but the common discourse among the soldiers, who said, that if the king, who would not tell his design to any one, intended to make war upon the Holy Father, that they would not assist him, although they were to die for it; that for this cause he yielded to the temptation which prompted him to kill the king, because he made war against God, in as much as the pope is God, and God the pope.

He was asked, what time it was that he heard this discourse amongst the soldiers?

He said, that it was after he went to lodge at the Three Half Moons.

It was objected to him, that he was guilty of a falshood in declaring that to be the cause of his committing the parricide, because he had said before, that, having laid aside his design of killing the king, he set out on his journey to his own country; and that, when he came to Estampes, he resumed that design, upon the discourse of the soldiers.

He answered, that he had spoke to them before, notwithstanding which he had altered his intention; but, when he came to Estampes, he resumed it, upon remembering what the soldiers had said to him.

He desired us to shew him a paper which he had about him at the time he was seized, whereon was painted the arms of France, with a lion on each side; one holding a key, the other a sword. We shewed this paper to him, and he acknowledged it to be the same which he had brought with him from Angoulême, with an intention to kill the king.

He was asked, whether, when he was at the house of a man whose name was Beliard, he had heard the said Beliard say, that the pope's nuncio had told the king, in the name of his holiness, that, if he made war, he would excommunicate him.

He said, Yes; and also that his majesty had answered, that it was his predecessors who had placed the popes upon the throne; and that, if the Holy Father should excommunicate him, he would dis-

possess

poſſeſs him of it; whereupon he reſolved to kill the king, and with that intention he wrote theſe two lines over the lions:

Ne ſouffre pas qu'on en ta preſence
Au nom de Dieu aucunne irreverence.

"Do not ſuffer the name of God to be prophaned in thy preſence."

He was aſked, whether the knife, when he took it off the table, had the ſame handle that it has now?

He ſaid, No: that the handle was of whalebone, which, being broke, he gave the knife to his landlord's brother, whoſe name was John Barbier, a turner by trade, living in the ſuburbs of St. James, and deſired him to put a handle of horn upon it; but he did not tell him why he preferred that to any other.

He was asked, if this Beliard was one of the pretended reformed religion?

He ſaid, No; that he was a catholic: nevertheleſs he held that diſcourſe with him which put it into his head to kill the king.

He was told, that he ought not to have taken ſo wicked and abominable a reſolution upon the diſcourſe of one man only.

He ſaid, he had taken a reſolution to kill the king, not only upon what he had heard this man ſay, but alſo upon the diſcourſe of the ſoldiers at Paris, and that of the ſieur de St. Gorges, among others, who ſaid, that, if the king would make war upon the Holy Father, he would obey him, being thereto obliged; and that, if the king did wrong, he only was to anſwer for it.

We ſhewed him a heart of coſt-mary root, which he acknowledged to have been taken from him; and he ſaid, it had been given him by monſieur Guillebaut, canon of Angoulême, to cure him of a fever, ſaying, that there was within it a little bit of wood

of the real Holy Croſs, conſecrated by the capuchin friars, which had that virtue; and for that purpoſe he had ſent Mary Moſeau, his landlady, to the capuchins for it, and ever ſince he had wore it about his neck.

We ordered it to be opened in his preſence; but there was no wood to be found in the inſide,

Upon which he ſaid, that it was not him who was deceived, but the perſon who gave it him.

We ſhewed him a pair of beads, which, he ſaid, he had bought in St. James's-ſtreet ſeven or eight days ago; that he had ſaid his prayers with them, and wore them ever ſince conſtantly.

He was aſked, what perſons he kept company with after he had reſumed his intention to kill the king?

He ſaid, he kept company with none but the friars of his own country, who are at the convent of the dominican friars, whither he uſed to go to hear maſs and veſpers.

He was asked, what diſcourſe he had with them? and if he had ſpoke to them of his viſions?

He ſaid, that he had told them what he had told to others.

He was asked, if he was acquainted with a man whoſe name was Colletet? and what diſcourſe they had together?

He ſaid, that he knew him only by lodging in the ſame room with him; that they lay together, but that he had not ſpoke to him of his deſign.

He was asked, if he had any diſcourſe with any other friars?

He ſaid, not in this laſt journey.

If he had any diſcourſe with a franciſcan friar of Angoulême?

He ſaid, Yes: but that he had not ſpoke to him of his enterpriſe, and of his imaginations.

He was told, that he did not ſay the truth; for that he had ſpoke to him of his imaginations, asking

his opinion whether he, who had such imaginations, ought to declare them to his confessor?

To this he answered, that he had not spoke to a franciscan of his own country, but to another whom he met near Bourg de La-Royire, with whom he joined company; and, because he had no acquaintance in this city, he gave him part of his own lodgings, and carried letters from his friends to procure him admission into the convent, that he also carried his bundle for him; and that the name of this friar was Le-Febure.

It was observed to him, that, during the reading of his examination, when the wounds he had given the king were mentioned, he had asked pardon of God for that crime, but that the true means to obtain it, was to acknowledge the truth; that his pretence for committing that action was so slight, that he must certainly have been prompted to it by some one who was concerned in the success of that miserable stroke, of which we feel the effects.

He said, that, since he has been under confinement, he had been urged by several persons to make his confession, and even by the archbishop of Aix; but that he had been prompted by no person whatever, but by his own desires; and that, however he might be tormented, he should never say any thing else; that, if torments could have forced him to confess, he had suffered sufficiently by the torture which a huguenot of his own private authority gave him, when he kept him prisoner at the Hôtel de Retz, by which he had the bone of his thumb broke.

He was told, that he had been chose to commit this action as a proper instrument of mischief; he whose whole life had been wicked, and who had begun with using a father and a mother ill, and reducing them to beggary.

He said, that it would not be found so; and that his father and mother, who were still living, would

witneſs the contrary, as well as the people where he dwelt; that he had been indeed accuſed and condemned for it, but it was by falſe witneſſes; for he was innocent.

He was asked, when he was at Bruſſels?

He ſaid, that he never was out of the kingdom; and that he did not know where Bruſſels is.

The examination being read to the ſaid Ravaillac, he perſiſted in his anſwers, and ſigned his name

RAVAILLAC.

The examination taken next morning, at the palace, by us the commiſſioners, the firſt preſident being ſick.

THE priſoner being ſent for as before, and his oath taken,

He was asked, what was his rank and condition? and if he had a father or mother alive?

He ſaid, that he is a practitioner of the law, and that, before his confinement, he employed himſelf in inſtructing youth; and that his father is likewiſe a practitioner of the law, and that his mother is ſeparated from his father.

We having again ordered his examination to be read to him, he perſiſted in his anſwers, without adding or diminiſhing any thing, except only that he omitted ſaying, as he did now, that he had been carried to the commiſſion of that crime, becauſe the king would not permit juſtice to be done upon the huguenots, for the attempt they made laſt Chriſtmas to murder all the catholics, for which attempt many of the huguenots had been taken priſoners, and brought into this city; yet he had been told, by ſeveral perſons, were not puniſhed.

He was told, that it was falſe; and that although he had heard it, he ſhould not have believed it, nor have been induced to commit a deed ſo wicked and abominable.

He ſaid, that this was one of his circumſtances which helped to ſtrengthen the temptation.

He

He was told, that it was the advice and inſtruction of others which ſtrengthened it.

He ſaid, that no one was engaged in the deſign but himſelf.

He was asked, if he lived in the ſame country with his father and mother?

He ſaid, that he lived with his father and mother, but that his father neither loved him nor his mother.

He was asked, how he maintained himſelf?

He ſaid that he had eighty ſcholars, and that, with what he gained from them, he ſupported himſelf in the journeys he had made to this city?

He was asked, if his father and mother obſerved his conduct?

He ſaid, that his father had not lived with them theſe ſix years; that he hated him; and that he had lived with his mother only, his ſiſters having likewiſe left her.

He was asked, what means he had of living?

He ſaid, that his father and mother lived upon alms, and he himſelf upon what he gained from his ſcholars, one of whom gave him bacon, another fleſh, another corn, wine, &c. and by what his friends furniſhed him with.

He was asked, who were his friends?

He ſaid, that they were the fathers and mothers of his ſcholars.

He was asked, why he did not ſtay in his own country, ſince he could get a livelyhood there?

He ſaid, that he thought he ſhould prefer the honour of God to all things.

He was told, that it was not for the honour of God to kill his king, but that it was an act of the devil.

He ſaid, that it was a wicked temptation, which did not proceed from God, but was a puniſhment to him for his ſins.

He was asked, if he was not filled with horror at the commiſſion of an act ſo abominable, and of ſo fatal conſequence to all France?

He said, that he was sorry for having committed it, but that since it was done, he implored God to give him grace, that he might be able to continue till death in good faith, lively hope, and perfect charity, and that he hoped God was more merciful, and his will to save him more powerful, than the act which he had committed was to damn him.

He was told, that he could not be in the grace of God, after having committed so wicked an action.

He said, that he hoped our all-powerful Lord would not make him suffer for it.

He was told, that he ought not to hope for the mercy of God, unless he acknowledged the truth, and declared who the persons were who had incited and persuaded him to so wicked a deed.

He said, that his only reason for committing it was, what he had declared before at his examination.

He was asked, if he had imparted his intention to any one.

He said, that he had not to any person whatever.

He was told, that he was too mean and inconsiderable a person to have conceived such a design, and that he must have been advised and supported by others.

He said, that no person advised him.

He was told, that he was so much the more wicked, if he undertook such an enterprize without being advised to it; therefore he would do well to declare who were his advisers.

To this he answered, that the reason why he did not declare this pernicious intention to priests, and men who have the care of souls, was, that he was well assured if he had disclosed to them his design of killing the king, it was their duty to seize his person, and put him into the hands of justice; since whenever the public is concerned, priests are obliged to reveal all confessions; for this reason therefore he would not open himself to any person, through a

fear

fear that he might be punished with death, as well for his intention of killing the king, as if he had really done it, for which he asked pardon of God.

He was told, that the church commands, that all evil thoughts should be revealed in confession, and to neglect it is a deadly sin.

He said, that he acknowledged this.

He was told, that he had mentioned it.

He said, he had not.

He was asked, if he had spoken of it to a franciscan friar?

He said, No.

He was told, that he did not speak the truth, for that he had mentioned it to a franciscan friar, asking him, whether, if a man had strange visions, such as to kill the king, he ought to declare them in his confession?

He said, that it was true he had consulted a friar upon this head, bnt did not tell him that he would do it.

He was asked, who it was that he consulted?

He said, a young franciscan friar, named Le-Febure, to whom he put this question, Wetner if a man was assaulted with a temptation, such as to kill a king, and should confess it to the penitentiary, he should be under a necessity of revealing it? but being interrupted by another friar, he could not know the friar's opinion concerning the case that he put to him.

He was told, that he did not say the truth, and that the franciscan did make him an answer; and he was asked, if he would believe the franciscan if he owned it?

He said, that he would not believe him; but that it was his opinion, that if the friar had given him an answer, it was, that he ought to reveal his imaginations; but he was interrupted, and therefore would not give him an answer; neither did he,

the accuſed, propoſe the queſtion to him, as if he was the man who had the temptation, but in general, as if it ſhould happen to any man.

He was told, that he did not acknowledge the truth, and that he did declare his intentions to him.

He ſaid, that it was very unlikely that he ſhould do ſo; that he had applied, as well to lay-men as to others, even to an equerry belonging to queen Margaret, whoſe name was De-Ferrare; he declared his viſions to him, and intreated him to procure him an opportunity to ſpeak to the king; that the equerry anſwered, he muſt firſt have proofs that he was a good man, and one who was fit to ſpeak to the king: to which he, the accuſed, made anſwer, that he thought he was good enough to ſpeak to the king. He added, that probably if he had ſpoke to his majeſty, he would have loſt his temptation. That he afterwards applied to the ſecretary of madame de Angoulême, who told him that the king was ſick; yet he went again to the houſe of the cardinal Du-Perron, where he had the anſwer he formerly repeated, That he would do better to return to his own houſe.

He was told, that it was good counſel, and he ought to have followed it.

He ſaid, that it was true, but he was ſo weakened by his ſins that he had no power over himſelf; and that the devil made him fall into this temptation.

He was told, that the devil made uſe of others to tempt him.

He ſaid, that no man had ever ſpoke to him on the ſubject.

He was told, that he could not hope for the grace of God, unleſs he diſcharged his conſcience.

He ſaid, that he had ſome fears, but he alſo had great hopes of the grace of God.

He was told, that he could not expect it but by declaring the truth.

He ſaid, that if he had been employed by any one

in

in France, or by a foreigner, and ſhould be ſo abandoned by God as to die without declaring it; he ſhould not believe that he would be ſaved, or that there would be any paradiſe for him, becauſe *abiſſus abiſſunt*, &c. as he had learned of the preachers of our Lord; that one abyſs of ſins leads into others; that it was to double his crime, that the king, more eſpecially the queen, the whole houſe of France, the court, the nobility, and all the people, ſhould, on his account, be induced to offend God, while their minds remained in a perpetual inquietude, ſuſpecting unjuſtly, ſometimes one, ſometimes another, of their ſubjects; none of whom, he believed, were ſo imprudent, as to entertain a thought of being diſloyal to their princes.

He was told, that if that was his opinion, he ought the more readily to declare who had perſuaded him to the crime.

He ſaid, that no Frenchman, foreigner, or any other, had ever adviſed, perſuaded, or ſpoke to him on this ſubject; neither had he, the accuſed, ever mentioned it to any one: he was not ſo wicked as to have committed that deed for any other cauſe that what he had declared to us, namely, that he believed the king intended to make war upon the pope.

He was told, that this was a falſe pretence.

He ſaid, that he was very ſorry for what he had done, and that he earneſtly begged of every one to lay aſide their ſuſpicions of his having been ſet on to murder the king, and to believe that he only was concerned in that deed; and that they would not look with an evil eye, or bear any one ill-will, ſince he alone was guilty.

He was asked, if he had ever been in ſervice?

He ſaid, that he had ſerved the late monſieur Roſieres, a counſellor of Angoulême; and that he had lived likewiſe with ſome attorneys, whoare now dead.

He was asked, if he had ever ſerved any nobleman, as a page, footman, or valet de chambre?

He ſaid, that he had not; but when he lived with counſellor Roſieres, as his clerk, he likewiſe ſerved him as a valet de chambre.

He was asked, if he had ſeen the coronation laſt Tueſday, and if he had followed the king?

He ſaid, he had not.

He was aſked, if he had been on the road to Saint-Denis?

He ſaid, not this laſt journey, but at Chriſtmas laſt, when he went to beg alms of the bakers.

He was aſked, if he had been there laſt week?

He ſaid, he had not gone farther than Saint-Jean-en-Greve, and le Pont Notre-Dame.

He was aſked, if he had any magical characters about him? and who had given them to him?

He ſaid, he ſhould have thought it a wicked thing to have them.

His examination being read to him, he perſiſted in his anſwers, and ſigned his name,

RAVAILLAC.

Underneath which he wrote theſe lines:

Que toujours en mon cœur
Jeſus ſoit le vainqueur.

"In my heart let Jeſus be always conqueror."

Father James Daubigny, prieſt of the college of jeſuits, was this day ſent for into court by us the commiſſioners, in the preſence of Ravaillac; both of them acknowledged the oaths they had taken.

The ſaid Ravaillac acknowledged, that the ſaid father Daubigny was the perſon whom he had heard ſay maſs ſome time after laſt Chriſtmas, in their church in Saint Antony's ſtreet; that having been told he was the friend of father Mary Magdalen the feuillant, he went to ſeek him, to intreat him to procure

procure his admiſſion into that order; that after maſs was over, he ſpoke to him by means of a lay brother, and declared to him, that he had great viſions and imaginations, importing, that the king ought to reduce the followers of the pretended reformation; and that he ſhewed the ſaid Daubigny a little knife, whereon was a heart and a croſs; believing, that the king ought to bring back the followers of the pretended reformation to the Catholic and Roman church.

The ſaid Daubigny replied, that all this was falſe, and that he had never ſeen the ſaid Ravaillac.

The ſaid Ravaillac anſwered, by the ſame token you gave me a penny, which you asked of one that was near you.

To this the ſaid Daubigny anſwered, that the priſoner was a very bad man: and after having committed ſo wicked an action, he had ſins enough to anſwer for, without being the cauſe of an hundred thouſand others, which might be committed.

The priſoner was then told, that if he had any objections to make to father Daubigny, he muſt make them immediately.

He ſaid that he had none; that he looked upon the ſaid father Daubigny to be an honeſt man, a good religious, and that he would believe him.

In like manner, the ſaid Daubigny being told of the ordinance, that he muſt make his objections to the priſoner immediately, for they would not afterwards be received.

He ſaid, that he had nothing elſe to ſay, but that the priſoner was a very wicked man, and had uttered ſeveral falſhoods.

The examination of the ſaid Daubigny being read in the preſence of the ſaid Ravaillac, he, the ſaid Daubigny, perſiſted in his anſwers, and declared that they were true.

But the ſaid Ravaillac declared, that he had ſpoke to the ſaid Daubigny; that he went to look for him when he came out of the Louvre, and told him that he had temptations; and that when he was in priſon making his meditations, by permiſſion of father Mary Magdalen, his hands and feet had ſent forth a ſtench of ſulphur and fire; which were proofs of the exiſtence of a purgatory, contrary to the erroneous opinion of heretics; that he had viſions of the ſacred hoſts on each ſide of his face, having before ſung the pſalms of David; and, in a word, that he had related all thoſe circumſtances to him which he had declared to us the day before in his examination: and that the ſaid Daubigny ſaid to him, in anſwer, that he, the ſaid Ravaillac, ought to apply to ſome great men to admoniſh the king: however, ſince he had not done it, it was more proper for him to pray to God, he being of opinion, that thoſe viſions he ſpoke of were merely imaginary, and the effects of a diſordered brain, as might be perceived by his looks; that he ought to eat good ſoop, go to his own country, tell his beads, and pray to God.

To this the ſaid Daubigny replied, that theſe were all dreams and lies.

We have cauſed the queſtions that were put to the ſaid Ravaillac concerning the ſaid Daubigny, with his anſwers, to be read to him in the preſence of Daubigny, the ſaid Ravaillac perſiſted in his anſwers, and declared that they were true.

The ſaid Daubigny replied, that all which the ſaid Ravaillac had depoſed againſt him was falſe, as he had before declared to us.

Upon this, Ravaillac, being farther queſtioned, replied, that he had never ſeen the ſaid Daubigny but that one time.

Their examination being read to them, they perſiſted in their anſwers, and ſigned their names.

The

The examination taken on the 19th of the said month of May, in the morning, at the palace, by us the commissioners.

THE said Ravaillac being brought into court, and his oath taken, he was required to declare, who those persons were that had prompted him to so wicked an undertaking.

He said, that all which now remained for him to declare was, his intention and earnest desire to free himself from the load of his sins; that the whole nation was, upon his account, led to believe that he had been bribed by the enemies of France to kill the king, or by foreign kings and princes, who were desirous of aggrandising themselves, as was too common among the kings, and great potentates of the earth, who do not consider whether their motive for making war is agreeable to the will of God; or else through a covetous desire of appropriating unjustly to themselves the territories of other princes; but that the truth was, he, the prisoner, had not been incited to that action by any person whatever; for if he could have been so wicked as to have committed it for money, for the interest of foreigners, he would have acknowledged it in the presence of God, before whom he now maintained the truth: that he therefore intreated the queen, the court, and the whole nation, to believe him, and not to charge his soul with the crime they commit, in supposing that he was prompted to that parricide by any other; for that this sin would fall heavy on him the prisoner, for being the cause of the uncertainty they were in which gave rise to their suspicions: and he therefore emplored them to lay those suspicions aside, since no one but himself was able to judge of the fact, and it was such as he had confessed.

It was remonstrated to him, that, since he had neither been injured in his person or goods by any command or ordinance of the king's, it was not probable

probable he would make an attempt upon his sacred person, whom he knew to be God's anointed, unless he had been persuaded to it by some other persons, and had received money from them; he being a poor man, in want of the necessaries of life, and the son of parents who lived upon alms.

He said, that it is sufficiently proved to the court through the course of his examination, if he had, through the force of money, or by the persuasions of persons who were ambitious of the scepter of France, been prevailed upon to murder the king, he would not have come three times expressly from Angoulême to Paris, which was an hundred leagues distant from each other, to admonish the king to bring back the followers of the pretended reformation to the catholic, apostolic, and roman church, as being persons who acted contrary to the will of God and his church; for a man who could be so wicked as to suffer himself to be corrupted through avarice, to assassinate his prince, would not have come three several times to admonish him as he had done; and that, since he had committed this parricide, the sieur de La-Force, captain of the guards, has acknowledged that he, the prisoner, had been at the Louvre, and earnestly entreated him to procure the means of speaking to the king; and that the said sieur de La-Force told him he was a furious papist, asking him if he knew monsieur D'Epernon; to which he, the prisoner, replied, that he did know monsieur D'Epernon, and that he himself was not a furious papist; but that, when he had taken the habit in the monastery of St. Bernard, father Francis de St. Peter was appointed to be his spiritual father; and, since he was a true roman, and apostolic catholic, he was desirous of living and dying such: and he intreated the said sieur de La-force to bring him to the speech of the king; for he durst not declare to him the temptation he had so long to kill the king; all he wanted was to tell it to his majesty,

jeſty, to the end that he might no longer be troubled with his bad intention.

He was aſked, whether, when he took thoſe journeys to adviſe the king to make war upon the followers of the pretended reformation, he deſigned, in caſe his majeſty had not complied with his deſires, to have committed the wicked act he had done?

He ſaid, he did not intend it in that caſe; for he ſhould have laid aſide his deſign, and have thought it was better to make him that remonſtrance than to kill him.

It was objected to him, that he had not changed his wicked intention, ſince, after his laſt journey from Angoulême, in Eaſter, he had not ſought for an opportunity to ſpeak to the king, which was a proof that he left Angoulême with a reſolution to do what he had done.

He ſaid it was true.

He was aſked, if, from Eaſter-day to that on which he left Angoulême, he had received the holy communion.

He ſaid, he had not; and that he received it the firſt Sunday in Lent; but that he had, nevertheleſs, cauſed the holy ſacrifice of the maſs to be celebrated in St. Paul's church at Angoulême, which was his pariſh church, as acknowledging himſelf unworthy of the moſt holy and auguſt ſacrament, full of myſtery and incomprehenſible virtue, becauſe he was troubled with the temptation which prompted him to kill the king, and would not in ſuch a ſtate approach the precious body of his God.

It was objected to him, that, ſince he perceived he was not worthy of that myſtery which he called incomprehenſible, he could not aſſiſt with any devotion at that holy ſacrifice celebrated by the prieſt, of which all chriſtians participate, receiving ſpiritually that which he who conſecrates receives actually.

To this he was ſilent. He continued ſome time

penſive

penſive and in thought, and then ſaid, that he did not know well what to anſwer to their remonſtrance; afterwards he ſaid, that he remembered that it was his great affection for the moſt holy ſacrament of the altar, which induced him to have it celebrated; and that he hoped he ſhould participate of the communion by means of his mother, who was going to receive her God in that ſacrifice; becauſe he was always of opinion, that ſhe was more pious, and had more love for her God than he had. Saying this he ſhed many tears.

He was told, that he could have no reverence for, nor any faith in the holy communion and ſacrifice of the maſs, ſince he had, for a long time, been under the influence of the devil, and been accuſtomed to invoke demons, whom he cauſed to appear to him, when he lodged in this city, about four years ago.

He ſaid that he never had invoked demons.

He was aſked if he knew a man named Dubois, born in Limoges? and whether they lodged together in this city, and lay in the ſame chamber?

He ſaid he did know him; that they lodged together at the ſign of the Rats, oppoſite the Green Pillar in Harp-ſtreet.

He was aſked, if he would believe what the ſaid Dubois ſhould ſay?

He ſaid, Yes, he would believe him.

He was aſked, whether, as he lay in bed with the ſaid Dubois, he did not uſe ſome magical incantation invoking the demons? and in what manner?

He ſaid, that this was ſo far from being true, that he did not even lie in the ſame chamber with the ſaid Dubois, but in a garret over the room where he, the ſaid Dubois, lay: that about midnight, the ſaid Dubois, repeating *Credo in Deum*, earneſtly entreated him, ſeveral times, to come down to him; ſaying, Ravaillac, my friend, come down; and crying aloud, My God, have mercy upon me: that thereupon he, the priſoner, would have gone down

to

to him to know why he cried out for help in such a manner, but he was hindered by some persons in the room with him, who were terrified with the cries of the said Dubois: but that he the prisoner going down to Dubois, some time afterwards, he told him, that he had seen a black dog of a monstrous size, and very terrible, which came and laid its two fore-paws upon the bed; and that the terror this vision threw him into made him utter those cries, and entreat that he, the prisoner, would come into his room, and stay with him; upon which he the prisoner advised the said Dubois to have recourse to the celebration of the holy sacrifice of the altar, in order to get rid of his horrible visions, and to cause mass to be said the next morning; and that they went together accordingly the next morning to the convent of the franciscan friars, and caused the holy mass to be said, to draw down the grace of God upon them, and to preserve them from the incursions of the devils, the common enemies of mankind.

It was objected to him, that it was not at all probable that the said Dubois should have called to him, who lay so high; or that he should have heard his voice.

He answered, that nothing was more likely, it being one of the properties of the voice to ascend; but that, since the court would not believe him, the truth of what he said would be attested by those persons who were in the room where he lay, and who hindered him from going to the said Dubois; that they were his landlady, Mary Moiseau, and a cousin of hers, named John Le-blond, who came into his room on account of the great noise they had heard, and for which he had quitted the room of the said Dubois, where he had lain before.

He was told, that he had no desire to get rid of his temptation, and therefore would not receive the communion on Easter-day, lest it should have the power to divert him from his purpose.

He said that his reason for not receiving the communion

munion was, that he had on Eaſter-day, taken a reſolution to kill the king, and upon that account he would not really, and in fact, receive the precious body of our Lord; but had a deſire to hear the holy maſs before he ſet out, believing that the ſacrament, which his mother received that day, would be ſufficient both for her and him, as he then begged of God that it might, as he did now, and would to his death implore him, that he might be made partaker of all the holy communions, taken by the religious of both ſexes, by good men ſeculars, and others in the catholic, apoſtolic, and roman church, receiving in the faith of our holy mother the church, the precious body of our Redeemer; and that, being thus received by them, he might be made partaker of it, as believing himſelf a member of one only Jeſus Chriſt.

He was told, that, having reſolved upon ſo wicked an act, he was in the ſtate of mortal ſin, and in danger of damnation, and could not partake of the grace of God, and the communion of good chriſtians, while he continued to have this wicked intention; and that he ought to have altered it, if he hoped to be in the grace of God as a good catholic and chriſtian, as he would be thought to be.

He ſaid that he did not, in the leaſt, doubt but that he was prompted to it by the emotions of his own mind, againſt the will of God, the author of all truth, contrary to the devil, who is the father of lies: but that now, through the remonſtrance of the court, he acknowledged that he neither could not or would not reſiſt that temptation, it being out of the power of men to hinder him from committing that wicked action; that he now declared the whole truth, without ſuppreſſing or concealing any thing; therefore he hoped that God, who was all good and merciful, would grant him pardon and remiſſion of his ſins, he being more powerful to ſave him, provided he made confeſſion and received abſolution, than men were to hurt him; and that he

he beſeeched the Holy Virgin Mary, Monſieur St. Peter, Monſieur St. Francis, (here he wept) Monſieur St. Bernard, and all the celeſtial court of Paradiſe, to be his advocates and interceſſors with the moſt ſacred majeſty, to the end that he might interpoſe his croſs between his ſoul and hell; and by that he hoped to be made a partaker of the merits of our Saviour Chriſt's paſſion, moſt humbly beſeeching him that he would give him grace to continue aſſociated with the merits of all thoſe treaſures he gave to the apoſtolic power on earth, when he ſaid, *Thou art Peter*, &c.

His examination being read to him, he perſiſted in his anſwers, and ſigned his name

RAVAILLAC.

On the 27th of May, 1610, in the Morning at the Palace.

The Confrontation of the Witneſſes before us, ACHILLES DE HARLAY, *Knight, firſt Preſident*; NICHOLAS POTIER, *Preſident*; PROSPER BAVIN *and* JOHN COURTIN, *Counſellors*, &c.

PAUL Noſter, exempt of the guards, was confronted with the priſoner; both of them acknowledged the oath they had taken.

The accuſed ſaid, that the witneſs was the perſon who took him priſoner, and the witneſs, that the accuſed was the priſoner whom he took.

The priſoner was then told, that if he had any objections to make againſt the witneſs, he muſt make them immediately, according to the ordinance of the realm.

He ſaid, that he had none.

The depoſition of the witneſs being read to him, he perſiſted in it; and the priſoner acknowledging that it was true, they both ſigned it.

The priſoner was then confronted with James de Pluviers, Eſq; of St. Michael.

The oath idem, &c.

The

The prisoner was then confronted with Jerome de La-Robye, equerry to the king.

The oath idem, &c.

The prisoner was confronted with Gamaliel Edovart, one of the king's footmen.

The oath idem, &c.

The prisoner said, that he knew him to be one of the king's footmen, but that he did not know if he was the person who seized him after he committed the act; and, being put in mind of the ordinance, he said he had no objection to make to him.

The prisoner was then confronted with Peter Dubois.

The oath idem, &c.

The prisoner acknowledged, that what he said was true; but that it was by his advice that the witness had been to hear mass at the convent of the franciscan friars, at which he likewise was present

They both signed their names.

May 27th, 1610, *the Court sat in the Afternoon in the Chamber de* LA-BEUVETTE.

WE the presidents, and several of the counsellors being present, the prisoner, Francis Ravaillac, was brought into court, who having been accused and convicted of parricide committed of the late king, he was ordered to kneel, and the clerk of the court pronounced the sentence of death given against him; as likewise that he should be put to the torture to force him to declare his accomplices.

His oath being taken, he was exhorted to redeem himself from the torments preparing for him, by acknowleging the truth, and declaring who those persons were that had persuaded, prompted, and abetted him, in that most wicked action, and to whom he had discloſed his intention of committing it.

He

He said, by the salvation I hope for, no one but myself was concerned in this action.

He was then ordered to be put to the torture of the brodequin *, and the first wedge being drove, he cried out, "God have mercy upon my soul, "and pardon the crime I have committed; I never "discloſed my intentions to any one." This he repeated as he had done in his interrogation.

When the second wedge was drove, he said with loud cries and shrieks, "I am a sinner, I know "no more than I have declared, by the oath I have "taken, and by the truth which I owe to God and "the court: all I have said was to the little fran- "ciscan, which I have already declared: I never "mentioned my design in confession or any other "way: I never spoke of it to the visitor of Angou- "lême, nor revealed it in confession in this city. "I beseech the court not to drive my soul to "despair."

The executioner continuing to drive the second wedge, he cried out, "My God, receive this "penance as an expiation for the great crimes I "have committed in this world: Oh God! accept "these torments in satisfaction for my sins. By the "faith I owe to God, I know no more than what "I have declared. Oh! do not drive my soul to "despair."

The third wedge was then drove lower near his feet, at which an universal sweat covered his body, and he fainted away. The executioner forced some wine into his mouth, but he could not swallow it; and, being quite speechless, he was released from the torture, and water thrown upon his face and hands. Some wine being forced down his throat,

† The brodequin is a strong wooden box, made in the form of a boot, just big enough to contain both the legs of the criminal which being put therein, a wooden wedge is then drove with a mallet between his knees, and after that is forced quite through, a second wedge of a larger size, is applied in the same manner.

his

his ſpeech returned, and he was laid upon a mattraſs in the ſame place, where he continued till noon. When he recovered his ſtrength, he was conducted to chapel by the executioner; and meſſieurs Filleſaſqs, and Gamaches, two doctors of the Sorbonne, being ſent for, his dinner was given him; but before the divines entered into a conference with him, the clerk admoniſhed him to think of his ſalvation, and confeſs by whom he had been prompted, perſuaded, and abetted in the wicked action he had committed, and ſo long deſigned to commit; it not being probable, that he ſhould of himſelf have conceived and executed it, without communicating it to any other.

He ſaid, that if he had known more than what he had declared to the court, he would not have concealed it, well knowing, that in this caſe he could not have the mercy of God, which he hoped for and expected; and that he would not have endured the torments he had done, if he had any farther confeſſion to make. He ſaid he acknowledged that he had committed a great crime, to which he had been incited by the temptation of the devil; that he entreated the king, the queen, the court, and the whole kingdom to pardon him, and to cauſe prayers to be put up to God for him, that his body might bear the puniſhment for his ſoul. And being many times admoniſhed to reveal the truth, he only repeated what he had ſaid before. He was then left with the doctors, that they might perform the duties of their office with him.

A little after two o'clock the clerk of the court was ſent for by the divines, who told him, that the condemned had charged them to ſend for him, that he might hear and ſign his confeſſion, which he deſired might be revealed, and even printed, to the end that it might be known to the whole world; which confeſſion the ſaid doctors declared to have been, That no one had been concerned with him in the act

act he had committed; That he had not been solicited, prompted, or abetted, by any other person whatever, nor had discovered his design to any one; That he acknowledged he had committed a great crime, for which he hoped to have the mercy of God, which was still greater than his sins, but which he could not hope to obtain if he concealed any thing.

Hereupon the clerk asked the condemned, if he was willing that his confession should be known and revealed? and, as above, admonished him to acknowledge the truth for the salvation of his soul. He then declared upon his oath, that he had said all he knew, and that no one had incited him to commit the murder.

At three o'clock he came from the chapel; and as he was carrying out of the Conciergerie, the prisoners, in great numbers, thronged about him, with loud cries and exclamations, calling him Traitor, Wicked Wretch, Detestable monster, Damned Villain, and the like; they would have struck him, had they not been hindered by the archers, and the other officers of justice, who kept them off by force.

When he was put into the tumbril, the crowd was so great, that it was with the utmost difficulty the archers and officers of justice could force themselves a passage; and as soon as the prisoner appeared, that vast multitude began to cry out, as above, Wicked Wretch, Traitor, &c.

The enraged populace continued their cries and execrations till he arrived at the Greve; where, before he was taken out of the tumbril to mount the scaffold, he was again exhorted to reveal his accomplices; but he persisted in his former declaration, that he had none; again imploring pardon of the young king, the queen, and the whole kingdom for the crime he had committed.

When he had ascended the scaffold, the two doctors comforted him, and exhorted him to acknowledge the truth; and after performing the duties of their

their function, the clerk approached him, and urged him to think of his salvation now at the close of his life, and to confess all he knew; to which he only answered as he had done before.

The fire being put to his right hand, holding the knife with which he had stabbed the king, he cried out, *O God!* and often repeated, *Jesu Marie!* while his breast, &c. were tearing with red hot pincers, he renewed his cries and prayers; during which, being often admonished to acknowledge the truth, he persisted in denying that he had any accomplices. The furious crowd continued to load him with execrations, crying, that he ought not to have a moment's respite. Afterwards by intervals, melted lead and scalding oil were poured upon his wounds; during which he shrieked aloud, and continued his cries and exclamations.

The doctors again admonished him, as likewise the clerk, to confess, and were preparing to offer up publickly the usual prayers for the condemned; but immediately the people, with great tumult and disorder, cried out against it, saying, that no prayers ought to be made for that wicked wretch, that damned monster. So that the doctors were obliged to give over. Then the clerk remonstrating to him, that the indignation of the people was a judgment upon him, which ought to induce him to declare the truth, he persisted to answer as formerly, saying, I only was concerned in the murder.

He was then drawn by four horses, for half an hour, by intervals.

Being again questioned and admonished, he persisted in denying that he had any accomplices; while the people of all ranks and degrees, both near and at a distance, continued their exclamations, in token of their great grief for the loss of their king. Several persons set themselves to pull the ropes with the utmost eagerness; and one of the nobleſſe, who was near the criminal, alighted off his horse, that it might

might be put in the place of one that was tired with drawing him. At length, when he had been drawn for a full hour by the horſes, without being diſmembred, the people ruſhing on in crowds, threw themſelves upon him, and with ſwords, knives, ſticks, and other weapons, they ſtruck, tore, and mangled his limbs; and violently forcing them from the executioner, they dragged them through the ſtreets with the utmoſt eagerneſs and rage, and burnt them in different parts of the city.

May the twenty-firſt, 1610.

THE jailor cauſed the court to be informed, that he had heard the priſoner ſay ſomething of conſequence; upon which he was ſent for, and the oath being adminiſtred to him,

He ſaid, That the evening before, carrying the priſoner's ſupper to him, with one of his men, the two archers who guarded him being preſent, he aſked the priſoner where he was when the king went out of the Louvre? to which the priſoner replied, that he was ſitting in the hall among the footmen: and he being aſked, why he committed ſuch an action? the priſoner anſwered, "Becauſe "of a great—— but I will not tell you, but I "will tell the court to-morrow; and I could not "help doing it, as I ſhall prove by my body."

Then . . . . . archer of the provoſt of l'Hôtel, being ſent for, the oath was adminiſtred to him.

He repeated what the jailor had ſaid, adding, that the priſoner ſaid, his mother had a mark like his; for which reaſon he could not avoid doing what he did; and that perceiving the king's coach to ſtop, he ſaw a viſion, which ſaid to him, *Now is the time.*

Then was heard upon oath . . . . . archer likewiſe of the provoſt of l'Hôtel.

He alſo repeated what the jailor had ſaid, adding, that the priſoner ſaid, he was under a neceſſity of committing that action, by a mark which he and

his mother had, that it came from heaven, and that he would declare it to the court, &c.

Sentence of Death againſt Francis Ravaillac, *May* 28, 1610.

Extracted from the Regiſters of the Parliament.

THE court conſiſting of the great chambers of the Tournelle and the Edict, being aſſembled, and having ſeen the criminal proceedings, formed by the preſidents and counſellors in that behalf, appointed by commiſſion, at the requiſition of the king's attorney-general, againſt Francis Ravaillac, a practitioner of the law, of the city of Angoulême, priſoner in the Conciergerie of the palace; as alſo the information made againſt him, the interrogatories, confeſſions, anſwers, and croſs-examinations of witneſſes, and the ſtate of the caſe by the king's attorney general; and the ſaid Ravaillac having been heard and examined by the ſaid court, touching the matters laid to his charge; and touching the verbal proceſs of the interrogatories adminiſtred to him on the rack; which, by order of the ſaid court, he underwent on the 25th of this month, for diſcovery of his accomplices: On conſideration of the whole,

The ſaid court hath declared, and doth declare, the ſaid Ravaillac duly attainted of the crime of high-treaſon, divine and human, in the higheſt degree, for the moſt wicked, moſt abominable, and moſt deteſtable parricide, committed on the perſon of the late king Henry IV. of good and laudable memory; for reparation whereof, the court hath condemned, and doth condemn him, to make the *amende-honorable*, before the principal gate of the church of Paris, whither he ſhall be carried and drawn in a tumbril in his ſhirt, bearing a lighted torch of two pound weight, and that he ſhall there ſay and declare, that wickedly and traiterouſly he hath

hath committed the aforesaid most wicked, most abominable, and most detestable parricide, and murdered the said lord the king, by stabbing him twice in the body with a knife; that he repents of the same, and begs pardon of God, the king and the laws: from thence he shall be carried to the Greve, and, on a scaffold to be there erected, the flesh shall be torn to pieces with red-hot pincers from his breasts, his arms and thighs, and the calves of his legs; his right hand holding the knife wherewith he committed the aforesaid parricide, shall be scorched and burned with flaming brimstone; and on the places where the flesh has been torn with pincers, melted lead, boiling oil, scalding pitch, with wax and brimstone melted together, shall be poured: after this, he shall be torn in pieces by four horses, his limbs and body burnt to ashes, and dispersed in the air. His goods and chattels are also declared to be forfeited and confiscated to the king. And it is further ordained, that the house in which he was born shall be pulled down to the ground (the owner thereof being previously indemnified) and that no other building shall ever hereafter be erected on the foundation thereof; and that within fifteen days after the publication of this present sentence, his father and mother shall by sound of trumpet and public proclamation in the city of Angoulême, be banished out of the kingdom, and forbid ever to return, under the penalty of being hanged and strangled, without any farther form or process at law. The court has also forbidden, and doth forbid, his brothers, sisters, uncles and others, from henceforth to bear the said name of Ravaillac, enjoining them to change it to some other, under the like penalties; and ordering the substitute of the king's attorney-general to cause this present sentence to be published and carried into execution, under pain of being answerable for the same; and before the execution thereof, the court

doth order, that the said Ravaillac shall again undergo the torture for the discovery of his accomplices.

Pronounced and executed the
27th day of May, 1610.

VOISIN.

Extract from the Registers of Parliament.

THE court consisting of the great chambers of the Tournelle and the Edict, being assembled, and proceeding to judgment on the criminal process extraordinary, formed at the requisition of the king's attorney-general, on account of the *most wicked, most cruel, and most detestable parricide* committed on the sacred person of the late king Henry IV. and having thereupon heard the king's said attorney-general; hath ordered, and doth order, that at the instance of the dean and syndic of the faculty of divinity, the said faculty shall be assembled, as soon as may be, to deliberate; and having heard the tenor of the decree of the said faculty of the 13th of December 1413, and the resolution founded on the opinion of one hundred and forty-one doctors of the said faculty, since confirmed by the council of Constance, *That it is not lawful for any one, whoever he be, to make any attempt on the sacred persons of kings, and other sovereign princes.* The said decree thereon to be made by the said assembly, shall be subscribed by all the doctors of the said faculty, who shall have been present at the said deliberations; and also by all the bachelors, who are members of the body of divinity; which said decree being communicated to the said attorney-general, and produced to this court, such order shall be made thereon as reason shall require.

Done in parliament, May, 27. 1610.

INDEX.

GENERAL INDEX.

A.

ABBEYS. Taken out of the hands of the proteſtants: Sully diſpoſes of his, v. vi. p. 49. See *Beneficcs.*

Abbeville. Henry IV. makes his entry there, ii. 94.

Abjuration of Henry IV. i. 329. And other particulars relating to this ceremony, ib.

Abſie. (Abbey of) Sully parts with it, vi. 50.

Abſolution of Henry IV. difficulty in prevailing upon the Pope to grant it, ii. 144. He grants it, at laſt, upon certain conditions, ib. 145. Remarks upon this ceremony, 145.

Academy Royale. Propoſed to be inſtituted by Henry IV. v. 169.

Acharie. (Lady) To whom father Cotton was confeſſor, iv. 350.

Achmet, emperor of the Turks, ſucceeds Mahomet III. Troubles at Conſtantinople during his reign, iv. 145. Obtains permiſſion of Henry IV. to have a reſident at Marſeilles, v. 229.

Admirals of France, Coligny, Epernon, La-Valette, Biron, Villars, Danville. See *theſe names.*

Aerſens. (Francis) Ambaſſador from the United Provinces to France. Carries on his negotiations with great ſucceſs, iii. 195. Cardinal Richelieu's ſaying of him, ib. Henry IV. ſuſpected of having an intrigue with his wife, ib. Gives information of a ſuppoſed union of Spain and England to invade France, 263.---iv. 221. Is deputed by Henry IV. to the duke of Bouillon, iv. 333. Makes preſents to the king and queen, and receives ſome from them, 375. Returns to Paris to finiſh his negotiation, v. 27.

Africa. Deſigns of Charles V. of Philip II. and the houſe of Auſtria, upon that part of the world; and the obſtacles they meet with, iv. 311, 312. Part of Henry's great deſign relating to Africa. See *Political deſign.*

Ageaux. (Des) Lieutenant de Roi, of St. Jean d'Angely, ſerves Henry IV. at the battle of Coutras, i. 140. Henry refuſes to give his poſt to the duke of Rohan, iv. 197. And beſtows it upon La-Rochebeaucourt, 353. See *Rohan Rochebeaucourt.*

Agelle. (Mademoiſelle d') beloved by Henry IV. i. 62.

Agen. Taken by the Roman catholics during the peace, i. 62. Taken a ſecond time, ii. 182.

Agouſt. Henry's opinion of this houſe, v. 66. See *Bonne, Crequy, Leſdiguieres.*

Aides. Abuſes in this part of the revenue corrected by Sully, iv. 200, 201. Regulations for this purpoſe, which make part of the cabinet of ſtate, v. 173. See *Cabinet of ſtate.*

------ (Court of) See *Sovereign Court.*

Aignan. (Count de Saint) Gratuity granted him by Henry IV. iv. 209.

Aiguebelle. Taken by Sully, iii. 42. An adventure there, by which Grillon became the friend of Sully, iv. 163. See *Sully, Grillon.*

Aigues-Mortes. Pawned by the prince of Condé to prince Casimir, i. 72.

Aillant. Sully visits his estates there, i. 213.

Aine. The passage of that river, and the advantage gained there by Henry IV. over the prince of Parma, i. 211. See *Henry IV. Parma.*

Aix. (Lewis d') His party in Provence, i. 269. He attempts to deliver up Marseilles to the Spaniards, ii. 110. See *Marseilles.*

Alegon. See *Meyrargues.*

Albe. (Duke of) Has a conference with Catherine of Medicis at Baïonne, i. 19. See *Baïonne, Medicis.*

Alba-Royale. In Hungary, taken by the duke of Mercœur, iii. 120. Retaken by the Turks, 182.

Alligny. (Charles de Semiane d') Surprises Geneva, and is driven from thence, iii. 180. See *Geneva.*

Albret. (House of) Alliance between that house and the family of Rohan, ii. 181. Which, on failure of children in a direct line, are next heirs to the estates of Albret, iv. 194. Henry IV. unites those estates to the crown, v. 38. Law-suit betwixt Henry IV. and the house of Nevers for those estates, 47. See *Rohan, Nevers.*

------- (Henry d') King of Navarre. See *Navarre.*

------- (Jane d') Queen of Navarre. See *Navarre.*

------- (Henry d') Baron de Miossens. See *Miossens.*

Aldegonde. (Philip Marnix de Saint-) A protestant officer. The prince of Orange informs him of the designed treachery at Antwerp, i. 87.

Aldobrandin, (Cardinal) Nephew and legate of Clement VIII. comes to France to treat of a peace. Sully's reception of him, and his prudent advice to him, iii. 58. His conferences at Lyons with the commissioners appointed by Henry IV. 61. Breaks them off upon account of the demolition of Fort St. Catherine, 63. Resumes the treaty with Sully, and concludes it, 66. His friendship for Sully, iv. 214. Presents from Henry IV. v. 37. See *Sully, Peace, Savoy.*

Alençon. Hertray seizes it for the princes. They join their forces there, i. 48. Taken from the League by Henry's forces, 187. See *Hertray, Henry IV.*

-------- (Francis de Valois, Duke of) afterwards duke of Anjou. See *Anjou.*

Alexander, (Father) A jesuit, endeavours to procure the re-establishment of his society in France, iv. 5.

Alexandrini, (Cardinal) called to the council, where they project the destruction of the protestants, i. 28.

Algiers. Spain endeavours to get possession of it, iii. 322.

Alibour, First physician to Henry IV. i. 205. A humorous dialogue between Henry IV. and him concerning the fair Gabrielle, ii. 112. His death. Some circumstances relating to it, 113. See *Henry, Estrees, Sancy.*

Alincourt, (Charles de Neufville, Marquis of) governor of Pontoise attempts to surprise Mante, i. 219. Concludes a treaty with Henry

Henry IV. ii. 47. Obtains the government of Lyons, ib. Henry refuſes to give him the poſt of grand-maſter of the ordnance, 237. The ſum of money granted him by his treaty, 311. Is ſent to Rome on occaſion of the deſigned marriage between Henry IV. and Mary of Medicis, iii. 34. Gratuities and favours which he received from the queen regent, vi. 21. A great diſpute in the council between him and Sully on the affair of Lyons, 23.

Allegre. (Andrew d') See *Ferraques.* (Counteſs of)

-------- (Chriſtopher, Marquis of) takes Rouen for the League, i. 190. Aſſaſſinates Hallot, v. 55.

Allymes, (René de Lucinge-Des) the duke of Savoy's commiſſioner in the affairs of Saluces, iii. 20. Endeavours to corrupt Sully by preſents, ib. 21. See *Savoy, Saluces, Sully.*

Almoner. (Great) That office given to cardinal Perron upon Sully's recommendation, iv. 345.

Alpin (Saint) de Bethune. His example propoſed to Sully by Paul V. iv. 219. See *Bethune.*

Ambaſſadors. and *Embaſſies* from Elizabeth and the United Provinces to Henry IV. Political diſcourſe of this prince upon this occaſion, ii. 261. See *Henry, Cecil, Naſſau, Elizabeth, &c.* Of the duke of Luxembourg to Rome. See *Luxembourg.* Of Sillery to Rome. See *Sillery.* From the grand ſeignior to Henry IV. See *Muſtapha.* From the Venetians to Henry IV. See *Venice.* From the archduke to Henry. See *Archdukes.* Embaſſy of Canaye to Venice; of Bethune to Rome; of marſhal Biron to London, and to the Swiſs cantons. See theſe names. A ſolemn embaſſy of the Swiſs cantons to France. See *Swiſs cantons.* Marquis of Roſny ſent ambaſſador extraordinary to king James I. See *Sully, James* I. Ambaſſadors appointed by Henry IV. during the war of Cleves, v. 265.

Ambliſe (Africanus d'Anglure d') defeated by the duke of Bouillon, i. 263.

Amboiſe. One of the five towns which continued faithful to Henry III. i. 159.

-------- (George de Clermont d') follows Henry IV. into Franche-Comte, ii. 141.

-------- (Buſſy d') See *Buſſy.*

America. Deſigns of Charles V. and Philip II. upon that part of the world, and the obſtacles they meet with, iv. 311, 312. See *Charles* V. *Philip* II. Part of the great deſign relating to this part of the world. See *Political deſign.*

Amerval. See *Liancourt.*

Amiens. Henry IV. makes his entrance into that city, ii. 94. He ſtays there ſome time, 166. His anſwer to the deputies of that city, ib. Taken by the Spaniards, 222. Diſquiet it gives Henry, 223. His preparations to retake this city, 225, 226. Begins the ſiege, 233. Sully's endeavours to ſecure the ſucceſs of it, ib. The Spaniards unable to prevent its being taken, 240, 241. Henry IV. goes there to conclude the treaty of Vervins, 277.

Amours. (N. d') Commiſſioner for levying the tax of a penny in the ſhilling, iii. 123.

Ancel. (William) Maitre de hôtel to the king, reſident at Vienna, iv. 176. At Poland, vi. 92.

Anchin, (John de Bethune, abbot d') revered as a saint, i. 6. See *Bethune*.
Anchorage (Rights of) eſtabliſhed, notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of Sully, iii. 333.
Andelot (Charles de Chatillon-Coligny, marquis of) diſputes Sully's priſoners with him, i. 197. A quarrel between them on that occaſion, 199. Henry IV. decides it for Sully, 204.
------- (Francis de Chatillon-Coligny, marquis of) His three children all died or were murdered at one time, i. 214.
------- (Guy de Laval d') ſaved at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, and fled to Geneva, i. 35.
Andre. (Saint) A village where the battle of Ivry was fought, i. 196. See *Ivry*.
Andre. (N. de Saint) An officer in the ordnance, v. 184.
Andreſy. Conferences upon religion held at this place, ii. 10. Names of thoſe perſons who aſſiſted at the conference, and the ſubjects treated of, ib.
Anfreville. The catholics drove from that place, i. 187.
-------- (N. d') Taken priſoner by Sully at the battle of Ivry, i. 195.
Ange. (Father) See *Joyeuſe (Henry de)*.
------ (N. de Saint) Aſſiſts the king's party in Limoſin, ii. 182. Contributes to the taking of Bourg, iii. 35. Solicits for marſhal Biron's pardon, 147.
Angely. (St. John d') Sully viſits this place, iv. 72. The poſt of king's lieutenant refuſed to its governor, 197. and given to La-Rochebeaucourt, 353. Rohan obliges the regent to grant it to him, vi. 111. See *Rohan, Rochebeaucourt*.
Angennes. (Francis d') See *Mont-luet*.
-------- (John d'). See *Poigny*.
-------- (Lewis d'). See *Maintenon*.
--------- (Nicholas d'). See *Rambouillet*.
Angers. Prince of Condé fails in his attempt upon this place, i. 108. Henry IV. ſtays ſome time there in his journey to Brittany: the buſineſs he tranſacts there, ii. 250, 251. See *Henry, Mercœur, &c.*
Angillon. (La-Chapelle d') A houſe purchaſed by Sully, vi. 48. The improvements he makes in it, 134.
Angoulême (Charles de Valois, count of) and duke of Auvergne. See *D'Auvergne*.
---------- (Charlotte de Montmorency, ducheſs of). Proxy for the arch-duke at the baptiſm of the princeſs Elizabeth of France, iv. 357. See *France*. Employed in the amours of Henry IV. v. 8—69--76--197.
---------- (Henry de Bourbon, count of). Grand prior and governor of Provence, i. 267.
Anjou. (Cities in) Taken by Henry IV. i. 56.
------ (Charles of) receives great favours from the family of Bethune in his wars with Mainſroi, i. 6. See *Bethune*.
------ (Francis de Valois, duke of Alençon, ſince duke of) otherways Monſieur. Plots with the king of Navarre to ſtrangle the queen mother, i. 14. They endeavour to procure a marriage between him and queen Elizabeth, 42. Joins the malecontents, 44. Arreſted

rested, ib. Recovers his liberty, 47. Great enmity between him and Henry III. ib. Joins his forces with Henry IV. and the prince of Condé, 48. Catherine disunites them from the protestants by the peace of Monsieur, 49. Design of this princess to make him king of Algiers. Negotiations to this effect, 76. His character, 79. *See Sauves.* Goes to Flanders. Received into Cambray, and takes the castle by assault. His treachery to the governor, 83, 84. Goes to England, 85. Returns to Flanders, where he is crowned duke of Brabant, ib. Enters into a sort of engagement with Elizabeth, ib. His resentment to the city of Antwerp, 86. Disobliges Sully and the protestants, ib. He loses his army and returns to France, 88. Retires in disgrace to Château-Thierry. Sully visits him there, 92. His death, 93. His titles, ib. Designed to be married to the sister of Henry IV. ii. 338. Philip II. motives for engaging him in the enterprise of Antwerp, v. 164. See the names mentioned in this article.

Anjou. (Gaston-John Baptist de France, duke of) Third son of Henry IV. afterwards duke of Orleans. His birth, v. 86. Henry proposes to marry him to the princess of Mantua, 158. His fondness for Sully, vi. 17.

------ (Henry de Valois, duke of). King of France. See *Henry* III.

Anspach. (the duke of) Sully charged with holding a criminal correspondence with this prince, iv. 186.

Anti-Christ. The protestants gave this name to the whole family of Medicis, i. 21. The Pope *Antichrist*, a tenet proposed to the synod of Gap. Opposed by Sully, iii. 337. Debates upon the same tenet in the synod of Rochelle, v. 10, 11.

Anthony. (N. de St.) Henry IV. sends him to the king of England, iii. 310. iv. 368.

Antibes. Henry IV. proposes to make a purchase in the neighbourhood of this place, v. 116.

Antonio. (D'Simon) Deputy from Spain opposes the treaty between Sully and Villars, ii. 30. The conversation betwixt Sully and him at the governor's, 49. Villars obliges him to leave Rouen, 50.

Antoire. (Port St.) Repaired, v. 58.

Anton. (Claude Batarnai d') First husband to the wife of Admiral Coligny, i. 17.

Antonin. See *Guiche* (Countess of).

Antwerp. The duke of Anjou is crowned there duke of Brabant, i. 85. Insurrection upon account of the prince of Orange being wounded there, ib. Monsieur endeavours to seize it by surprise, and fails in his attempt, 87. Cause of the hatred the Dutch bore him, 85. See *Anjou, Orange.* The prince of Orange makes an unsuccessful attack upon this city, v. 25. Motives of the counsel given by Philip II. against this city, 164.

Aumbure. (N. d') Present at the battle of Aumale: at the attack of the great convoy before Laon, ii. 76. Attends Henry IV. in the campaign of Franche-Compte, 141---225. iv. 365. Treated with great familiarity by Henry IV. v. 311.

Arcadius. Emperor of the East, vi. 58.

Archant. (N. de L') Present at the battle of Ivry, i. 197.

Archduke of Austria. (Albert cardinal) Loses an opportunity of beating

the French before Amiens, ii. 240, 241. Bon-mot of Henry on this occasion, 240. Signs at Brussels the treaty of Vervins for the king of Spain, 278. Goes to fetch the archduchess of Gratz to Philip II. and conducts her through Marseilles, 336, 337. Marries the Infanta Isabella, and is made governor of the Low Countries, 337. He loses the battle of Nieuport, iii. 70. Besieges Ostend, 83. Sends the count of Solre ambassador to Henry at Calais, 88. Indisposed at Brussels, 178. The disposition and true political views of the archduke in Flanders with regard to Spain and the house of Austria, 295. He favours the conspiracy of the English lords against king James, 320. Bad success in the war against the Dutch, 325. His uneasiness upon account of the expedition to Sedan, iv. 329. He concludes the treaty of suspension of arms between Spain and the United Provinces v. 30. Endeavours sincerely to bring about a peace, 129. His reception of the prince of Condé after he left France, 207. Treaty of a truce for twelve years between him and the States-general, with the treaty of mediation of the kings of France and England, 217. He supports the interest of the prince of Epinoy out of regard to Sully, 220. The letter which he wrote Henry IV. upon his journey into Cleves, and Henry's answer to this letter, 259--267. His motives for the little precaution he took against Henry's great design, 268. Sends an embassy into France upon the death of Henry IV. vi. 11. Permits the troops of the confederate princes, for the great design, to pass through his dominions, 104. See *Cleves, Political Design,* and the other names mentioned in this article.

Archdukes and Archduchesses. Princes and princesses of that name. See *Austria.*

Archpriest. Established in England by the Pope. The cause of great troubles, iii. 270. See *Clement* VIII. *James* I. and *Jesuits.*

Ardembourg. The archduke Albert fails in his attempt upon this place, iv. 119, 120.

Ardres. Taken by the Spaniards, ii. 143.

Aremberg. (John de Ligne, count of) Ambassador from the archduke to king James, iii. 218. Cabals in London, 223. Audience refused him by the king of England till Sully had his, 238. Compliments and presents which Sully and he make each other, 244. King James complains of his conduct, 251. Errors he is guilty of in his negotiation, 275, 276. Goes to Windsor, 314. The king delays giving him his second audience, 318. Continues to cabal at London, 319.

Argolets. From whence called, i. 110.

Argentan. The duke of Montpensier takes this city for the king, and defeats the Gautieres there, i. 187. See *Montpensier, League.*

Argentier. (L') One of the farmers of the revenue, ii. 219. Sully causes him to be prosecuted, v. 46. Bon-mot of Henry's on this subject, ib.

Argenton. Henry IV. dislodges the troops of the League from this place, i. 163.

Argouges. (Florent d') Treasurer of the queen's household, iv. 51. Brings a complaint to Sully, which that minister refuses to sign, vi. 5.

Ariat. (N. d') Succours the inhabitants of Villemur againſt the forces of the League, i. 269. See *Joyeuſe, Villemur.*

Arlieux. Monſieur attacks this paſſage, Sully takes ſome priſoners there, i. 83. See *Anjou, Sully.*

Armagnac. (County of) Erected into a preſidial, ii. 246. Law-ſuit loſt by Henry IV. to the ſieur de Fontrailles for this county, ib.

--------- Firſt gentleman of the bed-chamber to Henry IV. ii. 84, iii. 131. v. 311.

Armand. (Father) A jeſuit, labours ſucceſsfully for the re-eſtabliſhment of that ſociety in France, iv. 5.

Arms. (Wearing of) Prohibited, ii. 281.

Arnai-le-Duc. (Encounter of) In which the proteſtants have the advantage, i. 3. Henry's diſcourſe upon this battle, ib.

Arnaud. (Anthony) Advocate for the univerſity of Paris againſt the jeſuits, ii. 69. See *Jeſuits, Univerſity.*

-------- (The eldeſt of four brothers). Clerk of the council of finances, ii. 202, vi. 34.

-------- (The ſecond brother). Secretary to Sully. Marſhal Biron's converſation with him upon the ſcaffold, iii. 146. Informations given him by a canon of Canterbury upon the intrigues of Spain in London, 226. iv. 118--304. Mary of Medicis makes him a member of her privy-council, v. 325. Sully's reſentment againſt him, 328. Sully ſends him to Conchini to make him ſome compliments in his name: what paſſed upon this occaſion, 345. Favours beſtowed upon him by the queen regent, vi. 21. ſhe makes him intendant o the finances. Sully's advice to him, 34.--36.

-------- (The third brother) Colonel. Advice given him by Sully, vi. 36.

-------- (The fourth brother). Treaſurer of France, and overſeer of the highways, makes his court to Conchini, v. 345, 346. Advice given him by Sully, vi. 36.

Arnes. (N. d') A proteſtant gentleman, eſcapes the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30.

Arau. The proteſtant party of the Griſons hold an aſſembly there, iii. 137.

Arpentis (Lewis Du-Bois des) Governor of Touraine, i. 106. Services which Sully receives from him, 112.

Arques. (Battle of) i. 179.

Arquien. See *Montigny.*

-------- (Antony d'). Commandant of the citadel of Metz, iii. 186.

Arragon. (Admiral of) Aſſiſts for the king of Spain at the publication of the peace of Vervins at Paris, ii. 279. Commands the Spaniſh army in Flanders, 338. Unable to ſuccour Grave, iii. 178, 179.

Arras. (Sully's anceſtors have the title of protector of the church of) i. 5, 6. Marſhal Biron the cauſe that the attempt upon this place fail d, ii. 1 6. Henry reſolves to beſiege it in form, 158. The taking of Amiens by the Spaniards obliges him to lay aſide this deſign, 220.

Arrets. Edicts and reſolutions upon the finances, war, politics, and commerce, &c. See each of theſe articles,

Arfcot. (Duke of) Affifts at the publication of the peace of Vervins at Paris, ii. 279.

Arfenal of Paris. The duke of Sully refides there, ii. 308. Repairs it, iii. 16. Receives the king and queen there, 69. Interlude prefented there, 121. Works carried on by Sully, iv. 107, 108; and in the other arfenals of the kingdom, 207. He eftablifhes a fchool for military exercifes, 295. Running at the ring. Henry's frequent vifits there, v. 8, and following. See *Henry* IV. *Sully.* A large hall and amphitheatre built there by Sully for theatrical reprefentations, 63. He entertains and lodges Henry there, who goes frequently to vifit him, v. 167.

Arfon. Deputy to the duke of Bouillon in the affair of Sedan, iv. 327.

Artois. (Counts of) The fovereignty of the earldom of St. Paul conteftcd for by them and the counts of Bologna, iv. 143. See *Saint Paul.*

Arts. A fcheme for the improvement of them, v. 169, 170. See *Cabinet of State.*

Arundel. (Palace of) Sully lodged there during his embaffy to London, iii. 225.

Afcoly. (Prince of) Commands the Spanifh troops in Champagne, i. 218. Suffers Noyon to be taken, ib.

Afia. Defigns of Charles V. of Philip II. and of the houfe of Auftria, upon this quarter of the globe, and the obftacles they meet with. Part of the great defign of Henry IV. relating to that part of the world. See *Political Defign.*

Aftrology and *Aftrologers.* An adventure of the duke of Sully with an aftrologer, ii. 161, 162. The fcience of aftrology very much cultivated in the age of Henry IV. 353. This prince makes La-Riviere calculate the Dauphin's nativity, iii. 99. See *Henry, Sully, La Breffe, &c.*

Aticky. Member of the new council of finances, ii. 126.

Avantigny. A proteftant officer. Monfieur withdraws his confidence from him, i. 86. Prefent at the combat of Saveufe, 168. At the battle of Arques. 180.

Aubagnac. Agent for the duke of Bouillon, iv. 279.

Aubepine. (Charles de l') Marquis of Chateau-neuf. Refufed the office of grand mafter of the ordnance, ii. 237. Called to the council to deliberate upon the affair of recalling the jefuits, iv. 5. Upon the re-eftablifhment of the public revenue, 105. Upon the affairs of the United Provinces, v. 26. Appointed by Henry one of the regents, 266. Admitted by Mary of Medicis into her ordinary council, 325.

Aubeterre. (N. d') Slanders raifed upon account of Sully's friendfhip for him, iv. 185.

Aubigné. (Theodore Agrippa d') Ill affected to the party of Henry IV. i. 102. ii. 234. The methods ufed by him to raife an infurrection among the proteftants, 259. Obferves Sully's conduct in his journey into Poitou, iv. 70. Lays the foundation of a proteftant republic in France, 262.--264.

Aubigny. (Father) A jefuit. See *Jefuit, Parricide, Henry.*

Aubin, (Saint) Agent to the duke of Bouillon, iii. 161.

Auguſtus. The conformity between the reign of Henry IV. and his, v. 75.
Auguſtins. (Order of) inſtituted, iii. 337.
Avias. (Father) Mentioned in a letter of father Cotton's, v. 150.
Avignon. A diſpute concerning the bridge of that city, between the Pope and the king of France, terminated in favour of the king, iv. 139.
Avila. (D. John Alvares) Admiral of Spain, killed in a naval fight with the Dutch, v. 29.
Aumale. (Battle of) i. 236. Prince of Parma's ſpeech upon the battle, 243.
------ (Charles de Lorrain, duke of) Aſſiſts the league, i. 178. Narrowly eſcapes being taken priſoner by Sully, 187. Deſeated before Noyon, 217, 218. His wife treats with Sully about his return to the king's party, ii. 27. Serves the Spaniards in Flanders, iii. 325.
------- (Claude de Lorrain, duke of) A ſtem of the houſe of Guiſe, i. 12.
------- (Claude de Lorrain, chevalier d') Fights for the League at Ivry, i. 196. Is killed at the attack of St. Denis, 263.
------- (Mary de Lorrain, ducheſs of) treats with Sully about her huſband's returning to the king, ii. 27.
Aumont. (John d') Marſhal of France, i. 106. Surpriſes Meulan, 175. Takes an oath of fidelity to Henry IV. after the death of Henry III. 176. Attacks the ſuburbs of Saint-Germain, 185. The victory of Ivry partly owing to his valour, 192. Greatly careſſed by Henry, 198, 199. Confers with the king about his converſion, 317. His exploits in Brittany, ii. 94. His death, ib.
Auneau. (Defeat of the foreign troops at) Accounted for, i. 148.
Aurilly. A gentleman attached to the duke of Anjou, i. 92.
Auſſonville. See *George.* (Saint)
Auſtria. (Houſe of) The author's ſentiments of its origin, i. 4. From whence it deſcended. Diſtinction between the original and the ſecond houſe of Auſtria. Names of the ſeveral princes of this houſe: errors in all theſe reſpects rectified, ib. See *Habſburg.* Eſtates brought into the houſe of Auſtria by that of Bethune, ii. 175. That houſe hated by the proteſtants of the North, iii. 234. The complaints of king James againſt it, and the project concerted between him and Sully to humble it, 265. Countries ſubject to it, 266. See *Charles V. Philip II.* The neceſſity and means of humbling it, 291. Sully the firſt contriver of this ſcheme, iv. 25. Strengthened by its alliances, 130. Its deſigns of acquiring univerſal monarchy, 310. Its firſt advancement, origin, and great ſucceſſes, 311. Henry IV. and Sully think of means to put a ſtop to them, ib. Alliance of the houſe of Bethune with the houſe of Auſtria, v. 226. See *Bethune, Coucy.* Pre-eminence of the houſe of Bourbon over the houſe of Auſtria, ib. See *Bourbon.* How it got poſſeſſion of the earldom of Guelders, 231. Death of the duke of Cleves, and the ſucceſſion to his dominions; reaſons for endeavouring to ſet it aſide, 234. See *Political deſign, Cleves, Elizabeth.* States and princes in Europe oppoſing the houſe of Auſtria on this occaſion, 257. Conſpiracy againſt the life of Henry IV. in which it

it is concerned, 268. See *Spain, Henry, Parricide, &c.* Suffers Juliers to be taken, and the succeſſion of Cleves to be divided, 359. The view of the grand deſign of Henry IV. in regard to it, vi. 81. Juſt ſubjects of complaint for all Europe againſt it, 102. Conjectures on what meaſures it would have taken with reſpect to the grand deſign, and what would have been the conſequence of it, 104. See *Political deſign, Spain, Rodolph.*

Auſtria. (Duchy of). See *Habſbourg, Auſtria (Albert* and *Raoul* of).

------- (Albert of). See *Habſbourg* and *Auſtria* (Houſe of)

------- (Albert, cardinal and arch-duke of). See *Arch-duke, Low Countries.*

------- (Andrew, cardinal of) Lieutenant-general in Flanders till the arrival of the arch-duke, ii. 338.

------- (Anne-Maria Mauricetta of). See *Spain* (Children of).

------- (Catherine of) By her marriage into the houſe of Bethune, it became allied to the houſe of Auſtria, v. 226.

------- (Don Carlos of). See *Carlos, Spain, Philip* II.

------- (Charles IV. of.) See *Emperor.*

------- (Charles of) Marquis of Burgaw. See *Burgaw, Cleves.*

------- (Claire-Ugenie of). See *Spain* (Children of).

------- (Erneſt, arch-duke of). See *Erneſt.*

------- (Ferdinand of). See *Ferdinand, Emperors.*

------- (Ferdinand, arch-duke of) beaten before *Caniſe*, iii. 120.

------- (Frederic III. of). See *Emperors, Frederic.*

------- (D. John of). See *John* (Don).

------- (Iſabella of). See *Spain* (Children of).

------- (Leopold, arch-duke of). See *Leopold.*

------- (Margaret of). Arch-ducheſs of Gratz, marries Philip III. ii. 336. Paſſes by Marſeilles, 337. See *Philip* II. *Philip* III.

------- (Mary of) Marries William, duke of Juliers, v. 235. See *Cleves.*

------- (Matthias, archduke of). See *Matthias.*

------- (Maximilian I. and II. of). See *Maximilian, Emperors.*

------- (Rodolph, or Raoul of). See *Habſbourg, Auſtria.* (Houſe of).

------- (Rodolph of) Emperor. See *Rodolph.*

Autun. Taken by marſhal Biron, ii. 123.

Auvergne. Account of Henry IV's journey to that province, iv. 277. See *Henry* IV. *Bouillon, Rebels.*

------- (Charles of Valois, count of) Preſent at the battle of Arques, i. 181. Joins with the ſeditious, ii. 61. Sully watches and diſconcerts his deſigns, 62. He traverſes Henry's amour with his ſiſter, iii. 8. See *Verneuil* (Marchioneſs of.) His correſpondence with Spain, 85. Signs an aſſociation with Bouillon and Biron, 112. Incites the people to mutiny againſt Henry IV. 113. Waits for an opportunity of ſeizing Saint Flour, 114. The reſolution of arreſting him taken at Blois, 122. He is arreſted, 142. Henry grants him his life, but impriſons him, 152. He is afterwards reſtored to liberty, ib. Henry's motives for acting thus, 154. Auvergne again betrays the king, 155. His character, ib. Continues his intrigues, 335. Loſes his ſuit againſt queen Margaret, for the ſucceſſion to Catherine of Medicis, iv. 62. Engages with Spain in a wicked plot againſt the ſtate and perſon of Henry 64. Demands his

his pardon of the king, and at the ſame time proceeds in his conſpiracy with Spain, 78. Meaſures uſed to arreſt him, 80. His fears and irreſolution, 81. His letters to and from Sully, 85. How he was arreſted, 86. Henry again pardons him: the real and ſuppoſed motives for this clemency, 147. He endeavours to eſcape from the Baſtile, 149. See *Entragues*. Favours granted him in priſon, v. 216. Involved in the parricide committed by Ravaillac, 301.

B

BABOU de la Bourdaiſiere. See *Eſtrees, Sourdis*.
Bacqueville, employed in the affair of Adrienne de Freſnes, iv. 347.
Badé. The catholics of the Griſon league hold their aſſembly there, iv. 136. See *Griſons*.
---- (Duke of) and de Dourlac. Sully accuſed of holding criminal correſpondences with theſe princes, iv. 186. The ſhare they were to have in the great deſign, vi. 84.
Badefou. See *Saint-Genies*.
Badet. (Company of) Uſed as the forlorn-hope at the battle of Ivry, i. 191.
Bailiwics. Offices to be erected in them in caſes of neceſſity, v. 175.
Baionne. The malecontents endeavour to ſeize upon this place, iv. 228.
Balls and feaſts at Paris, during the winter of 1597, ii. 220.
Balagny. (Damien de Montluc de) Duke of Eguillon and he rivals in amours. Is aſſaſſinated by the duke. Indignation expreſſed by Henry IV. and Sully on this aſſaſſination, v. 96, 97.
------- (John de Montluc de). Monſieur gives him the government of the caſtle of Cambray, i. 84. Heads the forces of the league at the battle of Rouen, 235. Made ſovereign prince of Cambray, ii. 59. The Spaniards drive him from Cambray, 143. Bon-mot of a Spaniard upon this occaſion, 147. The ſum paid him for coming over to Henry, 311.
Balbany. Henry IV. pays a ſum of money which he owed him, iv. 363, 364.
Baltazar. His attachment to Sully. Memorial which he delivered him upon the battle of Fontaine-François, ii. 135.
Balzac. See *Entragues, Verneuil*.
Banchi. (Father Seraphin) Diſcovers to Brancaleon the deſign of aſſaſſinating the king, ii. 9.
Bankruptcy and *Bankrupts*. Sully's ſeverity to Jouſſeaume. See *Jouſſeaume*. An edict againſt fraudulent bankrupts, v. 192.
Baptiſm of the children of France. An account of preparations for this ceremony, iv. 355. See the *Dauphin* and *Children of France*.
Bar. (Henry de Lorrain, duke of) His marriage with the princeſs Catherine oppoſed by the Pope and the clergy of France, ii. 339. See *Princeſs* Catherine, *Offat, Clergy*. Her great expences, iv. 3. Henry and he take meaſures, after the death of the princeſs, to ſecure

secure her effects, 3, 4. Henry propoſes to marry him to the princeſs of Mantua, 212.

Bar. Suppreſſion of its officers, iii. 81. Sully complains of the luxury of the gentlemen of the law, 345, 346. Regulation upon the *droit annuel*, v. 173. Reaſons for and againſt this regulation, 174, 175. Abuſes to be corrected in it with reſpect to the judges, advocates, and attorneys, 177.

Barbary, Spain deſigns to invade it, iii. 323.

Barberini. The pope's nuncio in France, iv. 217. Employed by Henry in adjuſting the differences between Paul V. and the Venetians, and rewarded for his good offices, 345. His praiſes of Sully, v. 37.

Barbin. One of the counſellors of the queen regent.

Barenton. An engineer ſent by Sully to demoliſh the caſtle of Uſſon, iv. 294. See *Margaret de Valois.*

Barges. Sully carried in one of them from Graveſend to London, iii. 224. See *Embaſſy, Sully.*

Barlayment. (Count of) Grants a paſſport to Sully, i. 89.

---------- (Counteſs of) Refuſes her conſent to the marriage of mademoiſelle de Melun with the marquis of Cœuvres, when deſired by Henry IV. iv. 198, 199.

Barnard. (Nuns of the order of) Inſtituted, iii. 337. The marchioneſs of Belliſle enters into this order, ii. 365.

Barnevelt, (John Olden de) principal deputy of the United Provinces to James I. The firſt converſation which he had with Sully at London; his confidence in Sully and the meaſures which they take together, iii. 239, and following. Gives advice of the pretended union of Spain and England againſt France, 259. Diſguſted with the Engliſh miniſters, 279. His conference with Sully upon this ſubject, in which he intruſts him with the private reſolutions of the States-general, 280. His conference with Sully and the Engliſh miniſters, in which nothing is reſolved upon, ib. and the following. See *Cecil.* A quarrel between him and the prince of Orange, occaſioned by the truce, iv. 373.

Baronius. (Cardinal) His death, v. 110.

Barrault. (Emeric Gobier de) attempts to enforce the obſervation of the treaties, iii. 323. Endeavours to find out the treachery of Le Hôte, iv. 26. An inſtance of his boldneſs and reſolution, ib. Raſis informs him of the treaſon of Le Hôte, 27, 28. Gives advice to Henry IV. 30. Inſtructions given him by Sully, v. 24.

Barre. (Madame de la) Gives bad counſel to the princeſs Catherine againſt Sully, ii. 172--179.

Barreaux. (Des) One of the members of the new council of finances, ii. 126. He ſupports the financiers, who had been guilty of unjuſt practices, 192.

Barriere, or *Barre.* (Peter) His plot to aſſaſſinate Henry IV. How diſcovered and puniſhed, ii. 8. Particulars relating to this plot. The jeſuits juſtified, 9.

Bartholomew. (Maſſacre of Saint) Scheme of this maſſacre, i. 25. Obſervations upon it ib. The manner in which it was executed. How Henry IV. the prince of Condé, and Sully, preſerved their lives, 33--35. Reflections upon this action, 31, 32. Names of thoſe

those who were massacred, and other particulars, 35.
Bassignac or *Vassignac*, (Gideon de) A protestant gentleman, cabals against Henry at the siege of Amiens, ii. 234. Lieutenant and agent for the duke of Bouillon, iv. 279.
Baste. (George) General of the imperial troops in Transilvania, defeats the Vaivodes Battori and Michael, iii. 120. A noble action of this general, 182.
Bastelica. See *Ornano.*
Bastile. Sully made governor of it, iii. 117. Henry IV. lays up his treasures there: regulation upon this occasion, iv. 96, 97.
Batarnai. (Claude de) See *Coligny.*
Battles and encounters at Jarnac, at Arnai-le-duc, at Lucon, at Loudun, at Lepanthe, at Saint-Quintin, at Meaux; before Beaumont, at Coutras, Saveuse, Arques, Dieppe, and Pollet, Ivry, Issoire; at the passage of Aine; against the Gautieres. See *Montpensieur.* Of Aumale. See all these names. Historians seldom agree in the account they give of battles, i. 243. Encounters and skirmishes before Rouen, 247--251. See *Parma.* Of Villemur, of Villers Colerets, before Dourlens, at Fontaine-Françoise, at Nieuport. Naval battle gained by the Dutch against the Spaniards. See *Spain*, the *Low Countries.* See also *Skirmishes*, *Sieges*, and the other names mentioned in this article.
Battori. Vaivode of Transilvania, defeated by George Baste, iii. 120. He continues the war against the Emperor, 181.
Bavaria. (Elector of) Project to make him Emperor, iv. 313.
Baudelonis. (Yvon) Takes a Spanish ship, which Henry IV. causes to be restored, iv. 223, 224.
Baudouin, earl of Flanders. See *Flanders.*
Baugy. Agent to Henry IV. for the management of the grand design, vi. 92.
------ (Lands of. Awarded to Sully. He visits them, iii. 82. vi. 48.
Baumevielle. The advice he gave to Henry IV. concerning the duke of Bouillon, v. 55.
Bazeille. (Saint-) Taken by the duke of Maienne, i. 117.
Bearn. The mass abolished there. See *Navarre.* The mass restored; afterwards the jesuits, v. 110. The quarrel with Spain relating to its boundaries, terminated to the satisfaction of Henry, 134.
Beaucaire. See *Martigues.*
Beaudiner. (Galliot de Crussol de) A protestant gentleman, i. 24. Killed at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 32.
Beaufort. (Duchess of) See *Estrees.* (Gabriel d').
--------- Enemy to Sully at court, iv. 182.
Beaugrard. Of great use to Sully at the taking of Louviers, i. 222.
Beaugency. One of the five cities which continued faithful to Henry III. i. 159. Granted to Henry IV. as a place of security and passage, 161.
Beaulieu (Convent of) Where is delivered the edict of sixty-three articles, i. 49. See *Peace*, *Anjou.*
---- Henry IV. refuses him the post of lieutenant-de-roi of Saint John d'Angely, iv. 353.
Beaulieu-rusé. See *Rusé.*
Beaumont. (Christopher de Harlay, count of) Ambassador from France at

at London, gives advice of the death of Elizabeth, iii. 200. King James is prejudiced againſt him, 214. He is of great ſervice to Sully in his embaſſy, 220. Sully lodges with him, 224. Denies his requeſt in favour of Combaut, 227. He diſſuades Sully from appearing in mourning at his audience of the king of England, 245. Admitted to dine at the table with king James, 277. His eulogium upon Sully's embaſſy, 302. He continues to give advice of the ſtate of affairs in England after the return of Sully, 313, 314. His praiſes of Sully, 315. Other important advices ſent by him from London, 317, 318. He exerts himſelf in the affair of the prohibition of commerce with Spain, iv. 115. As likewiſe in the treaty between England and Spain, 123. He brings with him to France letters from king James to Henry IV. and Sully, and gives an account of his negociation, 225. He praiſes the king of England, 226.

Beaune. (Inhabitants of) Riſe againſt the duke of Maienne, and drive him from thence, ii. 96.

------- (Renaud or Bernard de) of Samblançai. Archbiſhop of Brouges, receives the abjuration of Henry IV. i. 331.

Beauſire. (Saint-Germain de) One of the heads of the diſaffected proteſtants, i. 102. Made governor of Argenton for Henry IV. 163. His intrigues during the ſiege of Amiens, ii. 234. He endeavours to get ſuppreſſed (in the ſynod of Gap) the tenet of the Pope's being Anti-chriſt, iii. 336. He oppoſes Henry's enterpriſe upon Sedan, iv. 316.

Beauvais. (N. de) Governor to Henry IV. perſuades the queen of Navarre and the proteſtant chiefs to go to Paris, i. 19. He is killed at the maſſacre of Saint Bartholomew, 32. A duel between his ſon and Uſſeau, 75.

Beauvais-La Nocle. (John de La-Fin de) Deputed by the proteſtants to Charles IX. i. 16. He eſcapes the maſſacre of Saint Bartholomew, 30. He is partly the cauſe of the defeat at Auneau, 148.

Beauvau. See *Tremblecourt.*

Beauville. Firſt preſident of the chamber of accompts, v. 101.

Beauvoir. The count of Garnache is made priſoner there by his mother, i. 127.

Bec. (N. du) Archbiſhop of Rheims, i. 103.

Beholens, or *Begole.* A proteſtant officer, attached to Henry IV. i. 52.

Bell. (John Le-) A Jeſuit, involved in the proceſs of Chatel, ii. 122.

Belgic. (Republic) eſtabliſhment of this republic in the grand deſign, vi. 88.

Belin. (Francis Faudoas d'Averton de Sérillac, count of) governor of Paris for the League, made priſoner by Henry IV. at Arques, i. 180. Employs himſelf uſefully for Henry in the affair of his converſion, 316. He is deputed by the catholics to Henry, 327. Another deputation to demand a truce, ii. 14. He is inclined to ſurrender Paris to Henry, upon which the duke of Maienne deprives him of the government of that city, 39. A decree of parliament highly honourable to him, ib. He is deprived of his places for ſurrendering Ardres, 143.

------ (Geoffroi de Saint) Biſhop of Poitiers, his letters in juſtification of Sully, in the affair of the college of Poitiers, iv. 153, 158.

Bellanglise. An officer in the army of the duke D'Aumale, i. 217.
Bellebranche. Mentioned in a letter from father Cotton, v. 148.
Bellefond. Defeated at the head of the garrison of Soissons, ii. 122. The government of Caën given him by Henry IV. iii. 335.
Bellegarde. (Roger de Saint-Larry, duke of) Grand-ecuyer of France, acknowledges Henry IV. for king, after the death of Henry III. i. 174. Present at the battle of Arques, 183. Was one of the favourites of Henry III. ii. 98.--227. He is refused the honour of marrying Mary de Medicis by proxy for the king, iii. 34. His familiarity with Henry IV. 81.--131. Is made lieutenant for the Dauphin in Burgundy, 148. Is made superintendant of the mines, 174. Goes to his government of Burgundy, 323. His friendship for Sully, iv. 77. He is involved in the intrigues at court, 178. Called to the council upon the expedition to Sedan, 325. Protects the Jesuits, v. 149. Conchini jealous of him, vi. 3. His quarrels with the nobles and ministers, 10.
Bellemaniere. His company defeated by Henry IV. i. 135.
Bellengreville. (Joachim de) Made governor of Meulan, i. 177. Assists in defending Mante, 221--224.
Belles-Lettres. (Establishment for the improvement of) by Henry IV. ii. 282.
Bellezuns. Fights for Henry IV. at Coutras, i. 140.
Bellievre. (Pomponne de) Labours to convert Henry i. 316. Opposes the malecontents, ii. 66. Admitted into the council of the finances, 114. Provides for the security of Picardy, 249. Signs the peace of Vervins, and assists at its publication at Brussels, 279. Manages, with Sillery, all domestic affairs, 305. Is made chancellor, and the seals delivered to him, 354. Made one of the commissioners for the king's marriage, iii. 11. As likewise in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, 19. Opposes Sully's reasons for a war in Savoy. Takes La-Fin's depositions against marshal Biron, 118. Advises Henry to arrest the heads of the disaffected party, 128. Assists at the council when Sully received the instructions for his embassy to London, 210. His sentiments upon recalling the jesuits, iv. 7. Sully endeavours to persuade him to tolerate different religions, 37. He solicits a cardinal's hat for M. de Villars and de Marquemont, 39. His advice to Henry IV. concerning the marchioness of Verneuil, 91. Made one of the commissioners for the prohibition of commerce with Spain, 114. As likewise for the purchase of the earldom of St. Paul. Henry takes the seals from him: his infirmities, v. 2. Particular circumstances relating to him: his eulogium, ib. Summoned to the council upon the affairs of Flanders; his death, 110.
Belliste. (Antoinette de Orleans de Longueville, marchioness of) Takes the habit of a nun of the order of St. Barnard: cause of her retreat: her eulogium, ii. 365.
------ (Charles de Gondy, marquis of). See the above article.
Bellozane. (John Touchard, abbot of) One of the chiefs of the third party, i. 283. Sully treats with him, 299.
Bellujon. Proposed for deputy-general of the protestants in the assembly of Châtelleraut, iv. 254; but rejected, 266. Employed by Henry IV. in the affair of Orange and Blaccons; 276.

Belly. Chancellor of Savoy, commiſſioner in the affair of the marquiſate of Saluces, iii. 19.

Benefices. Henry IV. propoſes to reform the abuſes in them, v. 169. See *Clergy*, *Cabinet of State*, *Abbeys.*

Benchart. (James de Maillé, de) Governor of Vendome, i. 109.

Benon. (Foreſt of) Sully defeats in this place a ſquadron of the duke of Joyeuſe's army, i. 133.

Berault. A proteſtant miniſter: his intrigues at Châtelleraut rendered ineffectual by Sully, iv. 265.

Berg. Earldom and earls of this name diſpute for its ſucceſſion, v. 231. See *Cleves.*

Bergen-op-zoon. Taken and loſt again by Du-Terrail, iv. 222.

Bergerac. Treaty made with that city. See *Peace* of 1577. Services performed by this city to Henry IV. iii. 339.

Beringhen. (Peter de) Henry IV. confides to him the projects of the League and of the third party diſcovered by the papers intercepted by Sully, i. 283. His ſcheme for taking La-Fere, ii. 155. He is of ſervice to Sully upon his entering into the council of the finances, 188. Made comptroller of mines, iii. 174--334. iv. 176. 178--303--366. v. 142--147--186--191--199--311.

Bernet. (Du-) King's advocate in the parliament of Bourdeaux, v. 56.

Berniers. Counſellor of the parliament of Rouen for the king, ii. 166.

Berny. (Matthieu Brulart, de) His negotiations in Flanders, iv. 372. v. 130. He ſupports the intereſt of the prince of D'Epinoy with the archduke, 222.

Berry. Regulations for the maréchauſſées of this province, v. 45.

Berſot. One of Sully's enemies at court, iv. 182.

Bertauville. Propoſed for one of the deputies for the city of Pons, v. 14.

Berthier. Agent for the clergy. His obſtinate endeavours to procure an amendment of the edict of Nantz, ii. 347.

Bertichere. (La) Aſſiſts the duke of Sully at the attack of Cahors, i. 68. Cabals for the proteſtants during the ſiege of Amiens, ii. 234.

Berton. See *Grillon.*

Beſſais. His intrigues with the proteſtant party, ii. 234.

Beſſes. A diſaffected proteſtant, iv. 72.

Bethune. A city and firſt barony of the earldom of Artois, i. 5.

------- (Houſe of) Its origin: Alliances with the houſes of Bourbon, Auſtria, and the principal houſes of Europe; and the great men it has produced, i. 5, 6. Errors upon this ſubject rectified, Eſtates brought by this houſe into that of Auſtria, ii. 175. Its alliances with the houſe of Bourbon and Luxembourg, 254. Praiſes beſtowed upon it by Henry IV. iii. 105. Deſcended from the counts of Flanders, iv. 219. Its alliances with the houſes of Auſtria and Coucy, v. 226.

------- Several perſons of this name, anceſtors to the duke of Sully, i. 5, 6.

------- (Alpin de). See *Alpin* (Saint).

------- (Antoine de). His actions, i. 6.

Bethune. (Cæsar de). Second son of the duke of Sully, vi. 47. The share which Sully gives him of his estate: his death, 119.
------- (Charles de) See *Rosny* (Francis de Bethune de).
------- (Coëne, or Conon de). His great actions. Made regent of the empire of Constantinople, i. 6.
------- (Francis de). See *Rosny and Orval.*
------- (Florestan de). Governor of Montflanquin, i. 118.
------- (Jacqueline de). Bishop of Cambray, i. 6.
------- (James de). Archbishop of Glasgow. See *Glasgow.*
------- (John de). Abbot of Anchin, i. 6.
------- (John de). Head of the branch from whence the duke of Sully descended, i. 7. Allied with the house of Austria by that of Coucy, v. 226.
------- (John de). Grand-father of the duke of Sully. His alliances, i. 8.
------- (John de). Brother to the duke of Sully. See *Rosny.*
------- (Lewis de). See *Mirepoix* (Marquis of).
------- (Margaret de). See *Rohan* (Duchess of).
------- (Maximilian de). See *Sully* (Duke of).
------- (Maximilian II. de). Marquis of Rosny. See *Rosny.*
------- (Maximilian III. Francis of). Prince of Henrichemont. See *Henrichemont.*
------- (Philip de). The count of Bethune, brother of the duke of Sully. One of the favourites of Henry III. i. 8. Disgraced, 94. Disconcerts the enterprise of the duke of Maïenne upon Loudon, 219. Sent ambassador to Rome, iii. 104. Henry refuses to give him the post formerly enjoyed by the baron de Lux, iv. 196. He gives advice of the death of Clement VIII. 213. Praised for his conduct in Italy, and honours conferred upon him by the Pope, 214. Henry IV. admits him into his council, v. 11. He is again sent ambassador into Italy, 266. Is deputed by the queen regent to Sully, 319. His advice to Sully after Henry's death, 337. Endeavours to persuade him not to resign his employments, 342. Sully resigns to him the abbey of Jard, vi. 50.
------- (Robert de) Ancestors of Sully, who bore this name; and their actions, i. 5.
------- (Solomon de). Brother of the duke of Sully, one of the favourites of Henry III. i. 8. Disgraced, 94. He turns roman catholic, ib. Sully obliges him to open the gates of the castle of Rosny to him, 169. Is made governor of Mante, 204. Prevents this place from being taken by the duke of Maïenne, 219. His death, ii. 238.
------- (N. de). Cousin of the duke of Sully, v. 184.
Beuil (Jacqueline de). See *Moret* (Countess of).
Beuillaque. (Marquis of) Envoy from the grand duke of Tuscany. Gratuities bestowed upon him by Henry IV. v. 36.
Beyne, or *Eays.* Defeats a body of troops belonging to the League, ii. 123.
Beze. (Theodore de) Accused of being concerned in the assassination of the duke of Guise, i. 12. Makes a speech to Henry IV. at the head of the deputation from Geneva. Their reception from Henry,

Henry, iii. 61. His death : his eſteem of Sully ; and the proofs which he gives him of it, iv. 285, 286.

Beziers. Deſigns of the malecontents upon this city, iv. 241.

------- (Biſhop of). One of the ſecret council of Mary of Medicis, v. 325.

Biçoſe, or *Viçoſe*. Deputed by Henry IV. into the diſtricts, ii. 191--326. Lieutenant of the highways in Guyenne, iv. 47.

Bigot. Agent for the duke of Guiſe in his treaty with the king, ii. 101.

Birague. (Rene de) Chancellor. Adviſes the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 28.

Biron. (Armand de Gontault, marſhal of) Deputed by Charles IX. to the proteſtants, i. 17. Fortifies himſelf in the arſenal during the maſſacre, 35. Concludes a truce with Henry IV. in Guyenne, 54. Commands the royal army, 71. Attacks Nerac, 73. Endeavours to diſſuade the duke of Anjou from the treachery meditated againſt Antwerp, 87. Submits to Henry IV. after the death of Henry III. 174. His important ſervice upon this occaſion, 176. Good counſel given by him at Arques, 179. He brings forces to his aſſiſtance, 187. Takes Evreux, ib. Contributes to the victory of Ivry, 199. A bon-mot of his to Henry IV. ib. He unſeaſonably attacks the fort St. Catherine at the ſiege of Rouen, 227, 228. Is accuſed of having endeavoured to ruin this enterprize, 228. Foments a ſedition among the roman catholics, 232. An attack in which he fights valiantly, 234. Occaſions the raiſing the ſiege of Rouen, 244. Henry's reſpect and conſideration for him, 245. His malicious and obſtinate diſpoſition, 261. His ſpeech to his ſon, ib. His bad advice to Henry, 262. Beſieges Epernai, and is there killed, 273. His character and eulogium, ib.

------ (Charles de Gontault, marſhal of). Henry IV. ſaves his life, i. 211. He defeats a detachment of the duke of Aumale's army, 218. Attacks the prince of Parma's intrenchments, and carries them, 251. Employed in the converſion of Henry IV. 317. Affronted by Grillon, ii. 18. Intereſted in the treaty with admiral Villars, 32. Made marſhal of France, 45. Defeats the grand convoy before Laon, 74, 75. His arrogant and preſumptuous boaſts, 76. Henry diſſatisfied with him, refuſes him the government of Laon, 77. He makes Sully watch him carefully, 78. Biron aſſiſts the inhabitants of Burgundy to drive out the duke of Maïenne, 96. Takes Beaune, Nuys, Autin, Dijon, 123. Attacks the caſtle of Dijon and of Talan. Motives of thoſe who perſuaded Henry to go into Burgendy, ib. 124. Drives the League from Dijon and Talan, 135. His actions at the battle of Fontaine-Françoiſe, 138. Occaſions the loſs of Arras, 156. A ſpeech of Henry's in his praiſe, 248. Made duke and peer of France, and aſſiſts at the ratification of the peace at Bruſſels, 279. His plots in Guyenne, iii. 4. One of the commiſſioners in the affair of the marquiſate of Saluces, 19. Takes the city of Bourg without intending it, 35, 36. Endeavours to deſtroy Sully in an ambuſcade, 38. Gives bad advice to Henry, 55. Informs the duke of Savoy of all that paſſes in the council and in the army, 58. Has a deſign to have Sully killed

killed before fort St. Catherine, 59. Confeſſes to the king his plots in Spain and Savoy, 85. Aſks pardon of his majeſty: conditions of his treaty with Savoy, 107. Reſumes his plots, ib. Henry endeavours to reclaim him by kindneſs, 109. Sully endeavours likewiſe, but to no purpoſe, ib. Sent ambaſſador to England: his imprudent diſcourſe with queen Elizabeth, 111. Sent ambaſſador extraordinary to Switzerland, 112. His character, ib. Binds himſelf in a criminal aſſociation with Bouillon and Entragues: renews his intrigues with Spain and Savoy: raiſes an inſurrection: his deſigns upon the principal cities in France: relies upon La-Fin, who betrays him, 113. Sully mentioned in this cabal, 116. Endeavours made uſe of to arreſt Biron, 124. He comes to Fontainebleau, 133. Reſiſts all the counſels of Sully, 138. Arreſted, 142. He is tried and beheaded, 144. Particulars of his execution, his character, and his family, ib. 145. In what manner he ſpoke of Sully, 146, 147. Solicitations of his relations, 147. The exceſſes which he allowed his retinue to commit when in London: the occaſion of the hatred that nation diſcovers towards the French; and the bad treatment Sully's retinue received, 225.

Biſbith. A noble action of George Baſte's at the taking of this place, iii. 182.

Blaccons. Governor of Orange for the proteſtants and the prince of Orange, iv. 238. Is ſacrificed by the intrigues at court to Leſdiguieres, notwithſtanding the repreſentations of Sully, 270. See *Orange, Chatelleraut.*

Blanc. (Francis Le) The duke of Bouillon's agent at London, iii. 243.

Blancard. (John de Gontault, de Saint) Biron's advice to him upon the ſcaffold, iii. 147.

-------- (John de). Steward to the duke of Bouillon, diſcovers to Henry his ſecret practices, iv. 282.

Blanchefort. A ſaying of Henry IV. upon this houſe, v. 66.

Blanchmenil. (Nicholas Potier, de) Preſident of the parliament of Paris, draws up the proceſs againſt marſhal Biron, iii. 144.

Blavet, or *Port Louis.* The Spaniards driven from this place, ii. 153.

Blaye. Beſieged by the marſhal de Matignon, who fails in his attempt, ii. 182. Marſhal Biron and the other malecontents endeavour to ſeize this place, iii. 114.

Blerancourt. A gentleman in the train of the duke of Sully at London, iii. 226.

Blois. The ſtates of this city ſend a deputation to Henry IV. i. 59. Duke of Guiſe murdered here. The views and deſigns of the ſtate, 156, 157. See *Henry* III. *Guiſe, League.* Sully negotiates there a union between the two kings, 160. See *Mornai.* Motives for Henry's journey there, iii. 4. A ſecond journey of his to this place, and the reaſons for it, 122. Reſolutions taken there to arreſt the leaders of the malecontents, 124. See *Bouillon, Epernon, Auvergne, &c.* Henry IV. takes a violent reſolution at this place againſt the queen and her Italian domeſtics, but is diſſuaded from it by Sully, 133. Henry paſſes through it in his way to Auvergne, iv. 283.

Blood. (Princes of) Their plots with the ſtates of Paris, i. 311. See *League, States of Paris.* They make a ſtrange propoſal to Henry

Henry IV. in prejudice of the royal authority, ii. 148. See *Montpenſier*. Sully takes from them the farms of the king's revenues: the cauſe of their hatred to him, 318. They are diſguſted at the king's giving the ducheſs of Mantua precedence of them, iv. 335. Their diviſions and quarrels after the death of Henry IV. v. 98. They pay no regard to Sully's advice, 358. Quarrels among them, and with the miniſters, vi. 10. Grants which they extort from the queen regent, 20. They all conſpire to ruin Sully, 26. They rebel, 114. See upon this article *Bourbon, Condé, Conty, Soiſſons, Montpenſier*. See alſo the *French Lords, Seditions, &c.*

Bodillon. Aſſaſſinates Chilperic: the reaſons, v. 124.

Beeſſe. One of the king's officers: his courage in the taking of Bourg, iii. 36. He declares himſelf in the council for Sully's advice for the expedition of Sedan, iv. 324. Sent by Henry IV. to Geneva to manage the affairs of that republic, v. 35--184.

Bohemia. The view of the grand deſign of Henry IV. in regard to this kingdom, vi. 80. Accedes to the union, 92. Forces and money to be contributed by this crown, 97. See *Political Deſign.*

Bois Dauphin. (Urbain de Laval, de) One of the four marſhals of France made by the League, i. 305. The ſum which he received from Henry IV. by his treaty, ii. 311. Sent ambaſſador to Vienna, iii. 121.

Bois-du Lis. A proteſtant officer, i. 121.

Bois-Roſe. (N. de Gouſtinel, de) The ſurpriſing manner in which he made himſelf maſter of Feſchamp, ii. 12. He delivers the fort to the king, 14. His ſhare in the treaty with admiral Villars, 32. His comical adventure with Sully at Louviers, 52.

Boiſſec. Steward of the houſhold to the princeſs, ii. 176.

------- A proteſtant gentleman, eſcapes the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30.

Boiſſiere. (Chriſtopher de Lanoy, de La) Brings ſuccours to the duke of Maïenne, but does not arrive till after the battle of Ivry, i. 198. Has ſome ſhare in the defeat of the duke of Aumale, 218.

Boiſſiſe. The French agent, with the hereditary princes of Cleves, v. 236. Acts uſefully in this affair, 247. See *Cleves.* Is ſent ambaſſador to Denmark and Sweden, v. 265. vi. 92.

Bolduc. The prince of Orange beſieges this place againſt the advice of Sully, and raiſes the ſiege, iii. 84--195.

Bonacoſſi. Lord of Mantua, killed by the Gonzagues, iv. 356.

Bongars. (James de) The French agent in Germany, ii. 328. Informations given by him, iv. 375. Henry IV. diſcontinues to employ him. Memorial ſent by him to Sully upon the ſucceſſion and affairs of Cleves, v. 231. A bon mot of him, 243. See *Cleves.* Is ſent ambaſſador to Germany, v. 265. vi. 92.

Boniface. (Captain) Receives the duke of Sully into fort St. Catherine to treat with admiral Villars, ii. 16.

Bonne. A ſaying of Henry IV. upon this houſe, v. 66. See *Leſdiguieres, Creqny.*

Bonnefort. Engineer to the king, v. 54.

Bonnet. (N. de Saint) Receives Sully into his houſe when he went to treat with admiral Villars, ii. 16.

Bonneval. (Battle of) See *Savoy*,

Bonnevil. A courtier, in great familiarity with Henry IV. iv. 365.
Bontempts. Gives in a depoſition relating to the effects of the ducheſs of Bar, iv. 4.
Bontin. Sully viſits his eſtates in this place, i. 213.
------ (Anne, François, François de Courtenai). See *Courtenai.*
Boquemare. Preſident of the parliament of Rouen, well diſpoſed to the king's party, ii. 48.
Borde. (La) Employed by Henry IV. to diſcover the intrigue between the count of Sommerive and madame de Moret, and ill uſed by Sommerive, v. 92.
Bordes. (Des) Propoſed at Châtelleraut for the deputy-general of the proteſtant party, and rejected, iv. 266. Employed againſt the jeſuits by Sully in the affair of Metz, 346.
Borgheſe. (Cardinal) See Paul V.
Borgia. (D. Inigo de) Commands the Spaniſh troops in Flanders, iii. 325.
Bories. (Des) Unable to prevent the taking of La-Mothe-Saint-Eloy, i. 132.
Born. (John de Durefort de) Commands the artillery at the ſiege of Rouen, i. 227. At the ſiege of Laon, ii. 61. Lieutenant-general of the ordnance, iii. 14.
Boſtkay. Obliges the emperor to grant him the lordſhip of Tranſilvania, v. 35. See *Rodolphus.*
Bothson. (William de Gadagne de) Aſſiſts at the ratification of the peace of Vervins for the duke of Savoy, ii. 279.
Bouc. (La-Tour-de) A fort purchaſed by Henry IV. from the duke of Mercœur, iv. 210.
Boucalt. Preſident of the court of aides in Montpellier, iv. 65.
Bouchage. (Count of) See *Joyeuſe.* (Henry de)
Bouchavane. (N. de Bayancourt de) A proteſtant lord, i. 24. Charles IX. pardons him, 32.
Bouchier. Treaſurer of the Baſtile, vi. 100.
Bouillon. (Principality of) given to the duke of Bouillon by his wife, ii. 84. See *Bouillon.* (duke of), *Bouillon.* (ducheſs of), *Sedan.* Bouillon, upon this account, claims a right to precede the dukes and peers of France, but is not regarded, iv. 356.
-------- (Charlotte de La-Mark, ducheſs of). Marries the viſcount of Turenne; political reaſons for this match, i. 223. Her death; the duke of Bouillon informs Henry of it, ii. 84. His opinion of her will, 91.
-------- (William-Robert de La-Mark, duke of) See *Mark.* (La-)
-------- (Henry de La-Tour d'Auvergne, viſcount of Turenne, duke of). Enters into the party of the king of Navarre, i. 52. His hatred of Sully, ib. Is challenged to fight by the prince of Condé, 61. He fights with him, 65. With Duras, ib. Reflections upon this duel, ib. He diſconcerts the deſigns of the prince of Condé, 73. Is taken priſoner before Cambray, 82. Forms a project for eſtabliſhing a proteſtant republic in France, 102. His character. Commands a body of troops in Guyenne, 116. His troops behave ill in the battle of Coutras, 141. His deſigns after this battle, 145. He fails in his attempt upon Sarlat, 149. Takes Caſtillon, ib. Deſigns to diſmember the monarchy, 159. Raiſes the German

horſe, 223. Marries mademoiſelle de Bouillon, ib. Political reaſons for this marriage, 224. See *Mark.* (La-). Henry IV. uſes the foreign forces brought by him at the ſiege of Rouen, 226. Raiſes a mutiny amongſt the German forces, 228. Prevents the purſuit of the duke of Parma, after he had paſſed the Seine, 258. Takes Dun and Stenai, and defeats the ſieur de la Guerche, 263. His ingratitude to Henry IV. ii. 83. Informs the king of the death of his wife, 84. Motives which induced Henry to ſend Sully to him, 85. He endeavours to entrap Sully in a converſation they have together, 87. His intrigues and political projects, 88. His character and maxims ib. Refuſes to let Sully peruſe the ducheſs's will, 91. Opinion upon the donations in it, 92. His deſigns in adviſing a war againſt Spain, 117. Commands the forces in Picardie, 125. His jealouſy of the duke of Nevers the occaſion of the misfortunes of this campaign, 130. His juſtification, ib. Defeated before Dourlens, 132. Different opinions upon his conduct, 133. Juſtifies himſelf badly to the king, 150. Sent ambaſſador to London, 151. The object of his intrigues during the ſiege of Amiens, 234, 235. Endeavours to raiſe an inſurrection among the proteſtants in Brittany, 260. Reproached by Henry IV. 265. The ſubtil article which he gets inſerted in the edict of Nantz, and the purpoſe of it, 347. His hatred to Sully upon account of ſuppreſſing this article, 351. He cabals with the lords of the kingdom, iii. 65--81. And with Spain, 85. His aſſociation with marſhal Biron and the count of Auvergne, 112. Deſign of arreſting him: he artfully eludes Henry's propoſal for continuing at court, 125, 126. His letters to the king and Sully upon this ſubject, 158, 159. He employs the elector Palatine to ſolicit Henry for him, but to no purpoſe, 197. Sully is charged to make the king of England acquainted with his practices, 215. Whom he wants to gain over to his intereſt, 243. Continuation of his intrigues at the court of the Palatinate, at London, and in the proteſtant aſſemblies in France, iv. 40. And with Leſdiguieres, 68. He fixes himſelf at the court of the elector Palatine, 74. His deputies excluded from the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, 254, *& ſeqq.* Sully renders ineffectual his endeavours to eſtabliſh a proteſtant republic in France, 262. Henry IV. diſconcerts them, by ſeizing his cities, 277. And deſigns likewiſe to take Sedan, 313. Artifices of the courtiers to ward off the blow, 315. Letters betwixt Sully and him upon this ſubject, 321, 322. All the courtiers intereſt themſelves for him, 324. Sully makes public his behaviour to the king, 325, *& ſeqq.* His hatred to this miniſter, 328. Other artifices to prevent Henry from approaching Sedan, ib. He at laſt ſubmits, and treats with Villeroi, 333. Articles of the ſurrender of Sedan, 334. The gracious reception he meets with from Henry, upon his paying homage, 338. He attends this prince to Paris, 340. Inſiſts upon precedency with the dukes and peers, 356. Henry reſtores Sedan to him, and withdraws his garriſon, v. 62. He renews his intrigues, 101. Henry IV. oppoſes his taking the title of ſovereign lord of Sedan, 223. He returns to France after the death of Henry the Great, and admitted into the council of Mary of Medicis, 326. He diſengages the prince of Condé from Sully, whom he ſeeks to ruin, 355, 356. Oppoſes

Sully's advice, with regard to the armament of Cleves, 360. Mutual ſervices between him and Conchini, vi. 3. A quarrel between him and Sully in full council, 8. Gratuities which he procures from the queen regent, 21. The hatred he diſcovers againſt Sully in the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, 108.

Bouillon. (Robert de La-Mark, duke of) See *Mark.* (La)

-------- (Ducheſs of). Is in Sedan when Henry IV. went to beſiege it, iv. 334.

-------- (Mademoiſelle de) Propoſed for a wife for the marquis of Roſny, v. 65. Henry IV. prevents Sully from accepting of it, 66.

Boulaye. (Charles Echalard de La-) Governor of Fontenai for the king's party, attends Henry IV. into Franche-Comte, ii. 141. His ſon marries mademoiſelle de Marais, daughter-in-law to Sully: preſents given and favours refuſed him by Henry IV. iv. 195.

Boulogne. A conference in this city between the Spaniards and the Engliſh, which produces nothing, ii. 283.

-------- (Counts of) Lords paramount of the earldom of St. Paul, with the counts d'Artois, iv. 143.

Bourbon. (Houſe of) Its great appanages, i. 8. Eſtates carried into this houſe by the houſe of Bethune, ii. 174. The alliance of the houſe of Rohan with it, 181. The neceſſity and means of uniting it with the houſe of Stuart, to humble the houſe of Auſtria, iii. 291. See *Political Deſign.* Re-union of all theſe eſtates in the houſe of France, v. 38. Henry IV. forbids Sully to marry his ſon into the houſe of Bourbon, 66. See *Roſny.*

Bourbon-Condé. See *Condé.*

Bourbon-Conté. See *Conté.*

Bourbon-France. See *France.*

Bourbon-Montpenſier. See *Montpenſier.*

Bourbon-Rubenpré. See *Rubenpré.*

Bourbon Soiſſon. See *Soiſſon.*

Bourbon. (Alexander de) Second ſon of Henry IV. and the ducheſs of Beaufort, legitimated, ii. 286. Is baptized as a ſon of France, and called Monſieur, ib. Is received into the order of the knights of Malta, iv. 144. See *Eſtrees, Henry* IV. *Sully.*

-------- (Antony de). King of Navarre. See *Navarre.*

-------- (Catherine-Henrietta de). Daughter of Henry IV. and the ducheſs of Beaufort, legitimated, ii. 358. See *Eſtrees.* Henry deſigns to marry her to the marquis of Roſny, v. 69. But afterwards marries her to the ſon of the Conſtable, 73. Preſents which he makes her, 192.

-------- (Charles, firſt cardinal de). Oppoſes the marriage of the prince of Navarre with Margaret de Valois, i. 27. See *Henry* IV. *Margaret.* The conference with Catherine of Medicis after the day of the barricadoes, 156. Is put in priſon at the death of the Guiſes; he reproaches Catherine of Medicis, ib. See *Guiſe, Medicis, Henry* III. Deſigned to be made king by the league: his death and character, 220. See *League.*

-------- (Charles, ſecond cardinal de). Deſigned by the third party to be made king, i. 284. He treats with Sully in favour of Henry IV. 303. His marriage with the infanta of Spain propoſed by the ſtates of Paris and rejected, 310. Endeavours the converſion

of Henry IV. 330. See *Abjuration*. Sully is deputed to him in Paris: their converſation, ii. 62, & *ſeq.* He ſupports the jeſuits in their proceſs with the univerſity and curates of Paris, 67. Letters betwixt him and Sully, 72. His death: regretted by Henry, 96. His abbeys: his character, ib. Henry IV. diſpoſes of his benefices, 97.

Bourbon. (Charles de). Natural ſon of Antony, king of Navarre, archbiſhop of Rouen, refuſes to marry Catherine, i. 343. Pleaſant converſation between him and Roquelaure upon this ſubject, 344. See *Bar, Madame, Roquelaure*.

-------- (Henry de). Duke of Verneuil. See *Verneuil*.

-------- (Madame Catherine de). See *Madame*.

-------- (Mademoiſelle de) Daughter of Henry I. prince of Condé: her death, ii. 355.

Bourdeaux. Letters from this city upon the perſon of Henry IV. i. 10. It ſhuts its gates upon this prince, 20.

Bourg-en-Breſſe. Taken by marſhal Biron in ſpite of himſelf, iii. 35, 36. Strength of its caſtle, 64.

Bourg. A manufacturer ſent for to Paris by Henry IV. iii. 341.

------ (Antoine-Du-, Maine-Du-). Defends Laon againſt Henry IV. Refuſes to deliver up the Baſtile, ii. 60. Laon ſurrendered, 94.

------ (N. Du-). The advice which he gives againſt Leſdiguieres, iv. 68. v. 54.

Bourges. Taken by the proteſtants, i. 21. Delivered up by La-Châtre to Henry IV. ii. 15. Sum paid for its reduction, 311.

Bourrouge. (Michael) See *Hallot* (Du-)

Bourſault. (N. de) A proteſtant gentleman, adviſed by John d'Albert to go to Paris, i. 19.

Bouvens. Governor of Bourg-en-Breſſe, he could not prevent its being ſurpriſed, although warned, iii. 36.

Brabant. Monſieur is declared duke of it, i. 85.

Braccnier. Deputed by the city of Metz to the duke of Sully againſt the jeſuits, iv. 346.

Brancaleon. Diſcovers the deſign of Barriere to aſſaſſinate Henry IV. ii. 9.

Brancas. See *Villars, Oiſe*.

Brandenbourg. (Albert Frederic, elector of) His right to the ſucceſſion of Cleves, v. 233. Divides this ſucceſſion with the palatine of Newbourg, 262. See *Cleves*.

---------- (John George de). A war and proceſs between him and the cardinal of Lorraine for the biſhopric of Straſbourg, terminated by Henry IV. iii. 187.

---------- (Marquis of). Henry's reception of him at Paris, iii. 121. He comes to ſee Henry at Metz, 187.

Brardis, Governor of Montmelian. Delivers up the caſtle to Henry IV. by capitulation, iii. 57. in which his wife has ſome ſhare, 55.

Braſſac. See *Rochebeaucourt*.

Braſſeuſe. A proteſtant officer, i. 124. Preſent at the battle of Arques, 108. And likewiſe at ivry, 197.

Breaute. (Charles de) Fights in the combat of twenty French againſt a like number of Flemiſh, iii. 70.

Bredenode. Deputy from the Flemings to Henry IV. vi. 92. See *Flanders, Political Design.*

Bremont. Mentioned in a letter from father Cotton, v. 149.

Bresse. Taken by Henry IV. iii. 36. Ceded wholly to the king by the duke of Savoy, 67. See *Treaty of Lyons.* Re-united to Burgundy, 69. Opposed by the parliament of Dijon, v. 41.

Brest. Besieged by the duke of Mercœur, ii. 94.

Bretauville. An officer of the king's household; much regretted by Henry IV. v. 57.

Bretoline. An Italian: a present made him by Henry IV. iv. 363.

Breton. A fort, furnished with provisions and ammunition by the prince of Orange, iv. 222.

Bretons. (Chevalier de) Agent and commissioner for the duke of Savoy in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, iii. 2--19.

Breton. (Hector Le-) Receives a gratuity from the king, iv. 209.

Breuil. (Du-) A protestant gentleman, escapes the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i. 30.

Brezolles. (N. de) A protestant, disaffected to Henry IV. i. 102.

Briare. (Canal of) Begun by Sully, iv. 112.

Bri-Comte-Robert. Henry IV. in danger of his life there, ii. 8.

Brienne. See *Lomenie.*

Brigantin. One of the faction, implores a pardon of Henry IV. iv. 280.

Brigneux. Governor of Bougency, delivers up this place to Henry IV. i. 161.

Brillan. A domestic of the prince of Condé, tore by four horses, i. 150.

Briquemaut. Deputed by the protestants to Charles IX. i. 16.

Brissac. (Charles de Cossé, count of) Governor of Angers, i. 106. His design of changing the form of government in France. The duke of Mercœur makes him governor of Paris, ii. 40. Betrays his party, 41. Made marshal of France, 258. The sum which he received for his treaty, 311. Called to the council upon the expedition to Sedan, iv. 324. v. 196. Named by Henry IV. one of the regents, 266. Mary of Medicis admits him into her council, 326--332.

Brisson. (Barnaby) President of the parliament of Paris, is hanged by the council of sixteen, i. 234. His eulogium, ib.

Brittany. Cities taken and military encounters in this province, ii. 94. Other military exploits on both sides, 181. The duke of Mercœur's claims upon this province, 248. Henry IV. resolves to go thither in person, ib. Object and consequence of this journey, 249. Sully causes plans to be taken of all its fortresses and coasts, v. 54.

Brix. (Saint) Catherine of Medicis has a conference there with Henry IV. i. 62. Other conferences at this place, 130. Henry in danger there, ib.

Broc. (Du-) Lieutenant de prevôt, allows L'Hôte to escape, iv. 32.

Brooke. (George) Conspires against the king of England, iii. 320. See *James* I.

Brossard. (Father) A jesuit. His reception from Henry IV. at Metz, iii. 187.

Broſſe. (La-) His prediction with regard to Henry IV. and Sully, i. 101--107. iii. 99.

Broſſe-Saveuſe. See *Saveuſe.*

Broſſier. (Martha) A pretended demoniac. Deſigns of thoſe who bring her in play. Henry's prudence in this affair, ii. 352. Particularities concerning her, 353.

Brovage. Taken by the proteſtants, i. 61. Retaken by the duke of Maïenne, 61. The prince of Condé fails in his attempt upon it, 108. Sully viſits this place in his journey into Poitou, iv. 72.

Brulart. See *Sillery* and *Berny.*

Brunſwick. (Duke of Lunenbourg) A treaty begun by him between Spain and England, iii. 242. Ambaſſador in London, 314. Henry's reception of his deputy, v. 223.--265.

Buda. (The Imperialiſts raiſe the ſiege of) iii. 182. See *Nevers,* (Duke of)

Budes. (Louiſa de) Wife of the conſtable Montmorency: her death, ii. 356.

Bufalo. (Cardinal) Pope's nuncio: he concludes with Sully a treaty of commerce between France and Spain, iv. 116. Is rewarded by Henry IV. 119. Sully informs him of Henry's political deſign, 133. His eſteem and praiſes of Sully, 213--217.

Buhy. (Peter de Mornay de) His plot to carry the princes to Saint-Germain-en-Laye, i. 43. He prejudices Henry IV. againſt Sully, 276.

Buildings, (The poſt of ſuperintendant of) and fortifications given to Sully. See *Fortifications.* Sully diſpoſes of this poſt to Fourcy, vi. 49.

-------- Erected or repaired by Henry IV. See *Edifices, Churches, Hoſpitals.*

Buiſſé. (La-) v. 184.

Bullion. (N. de) Employed in the affair of Orange and Blaccons, iv. 272. Sent by Sully into Dauphiny, 353, and to Rochelle, v. 15. Sent ambaſſador to Venice and Savoy, 265. Agent for the queen regent in the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, vi. 110.

Bully. The duke of Nevers badly ſeconds Henry IV. there, i. 238.

Buquoy. (Count of) Refuſes the alliance of the marquis of Cœuvres for mademoiſelle de Melun, iv. 198. Commands the Spaniſh forces in Flanders, 222.

Bure. Henry IV. defeats at that place a ſquadron of the duke of Guiſe, i. 237.

Burgaw. (Church of Auſtria, marquis of) His right to the ſucceſſion of Cleves, v. 234.

Burgundy. (kingdom of) The northern provinces deſirous of reſtoring it, iii. 234.

---------- The duke of Maïenne demands the ſovereignty of it from Spain, i. 280. which is agreed to, ii. 95. This province riſes againſt the duke of Maïenne, 96. The ſucceſs which the forces of Lorrain, of Henry IV. and of marſhal Biron have there, 122. Henry makes himſelf maſter of almoſt all Burgundy. Diſobedience of its parliament, upon account of La-Broſſe, v. 41.

---------- (Charles de) His daughter carries the earldom of Gueldres into the houſe of Auſtria, v. 232.

Burgundy. (Mary de). Brings the Low Countries to Maximilian: objections to the legality of his poſſeſſion, ib. See *Cleves.*

Buſſy D'Ambois. (Lewis de Clermont de) In diſgrace with Monſieur: his death, i. 53.

---------- (René de Clermont de). Wife of Balagny: dies of grief for the loſs of Cambray, ii. 146.

Butrick. Envoy from the elector Palatine to the aſſembly of proteſtants in France, i. 102.

Buzenval. (Paul Choart de) French ambaſſador in Holland, ii. 280. Communicates to Henry IV. the deſigns of the prince of Orange, iii. 82--195. The United Provinces' great regard for him, iv. 121. Writes the king particulars concerning the United Provinces, 368. Gives an account of his negotiations to Henry IV. 373. Continues to be of great uſe in the affairs of Flanders, v. 28. His death and eulogium, 33.

C.

Cabinet of ſtate. Henry IV. and Sully employ themſelves in compoſing it. Idea and object of this great and uſeful work, v. 167, *& ſeqq.*

Cabrieres. Governor of Cohors, i. 71.

Cadſand. (Iſland of) Taken by the prince of Orange, iv. 119.

Caen. Henry IV. viſits this place. He takes the government of it from Crevecœur, and confers it upon Bellefond, iii. 335.

Cahors. Taken by Henry IV. i. 66--70.

Caillaudiere. (La-) Sent to diſband the cavalry, iv. 283.

Calais. Acquired to France by the duke of Guiſe, i. 13. Beſieged by the Spaniards, ii. 143. And taken, notwithſtanding all the cares of Henry IV. 147. Particulars of this ſiege, ib. Henry's journey thither, and his motives for it, iii. 84. Another journey, 179.

------ (Port and paſſage of). Seized by Henry IV. i. 139.

Calatagirone. (Bonaventure de) Patriarch of Conſtantinople. Exerts himſelf ſucceſsfully for the peace of Vervins, ii. 249. Attempts to hinder Sully from being a commiſſioner in the affair of Saluces, but faiis, iii. 22.

Calderon. The offer which he made Henry IV. from Spain, i. 91.

Calignon. (N. de) Employed in the compoſition of the edict of Nantz, ii. 235. Henry oppoſes an article in that edict, which is obliged to be altered, 348. iii. 65. Admitted into the council held for the return of the jeſuits, iv. 5. As likewiſe into that for the proving of rents, 105.

Calumniators of the duke of Sully. See *Courtiers, Lords, Jeſuits.*

---------- (Anonymous) See *Cœuvres, Vendome.*

Calveyrac. (John de Sudrie de) Informs Henry IV. of the plots of the malecontents, iii. 114.

Cambray. The prince of Parma raiſes the ſiege, i. 82. Taken by the Spaniards, who drive out Balagny, ii. 143--146. Sum paid by Henry IV. for its reduction, 311.

Camord. Friend of the duke of Sully, ii. 128.

Campagnac. (Madame de) Sully refides at her houſe during the infection at Roſny, i. 128.
Campo. (Alonſo de) Defeated by the forces of queen Elizabeth in Ireland, iii. 118.
Canada. A colony eſtabliſhed in oppoſition to the advice of Sully, iii. 348.
Canals for the joining of rivers, very uſeful, iv. 103. Of Brevie. See *Brevie, Seine, Loire, Saone.* Sully diſpoſes of the poſt of hereditary maſter of the canals and navigation of rivers, vi. 49.
Canaye Philip) De-Freſny. Ambaſſador at Venice, iii. 103. iv. 137. See *Griſons.* Gives intelligence of the difference of the Venetians and Paul V. 341, 342. Inſtructions which he gives Sully in this affair, 344. Ambaſſador to Germany, vi. 92.
Caniſe. Taken by the knights of Malta, iii. 120.
Caniſy. (N. de) Gratuities granted him by Henry IV. iv. 210. Regretted by Henry, v. 57.
Cantons. (Swiſs) See *Switzerland, Griſons.*
Canterbury. Sully's reception in this city by the nobility, iii. 222. The advice of a canon to him, ib. Henry IV's opinion of this advice, 259.
Capelle. (La-) Beſieged and taken by the Spaniards, ii. 60. Retaken, 130--143.
Capet. (King of) Sully's opinion of this race, vi. 61. See *France.* (Kings of)
Capuchins. Deputed by the Pariſians to Henry III. at Chartres, i. 155. Accuſed of endeavouring to aſſaſſinate Henry IV. ii. 8. They embroil the proteſtants with the catholics and Griſons, iv. 136.
---------- Inſtituted, iv. 136.
Carcaſſonne. (Biſhop) Money due to him by Henry IV. v. 57.
Carces. (Gaſpard de Pon evez, count of) His party in Provence, i. 269. Gives advice of the deſigns of the duke of Savoy, iii. 17.
Cardinals. Promotion of French cardinals, ii. 284. Sent to the conclave after the death of Clement VIII. They act well for France, iv. 215. Promotion of 1606, 345.
Carl-Paul. Envoy from the elector Palatine to the duke of Sully, v. 127.
Carlat. The reſidence of queen Margaret in this caſtle, which Henry IV. cauſes to be demoliſhed, iv. 292.
Carlos. (Don) Prince of Spain. Philip II. cauſes him to be executed, i. 18. Motives of this action, ii. 335.
Carlovingiens. (Kings) Sully's opinion of this race, vi. 60. See *France.* (Kings of)
Carmelites. (Barefoot) Eſtabliſhed in France, iii. 337.
Carnavalet. (Madame de) Gives good advice to Henry IV. i. 47.
Caron. (Le) Agent for the United Provinces at London, iv. 126.
Carrouge. See *Le-Veneur.*
Caſaubon. Henry ſends for and fixes him at Paris, ii. 282.
Caſaux. (Charles) His party in Provence, i. 269. Is killed in endeavouring to deliver up Marſeilles to the Spaniards, ii. 110.
Ciſe. (La-) A proteſtant. His intrigues during the ſiege of Amiens, ii. 234.

Casimir. (The prince) Enters France with an army, i. 47. Is bribed to depart. See *Medicis, Monsieur's peace.* Cities given in pledge to him by the prince of Condé, 72.

Castel-Jaloux. A protestant town, i. 60.

Castinet. Takes Bourg-en-Bresse, though opposed by marshal Biron, iii. 36.

Castets. Marshal de Matignon obliged to raise the siege of this place, i. 115.

Castile. (Kings of) See *Ferdinand, Isabel.*

------ (Constable of) See *Velasque.*

Castille. Receiver-general of the clergy, is accused of a misdemeanor, iv. 101. Is made controller-general after the death of Henry IV. Sully complains of him, v. 327.

Castillon. Taken by the duke of Maïenne, and retaken by the duke of Bouillon, i. 149.

Cateau-Cambresis. The duke of Anjou takes this place by storm, i. 82.

Catelet. (Le-) Taken by the Spaniards, ii. 130--143.

Catherine of Medicis. See *Medicis.*

-------- (Madame) See *Madame.*

-------- (Fort de Saint-) Attacked improperly at the siege of Rouen, i. 227. See *Biron.* Sully is received there as he went to treat with admiral Villars, ii. 16.

-------- (Fort de Saint-) In Savoy. Besieged and taken by Sully, iii. 59. Demolished at the entreaty of the republic of Geneva, 61.

Catholic religion. See *Religion.*

Catholics of the party of Henry IV. the most powerful in his council, i. 212. Design to revolt at the siege of Rouen: their views, 231, 232. Their opposition to the protestants occasion the raising this siege, 257. See *Biron, Bouillon, Protestants.* Refuse to pursue the prince of Parma, 259. Oblige Henry IV. to refuse the offers of the League, 304. The wise conduct of Henry IV. with regard to them, ii. 7. Their jealousy of Sully, 10. They murmur at his embassy to London, iii. 202. The catholic power in Europe, compared with that of the protestants, and the power of each party, 291, 292. See *Political Design, James.* Their intrigues against Henry IV. in favour of Spain. See *League, Pope, Spain, Jesuits.*

Cavagne. (Arnaud de) Deputed by the protestants to Charles IX. i. 16.

Caudebec. Surrendered to the prince of Parma, and re-taken by Henry IV. i. 252.

Caumartin. (Lewis Le Fevre de) Keeper of the seals. Of great service to Henry IV. in those districts in which he is sent, ii. 191. Appointed to assist at the conference at Boulogne, 283. To treat with the Swiss ambassadors, iii. 176. Called to the council upon the affair of the jesuits, iv. 6. Commissioner in the affair of the purchase of the earldom of Saint-Paul, 221. Prepossesses the landgrave of Hesse against the duke of Bouillon, 256. v. 45. His good management in the distribution of the pay to the Swiss Cantons, 52. He serves the prince d'Epenoi with the States-general, 220. Elogium of his negotiations in Switzerland, and with the Grisons, 229. Appointed ambassador to Switzerland, 265. Admitted into the council of the queen regent, 326.

Caumont. (Francis Nompar de) Killed at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 32.
-------- (James Nompar de). See *Epernon* (Duke of).
-------- A proteſtant city, v. 105.
Cauſſade. An eſtate purchaſed by Sully, vi. 50.
-------- See *Megrin* (Saint).
Cauſſe. One of the diſaffected, implores pardon of Henry, iv. 280.
Caylus. (James de Lewis de) A favourite of Henry III. ii. 98.
Cazal. (Alphonſo) Deputy from Spain to the Griſon league at Coire, but does not ſucceed, iv. 138.
Cecil. (Robert) Ambaſſador from queen Elizabeth to Henry IV. His converſation with this prince, ii. 260.
----- (William). Secretary of ſtate to queen Elizabeth, ii. 260. His character, iii. 233. Viſits the duke of Sully: and his opinion of him, 237. His artifice to procure the favour of king James, 256. See *James.* Conference between him, the Engliſh counſellors, and Sully, in which he endeavours to ſurpriſe and deceive him, 273. He is deputed to the count of Aremberg, 275. His attachment to Spain, 276. Diſcovers himſelf always againſt the Dutch, 281. His conference with Sully and the deputies from the United Provinces, in which he exerts all the craft of a ſtateſman, ib. *& ſeqq.* And his oppoſition to giving ſuccour to the States-general, 302. The king of England diſconcerted with his conduct, 300. He continues to aſſiſt the Spaniſh faction, 319. At laſt declares himſelf, againſt his will, for a treaty of alliance with France, 321.
Cenſors. A ſcheme for eſtabliſhing them in France for the puniſhment of diſſoluteneſs and prodigality, v. 177.
Cercotte. Sully has a meeting at this place with queen Margaret: the ſubject of their converſation, iv. 241.
Chaalons. Aſſembly of the League, and conferences in this city. See *League,* Henry III. *Medicis, Guiſe.*
Chace. (The) Paſſion of Henry IV. and king James I. for this exerciſe. See *Henry* IV. *James* I. Sums laid out in it by Henry IV. iii. 347. Sully endeavours to give him a diſguſt to it, 364.
Chalandeau. A proteſtant officer, i. 124.
Chalange. An enemy and calumniator of Sully, iv. 182.
Chaligny. (Henry of Lorrain, counſellor of) Kills Chicot, who had made him priſoner, i. 100. ii. 16.
Chalon-ſur-Maine. Henry IV. narrowly eſcapes being aſſaſſinated there, ii. 8.
Charart. (John and Anthony de St.) Employed by the League in Languedoc and Limoſin, and afterwards by Henry IV. ii. 182.
Chamber of Accounts. Guilty of ſome diſreſpect to Henry IV. ii. 242. Abuſes in it corrected by the duke of Sully, 313. Oppoſes the eſtabliſhment of a new council, iv. 105. Sully complains of that chamber, and ſubjects it to new regulations, v. 42. Other regulations made in this chamber, 117.
Chamber of Juſtice. Eſtabliſhed by Henry IV. ii. 225. Another in the year 1601, and called the Royal Chamber, iii. 77. Another in 1604, iv. 105. Another in 1607, contrary to Sully's advice, v. 51. Reflections and reaſonings of this miniſter upon theſe eſtabliſhments, iii. 77. v. 50, 51.

Chambert, or *Chamberet*. One of the chief royaliſts in Languedoc, ii. 182. Contributes to the taking of Bourg, iii. 35.
Chambery. Henry IV. takes this city and makes entertainments in it, iii. 37.
Chambrai. (N. de) Preſent at the battle of Ivry, i. 197.
Chamier. A proteſtant miniſter, behaves diſreſpectfully to the conſtable, v. 14.
Chamnite. (Count of) Governor of Franche-Comte: aſſiſts the prince of Joinville and other malecontents, iii. 156.
Champaign. Revolts againſt the duke of Guiſe, ii. 104. See *Rheims*. The Spaniſh uſurpation upon this frontier proved by Sully, who obliges them to make reſtitution, v. 116.
Champigny. A commiſſioner in Orleans and Touraine, ii. 326.
Champs. (Des) One of Henry IV's houſhold, i. 73.
Chancellors of France. L'Hôpital, Birague, Chiverny, Bellievre, Sillery. See each of theſe names.
Changer. (Father) A jeſuit, v. 149.
Chanlivaut. (René Viau de) Attends Henry IV. to Aumale, i. 236.
Chantelerie. (La) Is defeated endeavouring to ſuccour Noyon, i. 217.
Chanteloup. (N. de) One of Sully's priſoners at the battle of Ivry, i. 195.
Chantilly. The ordinary reſidence of Henry IV. in the ſpring, iv. 20--39--174. v. 3.
Chapelle-Biron. (Charles de Charbonniere de La) One of the officers of the League, ii. 182. Joins the malecontents, iv. 242--278.
Charbonnieres. Sully lays ſiege to it, notwithſtanding the oppoſition of the courtiers: takes it with great trouble; and prevents it from being plundered, iii. 40.
Charite. (La) A proteſtant city, i. 3.
Charity. (Chriſtian) Given by Henry IV. for a royal hoſpital for diſabled ſoldiers, iv. 109.
Charlemaign. Prevents the eſtabliſhment of too many religious houſes in France, iv. 144. Sully's judgment concerning his reign, v. 145. vi. 59.
Charles Martel. Sully's opinion of this king, vi. 59.
Charles V. King of France: his reign propoſed as a model of good government, iv. 111. He ſubmits to the authority of the ſtates of the kingdom, v. 125. Remarks on this reign, vi. 63.
Charles VI. King of France: his reign called by Sully the tomb of laws and manners, v. 126.
Charles VII. King of France. The taille, in his reign, becomes a ſettled tax, v. 126. Remarks on his reign, 145--vi. 63.
Charles VIII. his reign the ſource of the male-adminiſtration of the finances, ii. 97. The value of the taille in his reign, v. 126.
Charles IX. King of France: his affection for Henry IV. i. 11. Divides his favours amongſt the princes of the blood, the Guiſes, and the conſtable, 13. The deep diſſimulation he makes uſe of to deſtroy the proteſtants, 15. An inſtance of his hatred to the duke of Guiſe, 16. He draws the proteſtants to Paris, 18. Eſcapes being taken by them at Maux, 21. He careſſes the chiefs of the proteſtants. See *Coligny*, *Proteſtants*. The ſecurity with which he inſpires them, 24. Reflections upon his behaviour to Coligny, 25.

The maſſacre of St. Bartholomew: his ſeverity to the king of Navarre, and the prince of Condé, 35. His remorſe for the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew: diſavows it, 38. Inſtances of his cruelty, 39. Favours the proteſtants out of hatred to his mother, whom he ſuſpects of having poiſoned him, 42. The grief he expreſſes at his death for the maſſacre: his death: good and bad qualities, 45. His treaty of commerce with the Engliſh diſadvantageous to France, iii. 214. Value of the taille in his reign, v. 126.

Charles IV. (Emperor) Aſſiſts the houſe of La-Mark in taking poſſeſſion of the duchy of Cleves, v. 231. See *Cleves*.

Charles V. A bon-mot of his upon France, i. 306. His ambition: his project: his retreat, ii. 329. He orders that the kingdom of Navarre ſhould be reſtored to the houſe of Albert, 331. See *Philip* II. An abridgement of his life: his ſcheme of univerſal monarchy, 329, 330. Sully's opinion of this prince, v. 145. His diſſipations of the eſtates of Cleves, 235. His oppreſſion of the elector of Saxony and the German princes, 240. His engagements with the electors, vi. 82.

Charny. (Eleanor de Chabot, count of) Saves the proteſtants in his government during the maſſacre, i. 39.

Charoſt. See *Bethune*.

Charron. (Le) Clerk to the council of finances, ii. 197.

Chartres. Henry IV. retires there after the day of the barricades: what happened to him there, i. 150. Taken by the two kings, 155. Taken by Châtillon, 214. Henry IV. crowned here, ii. 19.

-------- (John de Ferriere, viſcount of) Eſcapes the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30. Preſent at the battle of Arques, 180.

-------- (Pregent de La-Fin, vidame de) Made uſe of to prevail upon La-Fin, his uncle, to come to Fontainebleau, iii. 115.

Chaſtes. (Aymar de) Governor of Dieppe, promiſes to receive Henry in it, i. 179. Employed in the affair of the prohibition of commerce with Spain, iv. 114. Grants made by Henry IV. to his children, 209.

Chataigneraye. (John de Vivonne, de La) Priſoner to Sully at the battle of Ivry, i. 195. Account of his death, 197.

Chateau Gay. (Madame de) Miſtreſs of the count of Auvergne, iv. 83.

Chateauneuf, or *Paſſava*. Taken and demoliſhed by the knights of Malta, iii. 120.

Chateauneuf. (René de St. Marthe, de) One of the principal royaliſts in Languedoc, ii. 182. Implores pardon for marſhal Biron, iii. 147.

Chateauneuf L'Aubepine. See *Aubepine*.

Chateaupers. (Francis Hurault de) Firſt huſband of the ducheſs of Sully, i. 274. vi. 129.

---------- (Madame de) See *Sully* (Ducheſs of).

Chateau-Thierry. Given to D'Inchy by Monſieur, i. 84. This prince dies there, 93.

Chateauvieux. (Joachim de) Captain of the guards, takes an oath of fidelity to Henry IV. after the death of Henry III. i. 174. One of the diſaffected catholics during the ſiege of Rouen, 232. Sent by Mary of Medicis to queen Margaret, iv. 293. v. 26. Appointed one

one of the council of the regent, vi. 21. Made governor of the Baſtile, 34.

Chatel. (John) Wounds Henry IV. with a knife, ii. 119. Particulars relating to his wicked attempt, tryal, and death, 120, 121.

Chatelet. (Le) An eſtate purchaſed by Sully, vi. 48--119.

Châtelleraut. Taken by Henry IV. i. 162. The general aſſembly of the proteſtants held in this city. Reciprocal deſigns of Henry IV. and the proteſtants. Artifice of the latter. Subjects which ought to have been treated, iv. 229. Motives for ſending the duke of Sully there, 232. The public inſtructions which he received, 234. His private inſtructions, 238. His advice againſt the aſſembly. See *Margaret, Rodelle.* Letters and artifices of the duke of Bouillon to make an inſurrection among the proteſtant party, 243. The courage and wiſdom of Sully in declaring the king's intentions, 247. He is not appointed preſident, 252. An arrogant and ſeditious letter to Bouillon intercepted, 253. Sully renders ineffectual the cabals of the malecontents, 261. He makes the memorial for a proteſtant republic to be rejected, 262, 263. Affairs relating to the deputies-general terminated by Sully to the king's ſatisfaction, 264. As likewiſe thoſe relating to the cautionary towns, 269. His bold and wiſe ſpeech at the cloſing of the aſſembly, 274. Another aſſembly when the proteſtants ſupport Sully againſt the court and the queen-regent, vi. 108. Public works of Sully in this city, 131.

Chatellier. (Father) A jeſuit: Henry's reception of him at Metz, iii. 187.

Chatillon. (N. de) Sully hinders his deputies from being admitted into the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, and into the proteſtant ſynods, iv. 251.

-------- An engineer, ſupports the advice of Sully for beſieging Sedan, iv. 324. He makes plans of the frontiers of Champaign, v. 116.

Chatre. (Claude de La) Commands the forces of the League at the ſiege of Rouen, i. 235. Created marſhal of France by the League, 303. Delivers up Orleans and Bourges to Henry IV. ii. 15. Sum of money received by him for his treaty, 311. Conſulted by Sully upon the regulations for Berry, v. 45. Henry's letters to him upon the affair of Orleans, 148. Commands the army ſent to the ſiege of Juliers, 360.

Chauſaille and his wife. Citizens of Paris, ſponſors for the marquis of Roſny, who was born during the perſecution, i. 137.

Chaumont. See *Guitry.*

--------- (N. de) One of the courtiers who lived familiarly with Henry IV. iv. 368.

--------- (St.) Lieutenant of the king in Lyonnois, makes head there againſt d'Alincourt, vi. 25.

Chaux. (Viſcount of) His offers to Henry IV. on the part of Spain, i. 91. ii. 5.

Chef-Boutonne. A French officer, goes into the ſervice of the archduke, iv. 223.

Chelles. Henry IV. commits an error in chuſing this poſt, i. 210.

Chene. (Le) An officer in the army of Henry IV. i. 124.

Cheſy. (The abbot of) Concerned in the converſion of Henry IV. i. 317.

Chevalerie. (Order of) Designed to be instituted by Henry IV. v. 169.
---------- (La) This name intended to be assumed by Sully upon his taking upon him the government of the Bastile, iii. 117.
Chicot. The trick which he plays the marshal Lavardin, i. 100. His character and bon-mots, ib.
Childerick. The reasons of his being dethroned, v. 124.
Chilperic. Assassinated by Bodillon, v. 124.
Chisay. Taken by Henry IV. 122. Two remarkable accidents which happened at this siege, ib.
Chiverny. (Henry Hurault of) Attends Henry IV. into Burgundy, ii. 141.
Chiverny, or *Cheverny.* (Philip Hurault of) Chancellor, ii. 66. The cognizance of the treaty of the duke of Guise taken from him by Henry IV. 102. Enters into the new council of the finances, 114. Favours the designs of the duchess of Beaufort, 124--246. Employed in the articles of pacification with the protestants, 248. Assists the duchess of Beaufort in her endeavours to be made queen, 286. Sum of money received by him for his treaty, 311. His death, 354.
Choart. See *Buzenval.*
Choirin. Employed by Henry IV. to discover the secrets of the League, i. 283.
Choiseul. See *Craftin.*
Chouppes. (Peter de) Preserved at the massacre of Paris, i. 30. Comes to the assistance of Henry IV. at Cahors, 70.
Church. One besieged by Henry IV. i. 58. Churches built and repaired by this prince, v. 39.
Church of England. Conferences between them and the puritans, iv. 125.
Clairvant. (Claude-Antoine de Vienne de) Solicits forces in Germany for Henry IV. i. 121. Partly the cause of the defeat at Auneau, 148. See *German horse, Swiss.*
Clan. (St. German of) One of the protestant chiefs, enemy to Henry IV. i. 101. His plots during the siege of Amiens, ii. 234. Sides with the duke of Bouillon against Henry and Sully, iv. 72. Endeavours to raise an insurrection in the assembly at Châtelleraut, 243--253. Supports the project of a protestant republic in France, 262. Sully excludes him from the general deputation, 267. Attempts to divert Henry from the enterprize upon Sedan, 316. Employed by Sully in the affair of Metz against the jesuits, 346. Quarrel between this family and the family of La-Force, v. 98.
Clarençal. (Madame de) Employed in the affair of Adrienne de Fresne, iv. 349. See *Cotton.*
Clavelle. (La) Attached to the queen, iv. 370. His obligations to Sully, and his counsel to him, vi. 37.
Clausembourg. Taken by the Imperialists, iii. 120. See *Baste.*
Claye. A skirmish at this place, i. 208.
Clement. (James) A dominican friar: kills Henry III. i. 171. Particulars relating to this action, ib.
------- VII. His conduct censured by Sully, iv. 343.
------- VIII. Makes difficulties in receiving the abjuration of Henry IV. and granting his absolution, ii. 1. Elogium upon this pope, 64.

Intereſts himſelf for the jeſuits in their proceſs againſt the univerſity, 67. Grants abſolution to Henry IV. the conditions, 144. Endeavours to procure a general peace, 249. Inclined to the diſſolution of the marriage of Henry IV. with queen Margaret, 267. Refuſes a diſpenſation for the marriage of Madame with the duke of Bar, ii. 330, *& ſeqq.* Reſolves not to concern himſelf in the affair of the marquiſate of Saluces, iii. 2. Agrees to Henry's marriage with Mary of Medicis, 34. Henry's deference for him in the treaty of Savoy, 69. Preſents made to his chamberlain, 176. Henry ſatisfied him with regard to his armaments, 194. Diſturbances in England by his endeavouring to eſtabliſh an archprieſt there, 270. Reciprocal civilities between him and the king of England, 271, 272. Intereſts himſelf for the recal of the jeſuits into France: complains of the ſynod of Gap: eſtabliſhes many religious orders, 337, *et ſeqq.* Promotion of cardinals, in which he has regard to the recommendation of the duke of Sully, iv. 39. See *Du-Perron, Olivary.* His moderation to the proteſtants praiſed by Sully, 74. He exerts himſelf for the concluſion of the treaty of commerce with Spain, 115. Favours the deſigns of Henry againſt Spain, 133. His death, 212, 213. Particulars of his death and character: his affection for Sully, ib.

Clergy of France. In the ſtates of Paris unite with Spain, in favour of the duke of Guiſe, againſt Henry IV. i. 311. Their hatred to this prince, 313. See *League.*

---------- Aſſembly of, in 1598, ii. 284. Oppoſe the marriage of the princeſs Catherine with the duke of Bar, 339, *et ſeqq.* As likewiſe the regiſtration of the edict of Nantz, and make alterations in it, 346. Declare themſelves againſt the jeſuits, iv. 20. They deſire the publication of the council of Trente, but denied them by Henry IV. 351. Project for their reformation by Henry, v. 169. See *Cabinet of State.*

Clermont. Taken by Henry IV. i. 210. Danger of madame de Liancourt in her journey to this place, 163, 164.

-------- *(d'Amboiſe).* See *Amboiſe.*

-------- *(Reſnel).* See *Reſnel.*

-------- *(Tonnerre).* See *Tonnerre.*

-------- (N. de). Commands the artillery at the battle of Coutras, i. 140. Adviſes the amendment of the edict of Nantz, ii. 351. Sent to Sully by the prince of Condé, v. 348.

Cleves. (Ducheſs of) Motives to undertake a war with the houſe of Auſtria, iii. 296. See *Political deſign.* Death of its laſt duke. See *Cleves.* (William, duke of). Account of this principality: of the princes and princeſſes of this name, v. 231, *& ſeqq.* The German princes who have claim to it, meet at Hall, and ſend a deputation to Henry IV. 247--251. Henry begins to march his troops to this place, 259. An extraordinary council held by Mary of Medicis upon this occaſion, 334. See *Sully.* Sends an army to the ſiege of Juliers, 360. Concluſion of this affair, 362. Diverſion of its ſucceſſion, ib. See *Henry* IV. *Sully, Medicis,* (Mary of) *Rodolph, Brandenbourg, Neubourg, Leopold.*

------ (Ann of). Right of Philip Lewis, count palatine of Neubourg, by her, to this ſucceſſion, v. 233.

Cleves. (Catherine of). See *Guiſe* (Ducheſs of).
------ (John William, duke of). His death: his children: his alliances: ſeveral princes claim a right to his ſucceſſion, v. 231.
------ (John William of) Son to the former. By his death, his ſiſters become his heirs, v. 232.
------ (Madeleine of). Right of Joho, count palatine de Deux Ponts, to the ſucceſſion of Cleves by this lady, v. 234.
------ (Mary of). Married to Henry I. prince of Condé, i. 16.
------ (Mary-Eleanor of). Right of Albert-Frederick of Brandenbourg to the ſucceſſion of Cleves by her, v. 233.
------ (Sybile of) Right of Charles of Auſtria, by her, to the ſucceſſion of Cleves, v. 235.
Clielle. (La) Yeoman of the mouth to Henry IV. iv. 365.
Clotaire I. and II. Sully's opinion of theſe kings. See *Moravingiens* (Race of).
Cloud. (Saint) Henry III. aſſaſſinated at this place, i. 171.
Clovis. Sully's opinion of this king, v. 145. vi. 39--64.
Cluſeau. (Nicholas Blanchard de) Killed at the taking of Ham, ii. 131.
Coaſts of France. Sully cauſes plans to be drawn of them, v. 116.
Cobham. (Lord) Viſits Sully at Dover, iii. 90. One of the diſaffected party in London, 233. His advice to Sully, 260. Conſpires againſt king James I. 320.
Cockefilet. (Andrew de). See *Vaucelas.*
--------- (Rachael de). See *Sully* (Ducheſs of).
Coconnas. (Annibal de) Beheaded by order of Catherine of Medicis, i. 43.
Coeme. (Jean de) Married to the prince of Conti, iii. 703. See *Montaſſie.*
Coeſnard. Sent commiſſioner unto Poitou, ii. 326.
Cœur. (Bartholomew) Ambaſſador from the grand ſignior, iii. 86.
Cœuvres. (Francis Annibal d'Eſtrees, marquis of) Reaſons for his hatred to the duke of Sully, iv. 180. The relations of mademoiſelle de Melun refuſe her in marriage to him, 198.
Cognac. One of the cautionary towns granted to the proteſtants, i. 4. A conference held in it between Catherine of Medicis and Henry IV. 130.
Coire. The Griſon league aſſemble at this place, iv. 138. Its biſhop favours the Spaniſh party, v. 34.
Colange. A commiſſioner in Languedoc, v. 118.
Colas. Senechal of Monthmar defends La-Fere againſt Henry IV. ii. 155.
Coligny. (Gaſpard de Châtillon, admiral of) Commands the proteſtant forces at Arnai le-Duc, i. 3. Declared innocent of the murder of the duke of Guiſe, 12. See *Guiſe, Poltrot.* Reſides at Rochelle, after the peace 1570, 15. Marries the counteſs of Entremont: magnificent offers made to him by the court, 17. See *Charles* IX. *Medicis.* Appointed Viceroy in the Low Countries: other favours conferred upon him by Charles IX. ib. Commands the proteſtants at the enterpriſe upon Meaux, 21. Wounded by Maurevert, 25. Account of the proceedings of Charles IX. with regard to him, ib. Oppoſes the advice given him to leave Paris, 30. His talents and

and great qualities: killed at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, 31.

Coligny-Châtillon (Charles de). See *Andelot* (de).

---------- (Francis de). Son to the admiral, ſaves himſelf at Geneva at the maſſacre of Paris, i. 35. His advice upon the entry of the foreign forces into France not followed, 123. Employed in the defence of Tours, 166. Gains the battle of Saveuſe, 168. Carries the ſuburbs of St. Germain, 185. Takes Chartres, 214. His death, ib. His elogium, ib.

---------- (Henry de). Grandſon of the admiral: killed at the ſiege of Oſtend: his great qualities: regretted by Sully, but not by Henry IV. iii. 96.

---------- (Odet de). Cardinal of Châtillon, i. 27. Particulars relating to his life and death, ib.

College. (Royal) Intended to be founded by Henry IV. v. 169. See *Cabinet of State.* Reflections upon colleges, and the inſtruction fit to be taught in them, ib.

Colombe. (N. de Saint) A Catholic officer of Henry IV's party, i. 52.

Colombieres. (Francis de Briegueville of) A proteſtant, i. 24. Killed at the maſſacre of Paris, 32.

Colony. Sent to the Eaſt-Indies, iii. 348.

Colvilly. Writes againſt king James I. and diſapproved of by the Pope, iii. 272.

Coman, (Jacqueline Le-Voyer de) or *Diſcoman.* Informs Henry IV. of a conſpiracy againſt him, v. 274. Particulars concerning his law-ſuit, and different opinions upon the whole of that affair, *ib. & ſeqq.*

Combaut. Sully's ſeverity to him, iii. 227.

Combrailles. Sully viſits his eſtates there, i. 213.

Coma. A fort built upon this lake by the Spaniards: produces conteſts between them and the Griſons, iv. 134, *et ſeqq.* See *Fuentes, Griſons.*

Comedians. (Italian) Brought into France by Henry IV. v. 63.

Comet in 1607. Superſtitious application of this comet to the children of France, v. 60.

Commene. (Alexis) Emperor of Conſtantinople, i. 6.

Commerce. Ruined by war, ii. 310. Abuſes in it corrected by Henry IV. and the duke of Sully, iii. 73, 74. The treaty of commerce between Charles IX. and Elizabeth diſadvantageous to France, 214. Edicts deſtructive to commerce granted by Henry IV. againſt the advice of Sully, 327. Maxims of commerce, 348. Promoted by the joining of rivers and making of public roads, iv. 103. See *Rivers, Roads.* Commerce with Spain prohibited, 107. Sequel of this affair, 112. Eſtabliſhed by a treaty, 115. See *Spain, Sully, Bufalo.* Projects for the improvement of commerce, v. 171. See *Cabinet of State.*

Commercy. (Lordſhip of) Unjuſtly uſurped by the Spaniards and the duke of Lorrain; and reſtored, v. 116.

Commynes. See *Sobolle.*

Commiſſioners. Sent into the provinces: regulations given them by Sully, v. 42.

Compromise. For the marquisate of Saluces, in the hands of the pope, iii. 1.

Comptants. Mary of Medicis continues the use of them notwithstanding the opposition of Sully: disputes on this subject betwixt him and Puget, vi. 5.

Conan, Conas, or *Conac.* (Baron of) Defeated with the garrison of Soissons, ii. 122.

Conchine, or *Concini.* Attends Mary of Medicis into France, iii. 69. Gives her bad counsel, iv. 50. Henry's hatred to him: the queen makes him marry Leonora Galigai, and opposes the design of sending him back to Italy: abuses the confidence she puts in him: his ambition, v. 83, 84. Secret motives for the jealousy with which he inspires her against the king: his intrigues with the court of Spain against Henry IV. 155. Henry refuses to send him ambassador into Florence, 227. Endeavours to ruin Sully after the death of the king, 321. Governs the queen regent, 325. Joins himself with the count of Soissons, 331. His quarrels and reconciliation with the count of Soissons, 333. Advises an alliance with Spain, 341. Receives Sully's kind offers with disdain. See *Arnaud,* 346. Particular circumstances relating to his life and death, 343. The queen regent publickly declares him her favourite, 359. Opposes the advice of Sully in the affair of Cleves, 360. He treats with the duke of Bouillon for the post of first gentleman of the bed-chamber, vi. 3. Supports the demands of the count of Soissons, 4. Advises the queen regent to continue the comptants, ib. Sully reproaches him for fraudulently using the deceased king's seal, 7. He quarrels with the nobility, 10. Dares not attempt to banish Sully immediately, 13. Visits him: their conversation, 18. Posts and dignities conferred upon him by the queen regent, 21. Joins himself with Villeroi and Alincourt against Sully in the affair of Lyons, 25.

--- A house belonging to the bishop of Evreux, where Sully treats with Medavy, ii. 27.

--- (Charlotte-Margaret de Montmorency, princess of). See *Montmorency.*

------ (Charlotte-Catherine de La-Trémouille, princess of). See *Trémouille* (Charlotte-Catherine de La).

------ (Henry I. de Bourbon, prince of). Present at the encounter of Arnai-le-Duc, i. 3. Marries Mary of Cleves, 17. Charles IX. uses injurious language to him at the massacre of St. Bartholomew: obliges him to go to mass: detains him prisoner, 36. Makes his escape, and declared chief of the protestant party, 44. Brings a foreign army into France, and joins with Monsieur and the king of Navarre, 47, 48. Separates from them, 61. Challenged by the viscount of Turenne. See *Bouillon.* Endeavours to form a sovereignty for himself: Henry IV. obliges him to lay aside that design, 72. Fails in his attempt upon Angers, 107. Upon Brouage, 108. Danger in his retreat, 110. Brings his forces to Henry IV. 123. His courage and conduct at the battle of Coutras, 139--142. His projects after this battle, 144. His death, 149. Particularities relating to it, ib. Intended to have been married to Madame, ii. 339.

Condé (Henry II. de Bourbon, prince of). His birth, i. 149. Henry IV. supports his rights, ii. 169. He joins the disaffected, iv. 40. Grants made him, v. 58. Henry IV. discontented with his proceedings: proposes to marry him to mademoiselle de Montmorency, 98. This marriage determined: motives which induced Henry IV. to it, contrary to the advice of Sully, 153, 154. Quarrels which ensued between Henry IV. and this prince, 197. Particulars upon the consequence of this jealousy, 198, 199. Sully's bold discourse to him, 200, 201. Carries the princess of Condé into Flanders, 205. Particulars relating to this flight, 206. His letter to Sully, 209. An account of this whole affair, 206, 207. Returns into France after the death of Henry IV. and enters Paris, accompanied by Sully, 350. Received coldly by the queen regent, 351. Follows the advice of Sully, 352. Afterwards becomes his enemy, 355. Means which he employs for that purpose, 357. Gifts bestowed upon him by the queen regent, vi. 20. Estates sold and exchanged between Sully and the prince of Condé, which he endeavours to have confiscated, 53, 54. His revolt, 114.

------ (Lewis I. de Bourbon, prince of) Killed at the battle of Jarnac, i. 1. Commands the protestants at the skirmish of Meaux, 21.

------ (Mary of Cleves, princess of) See *Cleves* (Mary of).

Conferences. Of Baionne. See *Medicis*, (Catherine of) *Albe*, (Duke of) *Baionne.* Between Henry IV. and marshal Biron, for a peace, i. 61. Between Catherine and Henry IV. at different places, 62. Others at Cognac, between the same; at St. Brix; St. Maixant, 130. Between Catherine, the cardinal of Bourbon, and the duke of Guise. See *Barricades, Chalons, Sarry, Nemours.* At Surenne, La-Villette, Mante, Pontoise, Andresy, Milly. See these names. At Boulogne. See *Boulogne.* A conference upon religion to convert the princess Catherine proves ineffectual, ii. 340. A public conference or dispute between Du-Perron and Du-Plessis-Mornay, iii. 25. At Ratisbon. See *Ratisbon.* Between Sully and the English ministers and others. See *Sully, James* I. *Cecil.* At London for a peace between Spain and the United Provinces, iv. 123. Between the members of the church of England and the puritans, 127. At the Hague for a truce. See *Spain, Holland.* Upon the affairs of Cleves. See *Cleves.*

Confession. Proposals of the jesuits, for confession by letters, iv. 19.

Confians. Taken by Henry IV. iii. 37.

Conjurations and *Conspiracies.* Against Henry IV. See *Henry* IV. *Spain, Biron, Savoy, Malecontents, League, Ravaillac, Coman, Entragues, Verneuil.* Against the king of England. See *James* I. *English.*

Consignations. (Receivers of) These offices united to the domaine, v. 46.

Constables of France. Montmorency, Lesdiguieres. See these names. Sully refuses the post of constable of France, offered him by Henry IV. v. 70.

Constant. A maletontent, i. 294. Cabals during the siege of Amiens, ii. 234. Likewise during Sully's journey into Poitou, iv. 72. One of the schemers for a protestant republic in France, 262---268.

Conſtantine. Bad policy of this emperor, vi. 58.
Conſtantinople. Revolt of, iv. 120. Troubles in this city, 145. See *Turk. Mahomet* III. *Achmet.*
Contenant. (N. de) Offices of the League, i. 178.
Controllers-general. Incarville, De-Vienne, Caſtille. See theſe names.
Conty. (Francis de Bourbon, prince of) Brings forces to the aſſiſtance of Henry IV. i. 148. Is defeated at the battle of Craon, 263. Made preſident of the council during the war of 1597, ii. 125. Slanders raiſed on account of his friendſhip for Sully, iv. 185. His quarrels with the count of Soiſſons, with the prince of Joinville, v. 98. The queen regent admits him into her council, 326. Quarrel between him and the count of Soiſſons, 332. Sully's advice with reſpect to him, 352.
----- (Jean de Coëme, princeſs of). Employed to bring about a marriage between the duke of Vendome and mademoiſelle de Mercœur, v. 100. See *Coëme, Montaffie.*
Convents, Hoſpitals, &c. Built or repaired by Henry IV. iv. 207.
Converſations. That of Henry IV. with Sully upon his journey to Flanders, and upon the duke of Anjou, i. 78. Upon the deſigns of the League and the proteſtants, 103, 104. Between the preſident Du-Thou and Montagne, concerning the views of Henry IV. and the duke of Guiſe, 105. Between Henry and Sully, concerning the ſiege of Rouen, and the mutiny among the forces, 231. Upon this prince's change of religion, 289, *& ſeqq.* Between Sully and Villars concerning his treaty, ii. 31--37. Between Sully and the cardinal of Bourbon on ſeveral ſubjects, 63. Between Sully and Bouillon upon the deſigns of the latter, 88. Between Sully and the princeſs Catherine, concerning the love between her and the count of Soiſſons, 168. Between Henry and Sully, after his return from the diſtricts, 195, 196. Upon the error that prince committed in pardoning the prince de Mercœur, 252. Between Henry and the Engliſh and Dutch ambaſſadors, 261, 262. A curious converſation between Henry and Sully, concerning the deſign of this prince to marry again, 267. Between Sully, Henry, and the ducheſs of Beaufort, concerning their quarrels, 290. Between the archbiſhop of Rouen and Roquelaure, upon the marriage of the princeſs Catherine, 343. Between queen Elizabeth and Sully, upon the means of humbling the houſe of Auſtria, iii. 91. Between Henry and Sully, upon the grants this prince intended to make him, 162. Upon the death of Elizabeth, and his embaſſy to London, 201. Between the king of England and Sully, at his firſt audience, upon different ſubjects, 247. Other private conferences upon the deſigns againſt the houſe of Auſtria, 265. Between Henry and Sully, upon his return from London, 312. Upon his ſilk manufactories, 341. Againſt recalling the jeſuits, iv. 9. Upon the expences of Henry, and his domeſtic broils, 40. Between Sully and the marchioneſs of Verneuil, upon her treaſonable practices, 89. Intereſting and important converſation between Henry and Sully, in which they are reconciled, 177, *& ſeqq.* Between their majeſties and Sully, upon the ſubject of their diſputes, 306. Between Henry and Sully, upon the power of the houſe of Auſtria,

Auſtria, 310. Between Henry, Sully, and the courtiers, upon the public news, 368. Between Henry and Sully, upon the gallantries of this prince, v. 8. Upon the cabals of Spain againſt Henry, 18. Great offers made to Sully by Henry IV. 68. Upon the ſubjects of complaint of Henry againſt the queen and the marchioneſs of Verneuil, 79. Between Henry, the queen, Sully, and the miniſters, upon the domeſtic factions, 102, 103. Between Henry, Sully, and the courtiers, upon the great men of antiquity, 145. Between Henry and Sully, upon the domeſtic and foreign plots againſt his life, 153. Upon the memoirs of the finances, 167. Upon the compoſition of a cabinet of ſtate, ib. Between Sully and the prince of Condé, concerning the ſuppoſed cauſes of the diſcontent of the latter, 200. Between Henry and Sully, on the ſame ſubject, 202, 203. Upon the prince of Condé's flight, 205, 206. Upon the manner of executing his great deſigns, 247--251. Upon the ſecret preſages he had in his own mind of his approaching death, and upon the conſpiracy againſt his life, 271. Between the prince of Condé and Sully, in which he gives that prince good advice, 352.

Coquet. Maſter of the houſhold to Henry IV. iv. 365.

Corbeil. Taken by the duke of Parma, i. 210.

Corbie. Taken by Henry IV. i. 216.

Cordier. (Le) An evidence againſt D'Entragues, iv. 149.

Coſſé. (Artus de) Marſhal of France, defeated by the proteſtant army, i. 2. Catherine de Medicis makes uſe of him to deceive the proteſtants, 13.

----- (Charles de). See *Briſſac.*

Cotton. (John and Antony) Father Cotton's brothers, iv. 350.

------ (Peter). A jeſuit: how received by Henry IV. at Metz, iii. 188. Endeavours to procure the eſtabliſhment of his ſociety in France, iv. 5. Viſits Sully, 18. Circumſtances relating to his life, and Henry's friendſhip for him, 17. Joins the courtiers againſt Sully, 152. A great quarrel between Sully and him on account of the college of Poitiers, in which he is convicted of calumny, 154, *& ſeqq.* Henry reconciles them: he deſerts Sully in the affair of Grillon, 170. Takes ſome indiſcreet ſteps in the affair of Adrienne de Freſne, 347, *et ſeqq.* Supports father Seguiran againſt the Rochellers, v. 15. Succeeds in his endeavours to bring about a marriage between the duke of Vendome and mademoiſelle de Mercœur, 100. An imprudent letter written by him concerning the news of the court, 148. Henry and Sully diſguſted with him upon this occaſion, 150. He is involved in the guilt of Ravaillac's parricide: his juſtification, 190. See *Jeſuits.* Admitted into the ſecret council of the queen regent, 325.

Coucy. (Houſe of) Allied to the ancient houſe of Auſtria, to the houſe of Bethune, 7. Great perſons which it has produced, v. 226.

Coudrai. (Du) Propoſed for one of the deputies-general of the proteſtant party, and rejected, iv. 266. See *Chatelleraut.*

Coulom. (Abby of) Given to Sully, iii. 194. He ſells it, vi. 50.

Council of State and of the Finances. Alterations made in it by Henry IV. Operations in the new council; quarrels amongſt the members;

members; ii. 114. A new council eſtabliſhed by Henry IV. during the war of 1595, contrary to the advice of Sully, 126. Their cabals againſt Sully. Abuſes committed by them. Henry's irreſolution to introduce Sully into this council, 183. But at laſt is received into it, 189. Their calumnies and artifices to deceive and ruin him, 192--200. Sully gains the ſuperiority in the council, 229. Henry diſguſted with their proceedings, 239. Sully reforms the abuſes in it, 296. An account of the ſeveral councils in the reign of Henry IV. 303. Sully quarrels with the duke of Epernon in full council, 315. Their jealouſy of Sully, 324. New changes, by giving the poſt of ſuperintendant to Sully, 354. Their hatred of him, iv. 181. They value the farms under borrowed names: this abuſe corrected by Sully, 200. They oppoſe Henry's deſign of being made Emperor; and his political deſign, 225, 226. Their views in accepting the propoſals made by the United Provinces, of ſubmitting to France. What paſſed in the council upon this occaſion, v. 26. Sully's ſcheme of a new council not approved of by Henry IV. 50. Of regulations for aboliſhing abuſes. See *Cabinet of State*. See likewiſe, upon this whole article, *Finances and Financiers*, *Miniſters*, *Villeroi*, *Jeannin*, *Sillery*, &c.

Council of Regency. Settled by Henry IV. during the execution of his grand deſign, v. 266. See *Cleves*, *Political deſign*.

Council of the Regency. Public, different from the ſecret council. What is debated there, 325, 326. Diſputes and quarrels between the nobles and miniſters there, vi. 10, 11. Affairs that are brought before it, 19. They alter the form of Henry IV. and Sully's adminiſtration. The hatred which the members of the council bear to Sully, 23. See *Medicis*. (Mary of) *Conchini*, *Lords*, *Princes of the Blood*, *Villeroi*, *Sillery*.

Councils. (Extraordinary) Reflections of Sully upon theſe councils, iv. 98, 99. Upon the means of taking Amiens, ii. 227. Upon the brevet for the Taille. See *Taille*. Upon the propoſals of the United Provinces to ſubmit to France, v. 26.

Council-General, of the chriſtian republic, vi. 89.

Couronneau. A proteſtant colonel, i. 178.

Coronation of Mary de Medicis. Motives which induced the male-contents to deſire it, v. 159, 160. Henry IV's averſion to this ceremony, ib. He endeavours to prevent it, 226. The queen determined to have it performed, 272. An account of this ceremony, 278.

Courts. (Sovereign) Oppoſe the regiſtration of the edict of Nantz, ii. 346. Regulations to which they are ſubjected by Sully. Reflections upon them, v. 117. New ones to be eſtabliſhed in caſe of neceſſity, 171, 172. See *Cabinet of ſtate*.

Courtaumer. (Baron de) Employed by Henry IV. in reconciling the nobles, v. 97.

Courtenay. Princes and others of this name, i. 6.

--------- (Gaſpard de) Engages in the intereſt of the princeſs Catherine and count de Soiſſons, ii. 23.

Courtenay-Bontin. (Ann de) Sully marries her, i. 26. He goes to her aſſiſtance during the plague, 127. Expoſed to great dangers on account

account of the perſecution of the proteſtants, 137. Her death; exceſſive grief of Sully upon that occaſion, 169.

Courtiers. Sooth the paſſion of Henry for mademoiſelle d'Entragues, iv. 147. Cabal with the jeſuits againſt Sully, 152. Likely to ſucceed in their endeavours, 159. Declare themſelves for the Spaniſh policy, 312. Endeavour to prevent the expedition to Sedan, 316. Favour the intereſt of Spain more than that of Henry, v. 18. The wiſe meaſures taken by this prince to ſtifle their quarrels, 74. Other quarrels amongſt them, 95. Spread a malicious report, that Henry endeavours to ruin them by deep play, 113. Their manner of thinking of Henry and Sully, 141. They ſpread malicious reports of Sully, upon account of Henry's natural children, 194. Diſſatisfied with the great deſigns of this prince, 260, 261. Involved in the parricide of Ravaillac. See *Henry* IV. *Ravaillac.* Endeavour to ruin Sully after the death of Henry IV. 324---vi. 19.--28.

Coutras. Henry IV. and Catherine of Medicis have a conference there, i. 62. The United Provinces ſend deputies to offer their crown to Monſieur, 77. Battle of Coutras, 139, *et ſeqq.* Faults committed at that battle; to what attributed, 143.

Craon. (Battle of) Gained by the duke of Mercœur againſt the royaliſts, i. 263.

Creil. Taken by the two kings, i. 170.

Crequy. (Charles de) Defeated and taken priſoner at Aiquebelle, ii. 94. Takes the city of Montmelian, iii. 37. Supports Sully's opinion in the council, 40. Made governor of Montmelian, 57. Colonel of the regiment of guards, 191. Treated with great haughtineſs by the duke of Epernon, 192. Henry procures a marriage between his daughter and the marquis of Roſny: preparations for it. Ingratitude afterwards to Sully, v. 66, 67. His exceſſive loſſes at play, 113. His ſon propoſed to be married to mademoiſelle de Verneuil, 148.

------- (Frances de) Married to the marquis de Roſny: preparations for this marriage: Sully diſſatisfied with it, v. 66, 67--148.

Crevecœur. (N. de Montmorency-) In Henry's party at the battle of Ivry, i. 197. The government of Caen taken from him, iii. 335.

Criq. (Saint) A catholic officer, burnt in Mirande, i. 56.

Crocans. Defeated at Limoſin by the royaliſts, ii. 182.

Croiſic. A fort built by the duke of Mercœur, ii. 94.

Croix. (La-) Killed at taking of Ham, ii. 131.

Cros. (Du-) Deputy-general for the proteſtants at the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, iv. 267.

---------- One of thoſe concerned in the conſpiracy of La-Fléche, v. 215.

Cruſſol. See *Beaudiner.*

Cryſtal. (Manufactory of) Eſtabliſhed by Henry IV. iv. 211.

Cugnac. See *Giverſac.*

Culard. An eſtate purchaſed by Sully, vi. 48.

Cuman. An undertaker for the management of manufactories, iv. 341.

Cumberland. (Earl of) One of the diſaffected Engliſh lords, iii. 233.

Curates of Paris. Their law-ſuit againſt the jeſuits, ii. 67.
Curée. (Gilbert, Filhet de La-) Attends Henry IV. to Aumale, i. 236. His eulogium, ib. Preſent at the defeat of the convoy before Laon, ii. 76. His opinion of this defeat, ib. At the battle of Fontain-Françoiſe, praiſed by Henry IV. 140. Great actions performed by him before Amiens, 241. Henry refuſes to give him the poſt formerly poſſeſſed by the baron Lux, iv. 196.
Cuſco. (King of) His correſpondence with Spain, iii. 322.
Cuſſe. Commiſſary in Brittany, reprimanded by Sully, v. 46.
Czar. See *Muſcovy.*

D

D'Adré. (John) Penitentiary of the church of Rouen, ii. 49.
Dagobert. Character of that king, vi. 60.
Dampierre. See *Liérament.*
Dangeau. A proteſtant officer, i. 124.
Dangüin. (Captain) Of great uſe in the affair of the revolt of the Moors, v. 137.
Danſa. (Simon) A Dutch corſair, v. 150.
Danville. See *Montmorency.* Henry de).
--------- (Admiral de) Receives an important ſervice from Concini, vi. 7.
Darius. An anecdote relating to this prince and Zophirus, iv. 1.
Darnetal. The quarters of Henry II. at the ſiege of Rouen, i. 226.
Davailles. Governor of Maillezais, i. 126.
Dauphin. His birth; rejoicings upon that account, iii. 97. Henry IV. orders La-Riviere to calculate his nativity, 99. Carried through Paris in his way to Saint-Germain, ib. The government of Burgundy given him by Henry IV. 148. Brought to Fontainebleau, and ſhewn in Paris, iv. 144. His letters to madame de Montglat, 305. Medals preſented to him by Sully, ib. Ceremony of his baptiſm, 357. Queen Margaret gives up to him the eſtates of Catherine of Medicis, v. 40. Sick at Noiſy, 60. Intrigues at court to procure a marriage between him and the infanta of Spain, 158. Deſigned by Henry for the heireſs of Lorrain, ib. See for what remains of this article *Lewis* XIII.
Dauphiny. Succeſs of the royaliſts at this place, ii. 123. Fortreſſes yielded up to Henry IV. by the treaty of Lions, iii. 67. Proceſs of the third eſtate againſt the clergy and nobility, 169.
Davy. See *Perron.* (Du-)
Deagent. Favours granted him by Mary of Medicis, vi. 21.
Debts of the State. Contracted during the League, iv. 205. Paid off by Sully, v. 39.
Defunctes. Grand Provoſt of the Iſle of France, iii. 146.
Dele. Taken by the prince of Orange, iii. 178.
Delfin. Ambaſſador from Venice to France, iii. 87. Henry IV. ſends him ambaſſador to Florence, v. 227.
Demeurat. Solicitor at Rome, ii. 247.
Denis. (Saint-) The forces of the League defeated at this place, i. 263.

Henry IV. makes his abjuration there. See *Abjuration*. Grants a second truce to the Parisians, and receives an envoy from Spain, ii. 4, 5. Escapes being assassinated there, 8. Mary of Medicis crowned there. See *Medicis*.

Denmark. (Kings of) Frederic III. Christian IV. See these names in the articles of *Denmark*.

------- - (Ann of). Queen of England. Her character and conduct, iii. 235. She comes to London in opposition to her husband, 254. See *James*. Vaucelas is appointed to deliver to her the letters of the king and queen of France, 308. Presents made her by Sully, 310. Her arrival in London, 313. She changes all on a sudden her conduct and policy, 318.

---------- (Christern IV. king of) His ambassadors in London, iii. 236. Bad policy of this court, 253. Enters into an alliance against the house of Austria, v. 257. Boissise sent ambassador to this prince, 265.

--------- (Frederic II. king of) iii. 235.

Deodati. Sends Beza's translation of the New Testament to Sully, iv. 286.

Deputies-general of the protestant party. At court, iv. 233. A practice only tolerated. The origin of this custom, and regulations to be made in it, 236. Debated in the general assembly at Châtelleraut, 264. Terminated to the advantage of the king, 267. See *Châtelleraut*. The same disputed in the synod of Rochelle, v. 11. See *Rochelle*. In the general assembly at Gergeau. See *Gergeau*.

Derby. (Earl of) Escorts Sully to Greenwich, iii. 246--283.

Desbordes. Deputy-general of the protestants, iv. 266.

Descartes. Comes into France to give information of the treason of L'Hôte, iii. 29. See *Hôte*, (L') *Rafis*. Sully sends him into Spain, v. 24.

Descures. Farmer of the revenues, ii. 159.

Desportes. Treats with Sully in the name of Medavy, ii. 11. Concludes the treaty, 27.

Despueilles. Shamefully surrenders Saint-Bazeille, i. 117. His company defeated before Rochelle, 132.

Deveze. (La-) A singular combat proposed betwixt him and Lavardin, i. 57.

---------- Advocate of Castres. His services and abilities, iv. 267.

Deuilly. (Madame de) Mistress of De-Fresne, ii. 232.

Devonshire. (Earl of) iii. 90.

Deux-Ponts. (John, count palatine of) His right to the succession of Cleves, v. 234. See *Cleves*.

---------- (John II. duke of). Visits Henry IV. at Metz, and marries there Catherine de Rohan, iii. 186, 187. Sully accused of holding criminal correspondence with him, iv. 186.

---------- (Duchess of). Present made to her by Henry IV. iv. 212.

Dieppe. A skirmish before this city, i. 179.

Diet of Ratisbon. See *Ratisbon*.

Dijon. Taken by marshal Biron, ii. 123. Its parliament disobedient to the king, v. 41. See *Bresse*.

Dinteville. (Joachim de) Governor of Champaign, treats with the

duke of Bouillon about the ſurrender of Sedan, iv. 333. Regretted by Henry IV. v. 57.

Diſſolution of the marriage of Henry IV. *and Margaret of Valois.* See *Henry, Margaret.*

Dizimieux. Surrenders Vienne and Montluel to the king, ii. 123.

Dolle. (Lewis) Advocate for the curates of Paris againſt the jeſuits, ii. 67.

----- The queen regent admits him into her private council, v. 325. Grants made him by that princeſs, vi. 21.

Domain of the king. Abuſes corrected in it, iv. 100. Uſurpations of it diſcovered by Sully, 199. Regiſters of Languedoc re-united to it, v. 41. Sully redeems ſeveral parts of it, 46. The principal riches of the king does not conſiſt in his domaine, 121.

Dominge. A proteſtant gentleman, i. 73.

Donavert. The emperor ſeizes this city v. 139.

Donfront. Taken by the proteſtants, i. 187.

Donon. Controller of the buildings, v. 58.

Doria. (Marquis of) Favourite to Philip III. ii. 336.

----- (Charles). Commands the Spaniſh gallies in the Mediterranean, iii. 322.

Douarrenes. The Spaniards driven from this place, ii. 253.

Dourdon. (Lands of) Purchaſed by Sully, vi. 48, 49.

Dourlach, Prince of Baden, accuſed of a criminal correſpondence with Sully, iv. 186.

Dourlens. The French defeated before this place, ii. 132, *& ſeqq.* Henry IV. raiſes the ſiege of it, 246.

Dover. The cauſe of queen Elizabeth's journey to this place, iii. 89. An account of Sully's reception there, 220. His ſtay there after his return from London, 311.

Dreuillet. Engaged in the conſpiracy of La-Fleché, v. 215.

Dreux. Taken by Henry IV. i. 204. Retaken by Sully, 323. The government of it denied him, 325. He intercepts papers belonging to the League, 277, 278.

Droit-Annuel. Different opinions upon this eſtabliſhment, v. 173.

Dreu. (Madame de) Governeſs to the queen's children, iv. 306.

Drouart. Deprived of his poſt by Sully, iv. 106.

Drouet. An arret upon his marriage, v. 56.

Dukes and *Peers.* Sully created duke and peer: ceremony upon this occaſion, iv. 313, 314. The duke of Bouillon endeavours in vain to obtain the precedency of them, 356. They obtain the right of entering into the courts of the Louvre in their coaches, v. 167. A diſpute for precedency betwixt the lords temporal and ſpiritual, determined in favour of the firſt, 322, 323.

Duels. Of the duke of Bouillon and Duras. Of Breauté. See theſe names. Edict of Henry IV. againſt them: ſentiments of Sully upon this edict, iii. 175. His memorial upon the origin, cuſtom, and the practices of different nations, in duels, iv. 296. Henry's eaſineſs in pardoning them, the cauſe of their being ſo frequent, v. 97. Other edicts againſt them, and what paſſed in the council on that occaſion, 193.

Dunes. A French officer. Goes into the ſervice of the arch-duke, iv. 223.

Durand, or *Haut-Fontaine*. The duke of Bouillon's agent in London, iv. 64.
Durandiere. (La) Preceptor to Sully, i. 22.
Duras. (John de Durefort, viſcount of) One of the proteſtant chiefs, i. 24. Charles IX. pardons him, 32. Goes over to the catholic party, 65. Fights a duel with viſcount Turenne: various opinions upon this duel, ib.
Durefort de Born. See *Born*.
Durefort-Roſan. See *Roſan*.
Duret. (N.) One of the confidants of Mary of Medicis, iv. 370---v. 76. Of her ſecret council, 325. Grants made him, vi. 21. Sully's advice to him; his poſts, 35, 36.
------- (Claud) Advocate for the jeſuits againſt the univerſity and curates of Paris, ii. 67.
------- (Lewis and Charles) Authors of the third party, i. 283. Sully treats with them, 296.

E.

EAST. Sully's opinion of this empire, vi. 57, 58.
Eauſe. Taken by Henry IV. i. 55.
Eclipſe of the Sun, in 1605, iv. 285.
Edicts. Of ſixty-three articles. See *Beaulieu*, *Proteſtants*. Of July, in favour of the League, i. 99. See *Nemours*. (Treaty of) *Henry* III. *League*. Of the 21ſt of July, ſtill more advantageous, 156. Of Nantz. See *Nantz*. Upon the money. See *Money*. Petty edicts granted to private perſons deſtructive to commerce, iv. 105. For the defence of commerce with Spain. See *Spain*, *Commerce*, *Thirty per cent*. See likewiſe *Arrets*, *Regulations*, and *Treaties*.
Edifices. Built or repaired by Henry IV. iii. 201. Sums expended in theſe works, v. 39. In the city of Paris, 112--191.
Edmonds. Queen Elizabeth's agent in France. Sent by her to Calais, to compliment Henry IV. iii. 88.
Edward III. (King of England) Sentiments of Sully upon this prince, v. 145.
Edouville. (N. d') ii. 99. Defeats the forces of the League, 123.
Egmont. Earls and counts of this name; their rights to the duchy of Guelders, v. 231.
------- (Amoral d') Beheaded at Bruſſels, i. 193.
------- (Count of) His valour at Ivry: killed there, i. 193. See *Ivry*.
Eguillon. (Henry de Lorrain, duke of) Satisfies Henry with regard to his brother, v. 94. See *Sommerive Moret* (Counteſs of). Procures Baldagny to be aſſaſſinated, 97. See *Baldagny* (Damien). Quarrels with Conchini and the miniſters, vi. 13. Grants made him by Mary of Medicis, 20.
Elbœuf. (Claude de Lorraine, duke of) Commands the army of the League in Normandy, i. 99. Fights for Henry IV. at Fontaine François, ii. 139. Sum received by him on making his treaty, 311. Attends Henry IV. in his expedition to Savoy, iii. 60.

Electors. Henry IV's design of restoring them to all their privileges, vi. 84.

Elizabeth of France, queen of Spain, suspected of having been poisoned by Philip II. i. 17.

Elizabeth, queen of England. Negotiations to induce her to marry Monsieur, i. 18. Sends an army to the assistance of Henry IV. 184. She demands Calais, which he refuses her, ii. 147. Sends an embassy to this prince, to dissuade him from the treaty of Vervins, 253--260. Comes to Dover, iii. 88. Beheads Essex: her conversation with marshal Biron on this subject, 111, 112. Motives for her journey to Dover. Letters which passed between Henry IV. and her upon this occasion, 89. See *Political Design.* Subdues the rebels in Ireland, 118. Congratulates Henry IV. upon his quelling Biron's conspiracy, 161. Her death: Henry's grief for it: her elogium, 200. A treaty of commerce made by her with Charles IX. 214. King James endeavours to tarnish her memory, 245. Her policy praised, 254. Supports the English priests against the Spanish cabal, 270. The king of England speaks contemptuously of her and her council, 277. See *James.* A saying of this princess upon the union of France, England, Sweden, and Denmark, 296. Debts contracted during the League by Henry IV. to her, iv. 205. Her share in the contrivance and disposition of the grand design, vi. 72.

Elsi. (Saint-) Taken by Joyeuse, i. 132.

Embden. The Spaniards, in vain, endeavour to make themselves masters of this place, iii. 180.

Emilion. (Saint-) Taken by Henry IV. i. 64.

Emperors. Charles IV. Charles V. Frederic III. Ferdinand, Maximilian I. Maximilian IV. Rodolphus. See these names.

Empire and *Emperor.* Their true policy with regard to Spain, iii. 293. Henry IV. is supposed to aim at being Emperor, iv. 226. Pretensions of several Emperors upon Cleves, v. 231, *& seqq.* Henry's grand design in regard to the Empire and Emperor, vi. 81. Their true rights established, 82. See *Political Design.*

England. (Kings of) Elizabeth, queen of England; James, Edward III. See these names.

-------- (Prince of). See *Wales.*

-------- (Anne of Denmark, queen of). See *Denmark.*

England and *English.* The protestants deliver Havre de Grace to the English, i. 21. An English army comes to the assistance of Henry IV. 225. Serve him at the siege of Rouen. See *Rouen.* The English assist marshal d'Aumont in Brittany, ii. 94. See *Aumont.* They join France against Spain in the war of 1595, 118. but do no great service. A conversation between Henry IV. and the English and Dutch ambassadors, 261, 262. See *Cecil.* Henry takes the farms of his revenues out of the hands of the English, 317. Piracies committed by the English upon the French vessels, iii. 218. Sully insulted by their vice-admiral, 219. The character of the English, 220. They hate the French, 229. A continuation of the character of that people, ib. 230. The manner in which we ought to act with them, 230. The English jealous of the Scots, 257. Pretended claims of England upon Normandy, Guienne, Poitou, 260.

Elizabeth supports the English clergy against the Spanish faction, 270. The manner in which the king of England is served at table, 277. Opposition made by the English ministers to Sully's negotiation, and to the interests of the United Provinces, 280, 281. Sully complains of them to king James, 287. Presents made by Sully to the principal lords and ladies of the English court, 311. A conspiracy in London against king James, 320. Henry gives pensions and presents to the ministers and noblemen in this court, 322. The English take advantage of the prohibition of commerce between France and Spain, iv. 113. Treaty between England and Spain, 126. State of the debts of France to England during the League, 205. Another conspiracy against king James, 375, 376. Paul V. forbids the English to take an oath of fidelity to king James, v. 36. Debts of France to England, 39. Jeannin is appointed ambassador to England during the war of Cleves, 265 Part of the great design relating to this kingdom, vi. 87. Forces and money to be contributed by the English, 97. See also the names mentioned in this article.

Enkault. (Prince of) Brings the German forces to Henry IV. at the siege of Rouen, i. 226. It is proposed to marry the princess Catherine to him, iii. 339. Sully accused of holding a criminal correspondence with him, iv. 186. He joins in the great design, vi 92.

Entragues. (Catherine Henrietta de Balzac d') See *Verneuil* (Marchioness of).

---------- (Francis de Balzac d'). His intrigues with the catholics against Henry IV. i. 291. He introduces the Spanish ambassador to Henry IV. and Sully, ii. 5. See *Nugnés.* He cabals against Henry 61--66. Thwarts Henry's love for his daughter. See *Verneuil* (Marchioness of). Enters into an association with Bouillon, Biron, and Auvergne, and endeavours to raise an insurrection, iii. 112. His intrigues at the court of London, 243. Farther account of his intrigues, iv. 40, 63, 77. Procures a marshal's staff, 79. Arrested, 86. Anecdote concerning Henry's love for his second daughter, 94, 95. Motives which induced Henry IV. to pardon him, 146. Desirous of giving him his liberty, 150. Accused of being an accomplice in Ravaillac's parricide, v. 299.

---------- (Mary Touchet, countess of). See *Touchet.*

Entry. See *Coronation of Mary of Medicis.*

Entries and Tithes, more reasonable than any other tax, iv. 203. Regulations concerning them, v. 173.

Entremont. (Jaqueline de Montbel, countess of) Marries the admiral Coligny, i. 17.

Epernai. Besieged and taken by Henry IV. i. 273.

Epernon. (John Lewis de Nogaret de La-Valette, duke of) The Rochellers refuse to admit him in their city, i. 50. He advises Henry III. to suffer his guards to assassinate the duke of Guise, 151. Made admiral and governor of Normandy, 155. Quits Henry IV. after the death of Henry III. 176. His character; hatred of Henry IV. and his behaviour in Provence, 265, *et seqq.* Bad conduct of his forces at Villemur, 270. One of the favourites of Henry III. ii. 98. Sully justifies himself against his complaints of him, 107.

Accusations brought against him, 109, 110. Lesdiguieres and the duke of Guise drive him out of Provence: he submits to the king, 183. The sum given him for his treaty, 311. His cruelty in Provence. 314. Quarrels with Sully in the council; Henry IV. obliges him to ask pardon of this minister, 315, 316. Henry IV. writes to him upon the dispute betwixt Du-Perron and Du-Plessis-Mornay, iii. 28. He opposes Sully in the affair of Savoy, 40--53. Sully justifies him, and prevents his being arrested in the affair of marshal Biron: he gives him good advice, which Epernon follows, 135, 136---161. Obliged to take the government of Metz from the Soboles, 183. Treated favourably by Henry IV. iv. 76. Friendship for him, ib. Has a dangerous fall from his horse, 77. The affair betwixt him, Sully, and Grillon, for a colonel's commission, 166. Terminated by Sully to Henry's satisfaction, 191. His excessive haughtiness to the marquis de Crequy, 192. He commands the king's forces at Limosin, 277. A rupture betwixt him and Sully, upon account of the city of La-Rochelle, 289. Summoned to the council upon the enterprise of Sedan, 324. Favours the jesuits, in opposition to the city of Metz, 346. His quarrel with Montigny, v. 98. Losses at play, 113. Obtains the privilege of having his coach driven into the court of the Louvre, 167. Opposes Sully with regard to the armament of Cleves, 252. Coman accuses him of being engaged in Ravaillac's conspiracy, 274. A remarkable speech of his to the president de Harlay, 300. Makes an offer of his services to Sully after the death of Henry IV. 319. Mary of Medicis admits him into her secret council, 325. He votes for an alliance with Spain, contrary to the maxims of the last reign, 341. He unites himself with the prince of Condé, 350. Quarrels with the nobles and ministers, vi. 10. With Conchini, 13. Grants made him by the queen regent, 21. Opposes Sully, 28, 29.

Epinoy. (William de Melun, prince of) Sully takes the guardianship of him upon himself, iii. 12. His brother killed by Rambures, v. 6. Sully obliges the princess of Ligne to do him justice, and make restitution of his estates, 220, *et seqq.* See *Arch-duke, Treaty of Truce.*

------- (Henry de Melun d') Killed by Rambures: Henry IV. and Sully drop that affair, v. 6, 7.

------ (Hippolita de Montmorency, princess of). Brings her children to Paris, and puts them under the guardianship of Sully, iii. 12. Refuses her consent to the marriage of the marquis de Cœuvres with mademoiselle de Melun, iv. 198. v. 6.

------- (Peter de Melun, prince of). Sully takes the guardianship of his children upon himself, iii. 12.

------- (Robert de Melun, prince of). Is favoured by Monsieur, in opposition to Sully, i. 86.

Erard. Engineer to Henry IV. Tenders an unseasonable service to the elector Palatine, iii. 336. Endeavours to turn Henry IV. from the enterprize of Sedan, iv. 316. The cause of the discontent which he gave to Henry and Sully, 328. v. 9.

------ The son of the beforementioned Erard, his death greatly lamented by Sully, v. 54.

Erkel. The claims of this houſe upon the duchy of Cleves, v. 231. See *Cleves.*

Erneſt of Auſtria, Arch-duke. Anſwers for the king of Spain to the propoſals made by the League and the duke of Maienne, i. 281, 282. The Spaniſh ambaſſadors and the Pope's legate offer to elect him king of France in the aſſembly of the ſtates of Paris, 310.

Eſcoman. See *Coman.*

Eſcobleau. See *Sourdis.*

Eſcures. (Peter Fougen d') Of great uſe in the ſeizing of marſhal Biron, iii. 128--135; and the count of Auvergne, iv. 77--176. Summoned to the council upon the affair of Sedan, 324. Receives a gratuity from Henry IV. v. 190.

Eſperan. Commiſſary in Guyenne, iv. 353.

Eſpinac. (Peter de) Archbiſhop of Lyons. His death, ii. 355.

Eſſards. (Charlotte des) Miſtreſs to Henry IV. v. 76. His children by her; and ſome circumſtances relating to her life, ib. Sully diſengages him from her, 87. Gratuity granted her by Henry, 192.

Eſſex. (Robert D'Evreux, earl of) Brings ſome powerful ſuccours to Henry IV. at the ſiege of Rouen, i. 225. Offers to fight admiral Villars in a ſingle duel, 247. Beheaded by Elizabeth, iii. 111, 112.

----- (Earl of). The friendſhip of king James for him, iii. 257.

Eſtampes. Taken by the two kings, i. 170. Retaken by Henry IV. 186.

Eſtouteville. (Meſſieurs d') Sully purchaſes Villebon of them, vi. 131.

Eſtrees. Sully's opinion of this family, iv. 198.

------ (Angelica d'). Abbeſs of Maubuiſſon, ii. 161.

------ (Francis Anibal d'). See *Cœuvres.*

------ (Gabriella d'). Called ſucceſſively, The fair Gabriella, Madame de Liancourt, Marchioneſs of Monceaux, and Ducheſs of Beaufort, i. 212. Henry's paſſion for her, 217. Leads his army into Picardy, that he may viſit her, 262. Her motives to wiſh for his converſion, 327. Regrets the death of the ſuperintendant D'O, ii. 100. Anecdotes relating to her amours with Henry IV. and her marriage with M. de Liancourt, 112, 113, &c. See *Liancourt, Alibour, Sancy.* Her deſign of getting Franche-Compté for her ſon, 124. See *Vendome.* (Cæſar de). She procures the government of La-Fere for him, 156. The danger ſhe eſcaped in her journey to meet the king at Amiens, 163, 164. She favours Sully's admiſſion into the council of finances, 185. Obtains the poſt of grand maſter of the ordnance for her father, 238. See *Eſtrees* (John Antony d'). She lends money to Henry IV. 243. Her motive for ſoliciting a pardon for the duke of Mercœur, 251. Sully diſſuades Henry from marrying her, 270--275. Her plots to engage the Pope in her intereſt, 285. She cauſes her ſon to be baptized with the ceremony of a ſon of France, 286. See *Bourbon* (Alexander de). A quarrel between her and Sully upon this occaſion: Henry reconciles them, 290--293. She takes advantage of Henry's ſickneſs to forward the deſign, 294. Her great weakneſs with reſpect to aſtrology, and the predictions that are made her, 357. An account of what paſſed at her

her separation from Henry IV. at Fontainebleau, 358. Her discourse to the duke and duchess of Sully: her imprudence in speaking of herself, 359. Circumstances relating to her death; different opinions on this subject, 361, *& seqq.* Henry's excessive grief for her death, 363. Sully endeavours to comfort him, 365. Circumstances relating to the life of the duchess of Beaufort: her good qualities, 363, 364. After her death, the dissolution of Henry's marriage with Margaret earnestly sollicited, iii. 4. She had been engaged in the interests of the duke of Savoy in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, 19. Her children by Henry, v. 75.

Effrees. (John Antony de) Father of the fair Gabriella, i. 212. Made grand master of the ordnance, 238. Resigns this post to the duke of Sully, in whose favour the king declared it one of the great offices of the crown, iii. 15.

------ (Julietta Hippolita de). See *Villars* (Duchess of).

Etienne. (Saint) A protestant gentleman escapes at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 33.

Eu. (City of) Taken by Henry IV. i. 55.

Europe. Reflections upon the abuses that prevail in it with regard to war, and upon its true policy, iii. 230. Idea and strength of the different factions into which it is divided, 346. Designs of the house of Austria upon this part of the world, iv. 310, 311. See *Charles* V. *Philip* II. *Universal Monarchy.* The necessity of changing the political system, vi. 64, 65. Henry's views by his great design: its utility for all Europe, 70-72. The divisions of its states and kingdoms, 88. See *Political design.*

Evre, or *Erre.* (N. de) Contributes towards seizing the count of Auvergne, iv. 86.

Evoura. (Don Diego de) Leaves Paris at the surrender of that city to Henry IV. ii. 43. See *Spaniards, League.*

F.

FACHON. (Anthony) The council of finances purchase the farms under his name, iv. 200.

Farms. (Large) Sully takes them out of the hands of foreigners and the French lords: the method and order he puts them in, ii. 317. iv. 106. His labours in this part of the government, 199, *& seqq.* See also *Finances, Gabelle, Aides, &c.*

Favas. A protestant officer, i. 52. Present at the battle of Coutras, 140.

Fa. (La-) A protestant preacher, Henry IV's answer to him, i. 327.

--- (La-). Mentioned in the affair of Adrienne de Fresne, iv. 349.

--- (La-). A supposititious letter signed with this name, v. 212.

Fayet. Clerk of the council of finances, ii. 232.

Fayolle. Governor of Chizay for the League, i. 122.

------- (Bertrand de Melet de) Commands the artillery at the siege of Rouen, i. 227.

Fenouillet. Sully secures the bishopric of Montpelier for him, v. 115.

Ferdinand I. *of Austria.* Emperor: Philip II. endeavours to deprive him of the empire, ii. 330.

Ferdinand II. *of Auſtria.* King of the Romans and of Hungary, v. 235.

Ferdinand of Caſtile. Propoſed by Sully to Henry IV. as an example for him to follow, v. 246.

Fere. (La) Taken by the proteſtants, i. 66. Retaken by Matignon, 72. A great convoy of Spaniards defeated near this city, ii. 74, 75. See *Laon, Biron.* Henry begins the ſiege of it, 154. Circumſtances relating to this ſiege: a great cauſeway built: Henry ſeized with an indiſpoſition: the place ſurrenders, 155, 156.

Feria. (Lauret Suarés de Figueroa, duke of) Plenipotentiary from Spain to the States of Paris: his plots, and the errors he commits there, i. 309. See *League, States of Paris,* &c. Leaves Paris upon its ſurrendering to Henry IV. ii. 43. His ſpeech of Henry IV. and Henry's of him, ib.

Fernandes. (Edward) A Portugueſe banker, lends money to Henry IV. and the courtiers, for play, v. 112. The debts Henry owed him diſcharged, 191.

Ferrand. An officer of the chamber of accounts, proſecuted by Sully, v. 189.

Ferrier. A proteſtant miniſter, one of thoſe concerned in the ſedition, iii. 336. (Du) Deputed to Sully by the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, v. 105.

Ferriere. (La) A diſaffected proteſtant, iv. 72.

Ferté-Milon. Beſieged by Henry IV. ii. 15.

Fervaques, (Andrea d'Allegre, counteſs of). Endeavours to procure a marriage between her ſon and mademoiſelle de Sully, ii. 220. Henry IV. cauſes this marriage to be broken off, iv. 194. See *Laval,* (Guy de) *Bethune,* (Margaret de).

---------- (William de Hautemer de Grancy de). Marſhal of France, ſent to the court of Henry III. to demand the princeſs Catherine, i. 48--77--81. Demands mademoiſelle de Sully in marriage for M. de Laval, ii. 220. See *Laval,* (Guy de) *Bethune,* Margaret de). Sully's friendſhip for him calumniated, iv. 185. Summoned to the council upon the deſigned expedition to Sedan, 324. Cured of a dangerous indiſpoſition, v. 115, 116. Appointed one of the members of the council of regency by Henry IV. 266.

Feſcamp. Taken by the League, and retaken in a very extraordinary manner by Bois-roſé: a diſpute about this fort, ii. 12, *et ſeqq.* See *Villars,* (Admiral de) *Biron.*

Feugeres. Attached to Sully, iii. 52.

Feuquieres. (N. de Paſ. de) A proteſtant officer, i. 108--124. Slain at the battle of Ivry, 195.

Feydeau. (Denis) Farmer-general of the Aides: his proceſs againſt the city of Lyons, v. 48--189.

Fiefs. Maſculine and feminine, make a very important diſtinction for the duchy of Cleves and the United Provinces, v. 231, *et ſeqq.* See *Cleves.*

Figeac. Surprized and abandoned by the royaliſts, i. 66.

Fin. (James de La) His character, iii. 115. Betrays Biron, ib. His examination and depoſitions, in which he impeaches Sully, ib. 116. Continues to deceive Biron, 135. Du-Perron ſolicits his return into France, iv. 218.

Fin. (Prégent de La). Viſcount of Chartres. See *Chartres.*

Finances, and *Financiers*. Diſorder in the finances, and a new council eſtabliſhed, i. 203. ii. 97, 98. Rogueries of the financiers, and cauſes of the abuſes in the finances, 114-160. Hatred of the financiers to Sully. See *Council.* Their fraudulent practices, 187. They endeavour to impoſe upon him, but do not ſucceed, 192, 193. Sully's labours in the finances, 217. He undertakes to produce a reformation in the finances, 295. A fine portrait of a good manager of the finances, 296, 297. See *Miniſters.* The finances of France charged with exceſſive debts, 310--312. Foreigners excluded from any ſhare in the farms, 318. The frauds committed in the finances examined into: alterations made in the management of them, 321, *et ſeqq.* The poſt of ſuperintendant of the finances eſtabliſhed in favour of Sully, 354. Regulations made in this part of the revenue, &c. iii. 72. Againſt the luxury and exceſſive wealth of the financiers, 77. Offices of the finances ſuppreſſed, 81. Sully proſecutes the fraudulent financiers, 170. Luxury and magnificence of the financiers, 345, 346. Several operations of Sully in the finances, iv. 100. His great care and aſſiduity in the diſcharge of this office, 105--181--199. His labours in the finances, 359. General abſtracts of them preſented by him to Henry IV. 864--370. Other details and operations: the debts owing to the contractors acquitted, &c. v. 42. New regulations made by Sully in the finances, 117. Memoirs and ſchemes upon this ſubject. See *Cabinet of State*, 167---172. Methods of raiſing money in caſes of neceſſity, 176. Many different affairs and details of the finances, 189. The form of government in the finances totally changed after the death of Henry IV. 325.

Flanders, the Low Countries, United Provinces. Charles IX. ſends an army thither: deceives the proteſtants, i. 18. Catherine de Medicis endeavours to obtain the ſovereignty of the Low Countries for the duke of Anjou, 76. Origin of the revolt of the United Provinces, ib. They offer themſelves to the archduke Matthias; afterwards to Monſieur, 77. The expedition of that prince to Flanders, 81. The treachery at Antwerp renders him odious, 85. The Flemings ſend fifty veſſels to the aſſiſtance of Henry IV. while he is engaged in the ſiege of Rouen, 226. They are very uſeful to him at this ſiege, 229. Unite with France againſt Spain in the war of 1595, ii. 123. A converſation of Henry IV. with their ambaſſador, 261. See *Naſſau*, *Nantz*, &c. Philip II. gives theſe provinces as a portion with his daughter the Infanta Iſabella. The arch-duke Albert renews the war, 338. Henry IV. ſuccours them privately, iii. 12. Albert loſes the battle of Newport, 70. Expeditions during this war, ib. The defeat of Spinola's ſquadron, and a farther account of this war, 179--195. The deputies from the States General to the court of London, meet with a bad reception from James, 239. Sully's converſation with theſe deputies, ib. *et ſeqq.* See *Barnevelt La-Fontaine*, &c. A propoſal ſaid to be made by Spain to the United Provinces, to unite themſelves with her againſt France, 262. Sully repreſents to the king of England the neceſſity of ſupporting them, 267. But the council of this prince oppoſe his arguments, 273. See *Cecil.* Several conferences on this ſubject,

subject, 279, 280. Sully, in a private conference with James, again insists upon this point, 287. Methods proposed for driving out the Spaniards from the Low Countries, 297. The king of England promises to assist them, and receives their ambassadors favourably, 298, *& seqq.* Form of the treaty in which the kings of France and England provide for their mutual defence, 304, 305. They reject the proposals made them by Spain, 314. Beat the Spanish fleet twice, 322. And likewise the Portuguese gallies, 326. Their concern in the affair of thirty *per cent.* iv. 117. They defend themselves bravely against Spain: the war very expensive to them: their obligations to France, 119--122. Spain seems to treat them favourably, with a view to make an agreement with England, 124--134. Malicious report raised against Sully, accusing him with carrying on criminal correspondencies with the Flemings, 186. Debts contracted by France to them during the League, 205. Farther account of their wars with Spain, 221. The first proposals towards a peace or a truce, 372. Henry IV. by advice of Sully, refuses to receive the towns in hostage, and other offers made him by the States, 373, 374. The Dutch present the king, by Aërsens, their agent, an account of the voyage they had lately made to the East-Indies, 375. The United Provinces renew the offers they had made to Henry IV. to submit themselves to the French domination, and to give certain towns in hostage, which Sully dissuades him from accepting, v. 26. A great naval battle gained by them against the Spaniards, 28. The treaty for the suspension of arms concluded, 30--33. A long truce negotiated, 128. The ingratitude of the Flemings to Henry IV. 132. The succours he gives them, 216. Treaty for a truce, and the mediation of the kings of France and England, 217. Contains an article in favour of the prince of Epinoy, 220. The United Provinces join the confederate princes assembled at Hall upon the affair of Cleves, 247. and assist them in taking Juliers, 359. That part of the great design which related to them, consisted in erecting them into a republic, vi. 80--88--90. What forces they agree to contribute towards its execution, 97. See *Belgick*, (Republic) *Political design*, &c.

Flanders. (Ancient counts of) The family of Bethune descended from them, i. 6. iv. 219.

Fleche. (La) Henry's journey thither, ii. 277. He gives that house to the jesuits, iv. 20. His liberalities to them, 347. He consents that his heart should be deposited in their chapel: a bon-mot on this occasion, v. 17, 18. A gratuity granted by Henry IV. to this college, 148. Another denied by Sully, 152. A conspiracy formed in this city against Henry's life, 213.

Fleix. (Le) Catherine de Medicis and Henry IV. have a conference there, i. 62. The peace between this prince and Monsieur concluded there, 78.

Flessingue. The hatred which the inhabitants of this place bear to the English, iv. 125.

Fleury. The children of France reside in this house, iv. 357.

------- (Stephen). Counsellor of parliament, deputed to the states of Paris: maintains there the rights of Henry IV. to the crown of France, i. 312. Employed in the conversion of this

prince, 317. Draws up the proceſs againſt marſhal Biron, iii. 144.
Florence. See *Tuſcany, Medicis.*
Flour. (Saint) The count of Auvergne deſigns to ſeize it, iii. 114.
Foix. Henry IV. carries the court of Catherine de Medicis to that province, i. 65.
----- (Houſe of) Henry IV. has a law-ſuit with the family of Nevers for the eſtates of this houſe, v. 47.
Folembray. (Foreſt of) Sully riding out there to take the air diſcovers the Spaniſh army, and gives notice of their approach to Henry IV. ii. 79.
Font. (La) Sully's valet de chambre procures him the acquaintance of mademoiſelle de Courtenay, and perſuades him to marry her, i. 95. Employed by Sully to prevail upon admiral Villars to treat with Henry IV. 232. He enters again into Sully's ſervice after the death of Villars, ii. 134. Employments and gratuities beſtowed upon him by Henry IV. v. 189--vi. 35. The advice which Sully gives him upon his quitting the adminiſtration, 37.
Fontaine. (La) Deputed from the United Provinces to the court of London: his converſation with Sully, iii. 238, 239. See *Barnevelt*, &c.
Fontaine-Françoiſe. (Battle of) ii. 137, *et ſeqq.*
Fontaine-Mariel. (Francis de) Governor of Neufchâtel for the League, i. 177. Not able to prevent the taking of Louviers, 222.
Fontainebleau. Henry IV. in danger of his life there, ii. 8. A phantom, called the Great Hunter, appears there, 326, 327. Henry IV. firſt hears of the death of the ducheſs of Beaufort there. See *Eſtrees* (Gabriella de). Gives a magnificent reception to the duke of Savoy there, iii. 18. A diſpute between Du-Perron and Du-Pleſſis at that caſtle, 25. Henry makes a diſcovery there of L'Hôte's treaſon, iv. 25. Henry IV. embelliſhes that place, 207. Makes frequent journies thither, 291, Orders the ceremony of the baptiſm of the children of France to be performed there, 357. His ſtay there at different times, v. 3--59--119. New embelliſhments made there by Henry IV. 111.
Fontagne. His daughter forcibly carried away: he beſieges the caſtle of Pierrefort, v. 54, 55.
Fontenay-Le-Comte. Taken by the duke of Montpenſier, i. 44. Beſieged and retaken by Henry IV. A comical adventure which happens during this ſiege, 122, 123.
Fontenay. (John de Rohan de) Makes his eſcape during the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30.
Fontenelles. (Guy-Eder de Beaumanoir, baron of) Broke upon the wheel, iii. 148.
Fontrailles. (Aſtrac de) Has a ſuit at law with Henry IV. for the earldom of Armagnac, ii. 246.
Force. (James Nompar de Caumont, duke de La-) Implores a pardon for marſhal Biron of the king, iii. 147. Supports Sully's advice with regard to the expedition of Sedan, iv. 325. A quarrel between his family and that of St. Germain, v. 98. The ſervices he does the king in Navarre and Bearn, 184--205.
------ (Madame de La-) Serves Sully with the princeſs Catherine, ii. 181.

Forget. (Peter) See *Freſne* (de).
------- (Preſident). Draws up the contract for the purchaſe of Monceaux for the queen, iii. 101.
------- One of Sully's enemies at court, iv. 180.
Fors. (N. de) A proteſtant gentleman, i. 112.
Fortifications. Built or repaired by Henry IV. after the peace of Vervins, ii. 281. Sums delivered out of the treaſury by Sully for that purpoſe, v. 39.
---------- (Superintendance of) and buildings given to Sully, ii. 306--309--354. General abſtracts preſented by him to the king concerning them, iv. 364--370, 371.
Foſſé. (La) A contractor for re-uniting the Domaine, v. 40.
Foſſeuſe. Takes Mende, ii. 260.
-------- (Mademoiſelle de). Beloved by Henry IV. i. 62.
Foucrainville. A village, where the battle of Ivry was fought. See *Ivry.*
Fountains. Built or repaired in Paris by Henry IV. iv. 364. See *Edifices.*
Fouquerolles. A proteſtant officer, i. 121. Preſent at the ſiege of Laon, and the defeat of the great convoy, ii. 74.
Fouquet (William). See *Varenne* (La).
Fourcy. An officer of the houſhold of Henry IV. iv. 366--370. Purchaſes the ſuperintendance of the buildings from Sully, vi. 49.
Fourges. A gentleman in Sully's ſervice, cauſes Gizors to be taken, i. 212, 213. His father is ſeized by Sully with a boat richly laden, 224.
Fouſſac. (Raymond de Sognac, de) Solicits a pardon of Henry IV. for ſeveral gentlemen concerned in the rebellion, iv. 279.
Foy. (Saint) A proteſtant ſynod held in this city, ii. 90.
France. The deplorable condition to which the civil war had reduced this kingdom, ii. 247. The true policy to be purſued by her, 262. Henry labours, in conjunction with Sully, to reſtore her to her former grandeur, 295--310. Policy of Philip II. with reſpect to France, 330. What her conduct ought to be with reſpect to England, iii. 230. Her provinces threatened by an union between Spain and England, 259, 260. The fertility and other advantages of this kingdom, 342. Arts and profeſſions to be cultivated in it, 346. Sully's opinion upon the character and policy of ſome of her kings, iv. 111. Opulence and plenty brought into France by Henry IV. 204. Uſages and cuſtoms obſerved there in duels, 296, *& ſeqq.* A reſtitution of the uſurpations made on its frontiers by Spain and Lorrain, v. 116. Reflections upon her kings, her different governments, &c. 124. Origin of her monarchy, vi. 58. Advantages of her ſituation: judgment upon her wars and government, 59, *& ſeqq.* See *France,* (Kings of) *Deſcent, Government, Policy,* &c. What policy fitteſt to be purſued by her, 65. The great deſign of Henry IV. conſidered with reſpect to this kingdom, 76. Her religion, ib. 77. And policy, 86, 87. Forces and money to be employed on this occaſion, 98. See *Political deſign.*
------- (Houſe of). Sully's ſentiments upon the alliances of this houſe with thoſe of the other princes of Europe, iv. 130. See *Bourbon* (Houſe of).

France. (Kings of). Merovius, Childeric, Clovis, Clotaire I. Clotaire II. Sigebert, Dagobert, Charles-Martel, Pepin-le-Bref. Charlemagne, Lewis Le-Debonnaire, Lothario, Hugh Capet, Lewis VI. Lewis VII. Philip Auguſtus, St. Lewis, Philip Le-Bel, Philip de Valois, John I. Charles V. Charles VI. Charles VII. Lewis XI. Charles VIII. Lewis XII. Francis I. Henry II. Francis II. Charles IX. Henry III. Henry IV. See theſe names. Lewis XIII. See this name, and *Dauphin.*

------- (Children of). The ceremony of their baptiſm, iv. 357. Their reſidence at Noiſy, v. 60. Henry's tenderneſs for them, 59. Their ſickneſs in the year 1608, 107, 108. Henry's great tenderneſs for them, ib. Their fondneſs for Sully, vi. 17. Women and officers about their perſons: their grief for Henry's death, ib. See the four following articles.

------- (Chriſtina of). Second daughter of Henry IV. The ceremony of her baptiſm, iv. 357.

------- (Elizabeth of). Eldeſt daughter of Henry IV. her birth, iii. 177. She falls ſick: recovers, 209. Henry deſigns to marry her to the ſon of the duke of Savoy, iv. 313. Ceremony of her baptiſm, 357. She is ſeized with another indiſpoſition, v. 108. Henry's ſcheme for her marriage, 158.

------- (Gaſton-John-Baptiſte of). Third ſon of Henry IV. duke of Anjou, afterwards of Orleans. See *Orleans* (Duke of).

------- (N. of). Second ſon of Henry IV. duke of Orleans. See *Orleans* (Duke of).

Franche-Compte. The campaign made by Henry IV. in this province reckoned ſuperior to all others: towns taken, and other military expeditions during this campaign, ii. 135. See *Fontaine-Françoiſe.* A reſtitution made of the Spaniards uſurpations upon this frontier; as likewiſe of thoſe of Lorrain, v. 116.

Franchefes. (Don Juan-Idiaque) His correſpondence with Nicholas L'Hôte, iii. 26.

Francis I. King of France: the cauſe of his loſing the battle of Pavia, ii. 155. Value of the taille under his reign, v. 126. He aſſiſts the German princes againſt Charles IV. 240.

Francis II. King of France, gives an uncontrolled power to the houſe of Guiſe: his death: a ſaying of Francis duke of Guiſe concerning this prince, i. 13. Value of the taille under his reign, v. 127.

Francourt. (Gervas Barbier de) Chancellor to the king of Navarre, one of thoſe who adviſe him to go to the court of France, i. 19. Murdered at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, 32.

Franks, or *French.* Origin of their ſettlements and of their monarchy in Gaul, vi. 58.

French. Their character: their licentiouſneſs among foreigners, iii. 226. Their advantages over all other European nations, 342. Their paſſion for duels, iv. 295. Their character with reſpect to government, policy, &c. v. 121, 122. See *France.*

Freſne. (Adrienne de) Suppoſed to be poſſeſſed by a dæmon: a quarrel on this occaſion between Sully and father Cotton, iv. 348.

------- (Peter Forget de). Secretary of ſtate, i. 205. Made one of the members of the new council of finances, ii. 114--116--189. Supports the fraudulent financiers, 192. Quarrels with Sully, 231.

Devoted to the intereſts of the ducheſs of Beaufort, 286. Cauſe of his enmity to Sully, iv. 180--233. Favours the jeſuits on occaſion of the diſpute which happened between the Rochellers and father Seguiran, v. 15. The letter he writes after the prince of Condé's flight, 211.

Friars and *Monks*. They form themſelves into a regiment at the ſiege of Paris, i. 207. Endeavour to ruin Henry IV. ii. 8, 9. See *Jeſuits*, *Capuchins*. A great many religious orders eſtabliſhed by Clement VIII. iii. 337. Others who fix in France, iv. 144.

Frizeland. The prince of Orange defends this province againſt the Spaniards, iv. 222.

Frontiers. Sully cauſes plans to be drawn of them, and obliges the Spaniards and the duke of Lorrain to make a reſtitution of thoſe places they had uſurped there, v. 116.

Fuentes. (Count of) Defeats the Spaniards at Dourlens, ii. 130. Oppoſes the concluſion of the treaty of Lyons, iii. 68. Correſponds with marſhal Biron, 161. Takes poſſeſſion of the marquiſate of Final, 179. Continues to cabal againſt France, 325. The fort of Fuentes built. See *Griſons*, *Valteline*, (La). Miſcarries at the aſſembly of Coire, iv. 138. His cabals among the Griſons, v. 34. See *Spain*.

G.

GABELLE. Henry IV. occaſions ſome murmurs by his deſign of eſtabliſhing this tax over all the kingdom, iii. 123. Sully's maxims with reſpect to this branch of the finances, iv. 202, 203. Several regulations, v. 42, 43. Augmentations to be made in it when neceſſary, 173. See *Salt*, *Salt-pits*.

Gabriella. (The fair) See *Eſtrees* (Gabriella de).

Gadagne. See *Bothéon*.

Gadancourt. (N. de) Defeats the forces of the League, ii. 123. Goes with Sully to London, iii. 227.

Gages. For combat. See *Duel*.

Gaillon. Henry IV. deſigns to purchaſe this houſe, ii. 97.

Galaty. A Swiſs colonel: the ſaying of Henry IV. to him at the battle of Arques, i. 181.

Galcrande. (George de Clermont de Amboiſe, de) i. 111.

Galigai. (Stephen) Obtains the archbiſhopric of Tours, v. 333. An account of his perſon and character, ib.

-------- (Leonora) Comes into France in the queen's train, iii. 69. See *Italians*. Henry IV. diſlikes both her and her huſband, iv. 50--55. v. 77. She marries Conchini: Henry intends to ſend them to Italy, which the queen will not conſent to, 83. See *Conchini*. She engages in the conſpiracies againſt the deſigns and life of Henry IV. 160. Gratuities procured for her by the queen, 190. Admitted into the ſecret council of the queen regent, 325. See *Medicis* (Mary de). Whoſe favourite ſhe is, 359. She quarrels with the nobles and miniſters of ſtate, vi. 10. Circumſtances relating to her death, v. 343.

Gallies. Built and maintained by Henry II. ii. 407. Armament of gallies

gallies fitted out by Sully: the captains of gallies sued by him, v. 53. See *Marine.*

Gamache. (Nicholas Rouhalt de) A protestant lord, i. 24. Charles IX. grants him his life, 32.

Gand. (Viscount of) See *Melun.*

Gap. (Synod of) Where the protestants propose the doctrine that the Pope is antichrist, iii. 337. The doctrine of Gap resumed in the synod of Rochelle, v. 10, 11.

Garde. (Baron de La) Endeavours to seize Rochelle by stratagem, i. 20. Surrenders Caudebec to the prince of Parma, 249.

------ (Francis Du-Jardin, called captain La). His history: his trial on occasion of Ravaillac's conspiracy, v. 302. See *Conspiracy against Henry* IV. *Epernon,* &c.

Gargouille. (La) The origin of this fable. See *Romaine* (Saint).

Garnache. (Nemours de La). Taken by Henry IV. i. 127. Taken again by that prince, 160.

-------- (Nemours de La). Takes his mother prisoner, and is taken by her in his turn, i. 127.

--------- (N. de Rohan, lady of La). Takes her son prisoner, after having been made prisoner by him first, i. 127.

Garnet. (Henry) A jesuit: what share he had in the conspiracy against the king of England, iv. 376. v. 36. See *James, the English.*

Garnier. Preacher to the king: the gratuity he receives, iii. 106. He assists Biron in his preparations for death, 146.

Gatine. (Philip de) Tumult about the cross of Gatine, i. 21.

Gaucherie. (La) Preceptor to Henry IV. i. 10.

Gaudin. See *Babou, Estrees.*

Gaul. In what manner the French settled there, vi. 58.

Gautiers. See *League, Montpensier.*

Gelais. (Guy de Saint) Escapes the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i. 30---111. See *Lansac.*

Gendarms. Of the queen (Company of). Sully yields up the command of it, vi. 49.

---------- Of the duke of Orleans (Company of). Created, v. 53.

Gendre. (Le). One of Sully's secretaries, iv. 305.

Geneva. Sully visits that city during the war with Savoy, and frees the inhabitants from their apprehensions, iii. 60. Henry IV. permits them to demolish Fort St. Catherine, 63. The duke of Savoy fails in his attempt upon this city, which is followed by a treaty of peace through the mediation of the Swiss cantons, 180, 181. Henry IV. takes Geneva under his protection, and forms magazines there, v. 35. Du-Terrail, in endeavouring to surprise this city, is taken prisoner and beheaded, v. 224.

Genevois (Prince of). See *Garnache* (La).

Genies. (Elie de Gontault de Badefou de Saint) Brother-in-law to Sully, ii. 78. Serves the king in the affair of the Moors revolt from Spain, v. 136.

------ (Mademoiselle de Saint). Marshal Biron proposes a marriage between her and his brother, ii. 78. See *Blancard* (Saint). She is married to him, iii. 147. The two families endeavour afterwards to procure a divorce, v. 184.

Genlis. (John d'Angeſt d'Ivoy, of) Defeated in Flanders with the connivance of the court of France, i. 28.

George. (N. D'Auſſonvilie de Saint) Commands the troops of Lorrain in Burgundy: his ſucceſſes there, ii. 122. The part he has in the battle of Fontaine-François, 138.

------ (Count of Saint) Commands the Spaniſh forces in Flanders, iii. 325.

Geran. (N. de Saint) Preſent at the battles of Aumale, i. 236. And Fontaine-François, ii, 138. His friendſhip for Sully calumniated, iv. 185.

Gergeau. Taken by the two kings, i. 170. Sully obtains the government of it, iii. 340. General aſſembly of the proteſtants held in this city: Sully does the king great ſervice there, v. 104, 105.

Germain. (Suburb of Saint) Taken by Henry IV. at the firſt onſet, i. 185. Fair of Saint-Germain: Henry IV. loſes money there at play, v. 57.

-------- (Saint). De-Beaupre. See *Beaupre.*

-------- (Saint). De Clan. See *Clan.*

Germain-en-Laye. (Saint) The friends of the two princes make an attempt to carry them off from that place, but fail, i. 43. Henry IV. builds Château-neuf there, iii. 201. Other works and embelliſhments made by him there, iv. 207. Henry's reſidence in this caſtle; and his indiſpoſition there, 232. Sends the children of France to reſide in it, v. 60.

German horſe and foot. Their march into France imprudently concerted, i. 123. Defeated at Auneau, 148. They and the Lanſquenets betray Henry IV. at the battle of Arques, 181. Fire their pieces in the air at the battle of Ivry, 193. They are ſlaughtered, 196. The duke of Bouillon makes a new levy of theſe forces, 223. And leads them to the ſiege of Rouen, 226. Where they mutiny, 228. They refuſe to purſue the prince of Parma, 259.

Germany. Its ancient dukes deſcended from the Houſe of Habſbourg. See *Habſtourg, Auſtria.* Henry's deſign advantageous for the electors and princes of Germany, iii. 292. Their true policy with regard to Spain and Auſtria, 295. They reſolve to unite with Henry, iv. 133. Cuſtoms of duels in Germany different from thoſe in France, 300. Henry makes new allies, 313. Debts of France to the princes and cities in Germany diſcharged, v. 39. Affairs of Germany; and the commotions that happen there, 139. Henry engages the princes in his intereſts, 158, 159. They ſend a deputation to him from Hall, on occaſion of the ſucceſſion of Cleves, 247. See *Cleves.* They enter into a more ſtrict alliance with France, 257, 258. Ambaſſadors appointed to reſide there during the execution of the great deſign, 265. See *Henry, Political deſign, Rodolphus, Sax.* Part of the great deſign which relates to its princes and circles, vi. 84. Forces and money to be contributed by them, 97--105.

Geſvres. (Lewis Potier de) Secretary of ſtate, ſigns the duke of Guiſe's treaty, ii. 105.

Gibraltar. The Flemings gain a naval battle over the Spaniards before this town, v. 28.

Giez. Plots with D'Entragues to releaſe the count of Auvergne out of the Baſtile, iv. 150.

Gillot. (James) Counſellor of the parliament, concerned in the affair of Adrienne de Freſne, iv. 347.

------ Secretary of the ordnance. The benefits he receives from Sully, and the advice he gives him at his retreat, vi. 35--37.

Giſors. Taken by Sully: he is denied the government of it, i. 213. Henry's kindneſs to the poor receiver there, ii. 247.

Givry. (Anne d'Anglure, de) Attaches himſelf to Henry IV. after the death of Henry III. i. 176. Preſent in the battle of Aumale, 236. His elogium, ib. Defends Neufchâtel but indifferently, 246. Defeats the ſupplies which the Spaniards endeavour to throw into Laon, ii. 72. Aſſiſts at the defeat of the grand convoy, 74. Draws the army into danger by ſome falſe advices, 78.

-- --- (Cardinal of). Lends money to Henry IV. v. 57.

Glaſgow. (James de Bethune, archbiſhop of) Recommended to Sully by the cardinal of Bourbon, ii. 64. Anecdotes relating to his extraction and his life, ib. 65. Henry IV. grants him his protection, 72. Sully's letter to him upon the acceſſion of king James to the crown of England, iii. 210.

Glaſs. (Manufactory of) Eſtabliſhed by Henry IV. iv. 211.

Gondy. (Albert de) Duke of Retz. See *Retz.*

------ (Charles of). See *Belliſle.*

------ (Peter, cardinal of) Biſhop of Paris: the Pope refuſes to give him audience when ſent to him by Henry IV. i. 314. He goes back again to Rome to pay obedience to the Pope in the name of Henry IV. ii. 1. Is made head of the council of reaſon, 216.

Gontault. See *Biron, Salignac, Blanchard,* (Saint) *Genies* (Saint).

Gontier, or *Gonthery.* (Father) A jeſuit: his character, iv. 5. His plots at court to ruin Sully, 152. See *Jeſuits, Courtiers.* Henry IV. gives him a ſevere reprimand for his ſeditious manner of preaching, v. 149--196--212.

Gonzague. Origin of the grandeur of this houſe, iv. 355. See *Nevers, Mantua.*

Gordes. (Bertrand de Simiane, de) Endeavours to ſave the proteſtants at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 40.

Gourdon. (F. de Terride, viſcount of) Author of the enterprize againſt Cahors, i. 67. Relieves Villemur, 271.

Gournay. Taken by Henry IV. i. 178. This prince in danger of his life there, ii. 8.

--------- (Mademoiſelle de). Gives information of the conſpiracy againſt Henry IV. v. 273. See *Concini, Schomberg.*

Government. After the peace of Savoy, Henry IV. and Sully apply themſelves aſſiduouſly to the cares of it, iii. 71, *et ſeqq.* Maxims and reflections upon government, 78, 79--164--230--333--335, 336, iv. 93--98. The gentleneſs of Henry IV's government, 193. The great difficulty of correcting the abuſes which had crept into it before his reign, v. 48, 49. Maxims for good government, 120, *et ſeqq.* Schemes for a reformation in ſeveral parts of it. See *Cabinet of State.* Judgment upon the different governments which followed each other in France. See *France,* (kings of) *Deſcent.* See alſo *Politics, Police, Finances,* &c.

Governors of Provinces. In their own right and hereditary propoſed to Henry IV. ii. 148. See *Princes of the Blood, Lords, Montpenſier.*

Gracienne.

Gracienne. One of the ducheſs of Beaufort's women, ii. 357.
Gradenigo. Ambaſſador from Venice to France, iii. 87.
Grain. Regulations concerning it, ii. 281.
Grammont (Antony I. de) A proteſtant lord, i. 24. Charles IX. ſaves him from the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, 32.
---------- (Antony II. de). Sully's friendſhip for him calumniated, iv. 185. The ſpoils he takes from the Spaniards, v. 24.
---------- (Phillibert de). Quits the party of Henry IV. i. 65.
Grand. (Le) A farmer of the revenue, ii. 219.
Grandry. (Peter de) A proteſtant gentleman, eſcapes from the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30.
Grands-Jours. (Chamber of) Held by Sully in Limoſin, iv. 284.
Grange. (Francis de La). See *Montigny, Arquien.*
Grange Le-Roy. One of the members of the new council of the finances, ii. 114. One of the deputies to the diſtricts of the kingdom, 191. Oppoſes Sully in the council, 231.
Gratz. (Archdukes of) See *Auſtria.* (Margaret, Ferdinand, of).
Grave. Taken by the prince of Orange, iii. 179.
Gravelines. Some forces defeated there, i. 12.
Graveſend. Sully's reception there, iii. 224.
Great Britain. Three kingdoms ſo called, iv. 125. See *England,* &c. *James.*
Greenwich. Sully has an audience there of king James, and is entertained there by that prince, iii. 246. See *Sully, James,* &c.
Greffes. Edicts concerning them in favour of the count of Soiſſons, iv. 210. Sully re-unites them, and the clerks offices, at the court of Languedoc, to the crown lands, v. 40.
Gregory XIII. Pope. Rejoices at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 31.
Gregory XIV. Sends troops to the aſſiſtance of the League, i. 234.
Greſin. (Bridge of) Article of the treaty of Lyons, concerning this bridge and the paſs there, iii. 67.
Grey. (Lord) conſpires againſt king James, iii. 320.
Griffin. (Lord) Sully ſees him at Dover, iii. 90. One of the diſaffected lords, 233.
Grillon. (Lewis Berton de) Gives Henry III. good counſel on the day of the barricadoes, i. 150. Henry IV. writes a letter to him after the battle of Arques, 181. His valour, and the wounds he receives at the ſiege of Rouen, 234. He rails at marſhal Biron in the king's preſence, ii. 18. Bon-mot of his upon the ſuperintendant D'O, 99. The adventure at Charbonnieres which creates a friendſhip between him and Sully, iv. 163, 164. His character, 162. An affair between him and Sully, relating to the poſt of colonel of the guards, likely to be of dangerous conſequence to that miniſter, 166. His whimſical humour, and arrogant manner of ſpeaking to the king, 167. The affair of the colonel's commiſſion terminated to the king's ſatisfaction, 191.
------- (Thomas Berton, commandeur de). Endeavours to deprive Bois-roſé of Feſcampe, ii. 14.
Grimouville. Counſellor of the parliament of Rouen in the king's party, ii. 166.
Griſons. Henry IV. unites them with the Venetians, iii. 176. Origin of

of their differences with Spain, iv. 134. See *Valteline*, *Fuentes*. Farther account of these affairs: they declare against Spain, 138. They break formally with that crown, and enter into a league with France and the republic of Venice, v. 34, 35. The debts due to them by France discharged by Sully, 39. The bad conduct of Refuge, envoy from France to the Grisons, 228. Caumartin sent ambassador there, 265. How concerned in the great design, vi. 84.

Guelder. Count and counts of this name, v. 231. Disputes concerning this succession. See *Cleves*.

Guele. (La-) Dissuades Henry III. from having the duke of Guise assassinated, i. 151. Kills James Clement, 171. One of the courtiers who oppose the measures of Sully, iii. 47. iv. 79.

Guesche. (George de Villequier de La) Defeated at the pass of Vienne, i. 263.

-------- (Antony de Marasin, de). Murdered at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 32.

Gueret. (John) A jesuit involved in the conspiracy of Châtel, ii. 122.

Guiche. (Diana D'Andoins, countess de La) Beloved by Henry IV. i. 91. Sends him forces at her own expence: the answer made by her son to this prince, ib. Henry presents her with the colours taken at the battle of Coutras, 146. She favours the loves of the princess Catherine and the count of Soissons, ii. 99. Gives bad counsels to this princess, 172.

Guidi. An Italian, plots with Concbini against Henry IV. v. 155.

------ (Chevalier). Agent for the grand duke of Tuscany in France, v. 225. Henry IV. attaches him to himself, 228.

Guignard. (John) a jesuit: is hanged on account of his being concerned in Châtel's conspiracy, ii. 121. An examination of this fact, ib. See *Jesuits*.

Guillouaire. An agent of the count of Soissons, iv. 142.

Guines. See *Coucy*.

Guinterot. Envoy from the duke of Holstein to France, iv. 212.

Guise. (House of) Establishes itself in France, i. 12. Very powerful in the reign of Francis II. 13. The true sentiments of these princes upon religion, 105. Their ambition and projects, 150, 151, 152. Friendship between them and Sully, and the services they mutually do each other, iv. 367. Sully justifies them to Henry IV. v. 21. And does them great service, 96. Henry's aversion to that family, 98. See the following articles, *Lorrain*.

----- (Catherine of Cleves, duchess of) prevails upon her son to return to his duty; procures him the favour of Henry IV. her character and eulogium, ii. 100, 101. Henry grants her a pardon for the prince of Joinville, iii. 157. Agreeableness of her conversation, iv. 47. Friendship between her and Sully, 367. She gives Sully information of the new court, vi. 10.

----- (Charles of Lorrain, duke of) Makes his escape from the castle of Tours; a saying of Henry's concerning this escape, i. 223. His squadron is defeated at Bar by this prince, 237. and afterwards at Yvetot, 251. His designs, plots, &c. with the states of Paris disconcerted, 309. Desirous of returning to his obedience, ii. 100. Champaign rises against him, and Sully concludes his treaty; articles

articles of this treaty, 103, *& seqq.* He comes to court to throw himself at Henry's feet; his reception from that prince, 105. Sully's apology for the treaty he had made for the duke of Guise; praises of his conduct in Provence, 107, 108, 109. Reduction of Marseilles, and other brave actions, and circumstances relating to the life of this duke; Henry praises him, 110. He drives out the duke of Epernon from Provence, 183. The sum of money he receives upon his treaty, 311. His reception of the arch-dukes at Marseilles, 337. Attends Henry IV. in the campaign of Savoy, iii. 60. This prince, in consideration of him, pardons Joinville, 157. An adventure between him and Grillon, iv. 162, 163. Sully takes his part against Henry, v. 21. and justifies him with regard to the difficulties raised to the marriage of the duke of Vendome with mademoiselle de Mercœur, 99. The queen regent makes him one of the members of the new council of state, 326. He quarrels with the count of Soissons, and is supported by Sully, 332. He continues attached to the duke of Sully against all his enemies, vi. 10. Gratuities which he procures from the queen regent, 20. See *Lorrain.*

Guise. (Francis de Lorrain, duke of) Re-kindles the war between France and Spain, i. 12. A saying of his upon Francis II. ib. He is put at the head of the council and the armies, 13. In disgrace after the death of Francis II. ib. His death, his titles, 12. He forms the plan of the League, 98. His and the cardinal of Lorrain's pretensions upon Provence, Anjou, Metz, &c. See also *Lorrain* (Charles, cardinal of).

------ (Henry of Lorrain, duke of) Catherine de Medicis unites with him, i. 13. Charles IX. opposes his marriage with Margaret of Valois; resolves to have him assassinated; and attempts to murder him with his own hand, 16. He forms, in concert with the queen mother, the scheme of the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 28. Leads the assassins to admiral de Coligny; pursues Montgomery, 32. Friendship between him and the king of Navarre, 47. Henry III. hates him, and, contrary to his inclinations, concludes the peace of 1577, 61. The weakness of his party in its beginning, 93. See *League.* Accused of being indifferent about all religions, 105. Defeats the foreign forces at Auneau, 148. Day of the barricadoes, 150. Different opinions concerning his views in this enterprize, 151. A saying of the prince of Parma's upon this action; another of Sixtus V. on the same subject: the resistance he meets with from the president Harlay, Stafford, &c. 152. His conferences with Catherine de Medicis, 156. Henry III. causes him to be assassinated at Blois, ib. Particulars, and different opinions of this action, ib. His character; his projects, &c. 157. See *Lorrain.*

------ (Lewis of Lorrain, cardinal of) Assassinated at Blois, i. 156. See the former article.

------ (Mademoiselle de) Margaret of Lorrain. Solicits Henry IV. in favour of her brother, ii. 100. See *Guise* (Charles of). Designed to be married to the king, 269. Her gallantries, ib. She is employed in the marriage of M. de Vendome with mademoiselle de Mercœur, v. 99.

Guitry. (John de Chaumont de) Author of the scheme for carrying off the princes from Saint Germain, 43. Negotiates in Germany for the protestant party, 121. Is partly the cause of the defeat at Auneau, 148.

------ Present at the siege of Laon, and the attack of the grand convoy, ii. 75.

Guyenne. Henry's journey to that province, iii. 133.

H.

Habsbourgh. (Counts of) See *Austria* (House of).

Habsbourgh. (Raoul, or Rodolphus d') First author of the grandeur of the house of Austria, i. 4. The States conquered by him, iv. 310, 311.

Hacqueville. (N. de Vieux Pont d') Surrenders Pontaudemer to the prince of Parma, i. 249.

Hagenau. Offers made by Spain to Henry IV. in this place, i. 91.

Hall. (Assembly of) And a deputation sent to Henry IV. by the German princes, v. 247. See *Cleves, Political design.*

Hallot. (Francis de Montmorency de) Wounded at the siege of Rouen, i. 228. Assassinated by D'Allegre, v. 55.

----- (Michael Bourouge du) Governor of Angers for Henry III. his punishment, i. 107.

Ham. Taken at the first assault by the French, ii. 131.

Hameaux. (Des) Counsellor of the parliament of Rouen, in the party of Henry IV. ii. 166.

Harlay. (Achilles de) First president. His resolute reply to the duke of Guise, after the action of the barricadoes, i. 152. He draws up the process against marshal Biron, iii. 144. Opposes the return of the jesuits, iv. 6. Appointed one of the council of the regency by Henry IV. v. 266. A speech of his to the duke of Epernon after the assassination of that prince, 300.

Harlay Beaumont. See *Beaumont.*

Harlay-Montglat. See *Montglat.*

Harley-Sancy. See *Sancy.*

Haulle. (La-) Member of the parliament of Rouen, in the party of Henry IV. ii. 166.

Havre-de-Grace. Delivered up to the English by the protestants, i. 21. Taken by the forces of Henry IV. 187. Surrenders to this prince, ii. 51. The sum paid for its reduction, 311.

Haye. (La-) in Touraine. Skirmishes in this place, i. 135.

Hague. Treaty between Spain and the United Provinces; and that of the mediation of the kings of France and England concluded in this place, v. 217.

Hayes. (Des) Gasque. A protestant gentleman, makes his escape at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i. 30.

Hebert. (Charles) An agent of marshal Biron's. Obtains the king's pardon, iii. 149. Continues his plots at Milan, 325.

Heemskerk. (Jacob) The Dutch vice-admiral. Gains a great naval victory over the Spaniards; killed in the battle, v. 29.

Henry II. King of France. A saying of his to the prince of Navarre,

Navarre, i. 10. A rupture between this prince and Philip II. 12. He is killed in a tournament, 13. Value of the taille in his reign, v. 126. He ſuccours the German princes againſt Charles V. 240.

Henry III. King of France. Accuſed of being the author of the prince of Condé's aſſaſſination, i. 1. The diſcourſe of this prince to Miron, his firſt phyſician, 25, 26. He is elected king of Poland, and raiſes the ſiege of Rochelle, 41, 42. At his return from Poland, he declares war againſt the huguenots; raiſes the ſiege of Livron, 46. Marries the princeſs of Vaudemont, ib. His averſion to Monſieur, 47. He concludes the peace of 1577, out of hatred to the Guiſes. His conduct a mixture of devotion and voluptuouſneſs, 61. Roſny deputed to him by Henry IV. Gives Monſieur at his return from Flanders, a cool reception, 92. Reproaches Henry IV. on account of Margaret of Valois, ib. He quarrels with, and is afterwards reconciled, to the League: forced to unite with it, 99, 100. Loſes an opportunity of re-uniting the Low Countries to France, 101. Supports the League through timidity, 106. Beginning of the negotiation for the union of the two kings, 119. A ſaying of Henry III. concerning the proteſtants of the League, 118. His conduct the cauſe that the foreign troops were defeated at Auneau, 121. Bad policy of his council, 129, &c. He puts the duke of Joyeuſe at the head of his army, 131. Day of the barricadoes; errors committed on this occaſion, 150. Converſation between him and Sully, whoſe advice he rejects, 155. He cauſes the duke and the cardinal of Guiſe to be aſſaſſinated; judgment upon this action, 156. New faults committed by this prince; the extremity to which he is reduced, 158. Sully negotiates with him for a union between the two kings, 162. This treaty is concluded, and they have a conference together. Military exploits in the neighbourhood of Tours, 164, 165. Henry IV. praiſes Henry III. 167. The ſucceſs of his arms; he beſieges Paris, 170. Is wounded at Saint-Cloud, and dies: the friendſhip he expreſſes for Henry IV. 171, 172. Particulars relating to this event, ib. The error he committed, by giving the government of Brittany to the duke of Mercœur, 185. His favourites, ii. 98. It is propoſed to him to marry the princeſs Catherine, 338. Debts contracted by him during the League, iv. 206. Augmentation of the taille under his reign, v. 127.

Henry IV. King of France. Commands the proteſtant troops at the encounter of Arnai-le-Duc, i. 3. Particulars relating to his birth, his education, and his happy qualities, 9. Titles borne ſucceſſively by him, 10. Other accounts of his infancy and youth, ib. His talents for war, 11. He is declared chief of the proteſtant party; the powerful enemies he has to oppoſe, 14. Plot between him and the duke of Alençon to ſtrangle Catherine de Medicis, ib. He goes to reſide at Rochelle, after the peace of 1570, 15. A project for marrying him to Margaret of Valois, 16. Overhears ſomething concerning the reſult of the conference at Baïonne, 19. Marries Margaret, 27. Cannot be prevailed upon to leave Paris, 31. In what manner he eſcaped death at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew: Charles IX. obliges him to change his religion, and keeps him priſoner, 36. Means made uſe of by the queen mother to embroil him with

with Monſieur, 47. Rejects with horror the propoſal of murdering that prince; his friendſhip with the duke of Guiſe, ib. He eſcapes from court, and joins Monſieur and the prince of Condé, 84. Is abandoned by Monſieur, 49. Takes up arms again, but with little ſucceſs, 50. Loſes Marmande, 53. Love carries him to Bearn, 54. He takes Eauſe by ſtorm, 55. Other military exploits, 57, 58. A bold action of his at Nerac, 60. He quarrels with the prince of Condé; and cannot prevent the taking of Brouage, 61. Has a conference with the queen mother; propoſals, accepted and refuſed, 62. His reply to Catherine de Medicis; his gallantries with her maids of honour, ib. See *Agelle* and *Foſſeuſe*. He takes Fleurence and Saint Emilion, 64. His aſtoniſhing valour at the ſiege of Cahors, which he takes by aſſault, 67. He renders the prince of Condé's ſcheme ineffectual, 72, 73. Takes Monſegur, and ſhuts himſelf up in Nerac, 74. The friendſhip he conceives for Sully, whom he reproves for his faults, and afterwards pardons him, 75, 76. Catherine conceives a deſign of treating with him for his claims upon Navarre, 76. A converſation between him and Sully, in which he foretells what will happen to Monſieur and him in Flanders, 78, 79. The reception he gives him at his return from that expedition, 90. Sends him to court, to communicate the advantageous offers which had been made him by Spain at Hagemau, 91. And to obſerve the motions of the League, 93. His anſwers to the ſharp letters he receives from Henry III. 92. They give him poiſon, which produces no effect: he is again in danger, from captain Michau, 97. He makes preparations for reſiſting the forces of the League: his indignation at the treaty of Nemours, 99. His confidence in Sully, 104. Deputies ſent him from the court, ib. His true ſentiments concerning religion, 105. His party worſted at Angers, 106, 107. Fights againſt the three armies of Maïenne, Joyeuſe, and Matignon, 115. Goes to Rochelle, 116. Takes Talmont, 122. Chizay, Sancy, Saint Maixent, and Fontenai, hindered by an accident from being informed of the arrival of the foreign troops, 123. Takes Maillezais, Mauleon, La-Garnache; Loſes Nyort, Parthenai, and retires to Rochelle, 128. He has conferences with the queen mother at Cognac, Saint-Brix, Saint-Maixent, 130. The anſwers he gives this princeſs: the danger he is in at Saint-Brix, ib. Joyeuſe takes Saint-Maixent and Maillezais from him, 132. The advantages he gains over this army, 135. He wins the battle of Coutras, 140, *& ſeqq.* Actions and ſayings of this prince, and other particulars relating to him during this battle, and immediately after it, 141, 142. The faults he commits, which hinder him from deriving any advantage from this victory, 143. He goes to Bearn, and there makes a diſcovery of the plots of the count of Soiſſons, 146. His grief for the death of the prince of Condé: juſtifies Charlotte Catherine de La-Tremouille, 149. Offers his perſon and forces to Henry III. after the action of the barricadoes, 153. A ſaying of his upon the aſſaſſination of the Guiſes, 157. He endeavours to diſconcert the deſigns of the chiefs of the proteſtant party; falls ſick at La-Mothe-Frelon; deputes Sully to Henry III. and takes Garnache and Nyort, 160. And afterwards Châtelleraut and Argenton, 162. Has a conference with Henry III. after

after the treaty of Pleſſis-lez-Tours: the counſels he receives, and ſaying of his upon this ſubject, 164, 165. Forces the duke of Maïenne from Tours, 166. The ſucceſs of the arms of the two kings, 170. The great ſervices he does Henry III. and the danger to which he expoſes himſelf, ib. Henry III. jealous of him, ib. He viſits this prince when wounded: the marks of affection which he receives from him, 171. He aſks advice from Sully, 173. Henry IV. acknowledged king of France by ſome of the chief officers in the royaliſt party, and abandoned by others: meaſures taken by him in this juncture, 174, 175. His reaſons for going farther from Paris: he ſurprizes Meulan, takes Clermont and other cities of Normandy, 177. Gains a victory at Arques; particular account of this battle, 179. Bon-mot of his upon this occaſion, and other anecdotes during and after this action, ib. He harraſſes his enemies; the danger he is in at Dieppe, 184. He loſes Vernon, and advances towards Paris; cauſes the ſuburbs to be attacked, but without ſucceſs, 185. Takes Eſtampe, and ſeveral other towns, 186. Cauſes the ſiege of Meulan to be raiſed, 189. Not able to prevent the loſs of Rouen, 190. The battle of Ivry; particulars concerning this battle, and the behaviour of this prince there, 193. Careſſes Sully highly, and confers the order of knighthood upon him, 201, 202. Takes Dreux, and loſes Sens: cauſes of his not taking advantage of this victory, 204. He carries the ſuburbs of Paris, and lays ſiege to the city, 205. Raiſes the ſiege through tenderneſs to the inhabitants, 206. Commits an error, by poſting himſelf at Chelles, 208. He takes Clermont, 210. and purſues the prince of Parma at great advantage: ſaves the life of the baron de Biron, 211. Goes to Cœuvres to viſit the fair Gabriella, 212. His party is increaſed, ib. He takes Chartres, 216. and Corbie, ib. His paſſion for mademoiſelle d'Eſtrees, ib. A letter from Henry IV. to Sully, ib. The taking of Noyon, and other advantages gained over the League, 217. Henry IV's preſence at Mante is the cauſe of Sully's failing in an enterpriſe he had meditated againſt the duke of Maïenne, 221. He ſurpriſes Louviers, 222. Takes poſſeſſion of one part of Normandy, ib. Goes to Compeigny to viſit the fair Gabrielle, 223. His reaſons for favouring a marriage between the viſcount de Turenne and mademoiſelle de Bouillon, 224. See *Bouillon, Mark* (La-). He undertakes the ſiege of Rouen, 226. Errors committed in the attack, 227, 228. Valour of this prince in the aſſault, 230. The catholics in his army diſcontented, 231, 232. He goes to meet the prince of Parma, 233. A ſaying of his upon the death of Sixtus V. 234. Marches and encampments of this prince, 235. He defeats a ſquadron of the duke of Guiſe's, 237. Battle of Aumale; particulars relating to this action, in which he is wounded, 240, &c. He forces the duke of Parma to repaſs the Somme, 243. Mutiny in his army, 245. He raiſes the ſiege of Rouen, 246. He offers the prince of Parma battle in vain, 247. Divides his forces, 248. Joins them again, and defeats the advanced guard of his enemies, 250. Gains other advantages, 251. Remarks upon theſe expeditions, and upon the errors attributed to Henry, ib. 252. The prince of Parma makes his retreat, 253. and Henry's army refuſes to purſue

him, 254. He is greatly perplexed how to keep them together, 260. Disbands his army, and leads the protestant troops into Picardy, 261. His secret motive for this journey, 262. He disconcerts the plots of the count of Soissons in Bearn, 264. Henry IV. takes Epernay, and disbands his troops, 273. Sully discontented with him; the occasion of it, 274. Discovers, by Sully's means, the secrets of the League, and of the third party, 283. The great confidence he places in Sully, who is the chief author of his conversion, 286. Conversations between him and Sully, wherein the latter urges him to change his religion; the motives which determine him to it, 289, 290. Henry obliges the protestants to consent to a negotiation with the catholics, 294. Conditions proposed to him by the League, 304. which he rejects, 306. His claim to the crown incontestible, 314. He raises the siege of Selles, ib. His ambassadors rejected at Rome, ib. He endeavours to gain the Pope, and agrees to a conference with the catholics, which produces nothing, 315. Sully prevails upon him to come to a resolution, 320. He is present at the conferences held between the catholics and the protestants, 322. Besieges and takes Dreux, 323. The sincerity of his conversion, 326. His conduct towards the protestants, 327. The letter he wrote to his mistress on this subject, 328. Particulars relating to his abjuration: Sayings of this prince, 330, 331. He sends a deputation to Rome, ii. 1. The wise conduct he observes with Spain, with the League, and the Huguenots, 2, 3. He grants a truce to the deputies from the city of Paris, 4. Receives a Spanish deputy, 6. See *Nugnés, D'Entragues*. Saying of his concerning his abjuration, 4. Deputes La-Varenne unseasonably to Mandoce, 6. Bon-mot of La-Varenne, 7. Plots of the monks against Henry IV. 8, 9. See *Jesuits, Capuchins*. He resumes his conferences upon religion: the catholics jealous of the protestants about his person, 10. He commences a treaty with admiral Villars, 11. Succours Fescamp, 15. Is received into Meaux, &c. ib. Is capable of suppressing his resentment: an anecdote on this subject, 18. Causes himself to be crowned at Chartres, 20. Reconciles, by means of Sully, the duke of Montpensier and the count of Soissons, ib. and gets the contract of marriage out of their hands, 26. Villars submits to him, 38. He is received in Paris, where he pardons all his enemies, 42. Particulars and bon-mots of his own on this subject, 43, 44. He restores order and regularity, and pardons the duke of Montpensier and Biron, 45. Present made to him by Sully, 56. His reception of Villars: several cities submit to him, 57, 58. He goes into Picardy, where the Spaniards had taken La-Capelle, 60. Lays siege to Laon, ib. The great fatigue and labours he sustains at this siege, 71. Prevents the Spaniards from succouring Laon, 73. Biron discontented with him, 77. His army in danger of being surprized by the Spaniards, which obliges him to make his retreat, 78. The military qualities of this prince extolled, 80. He conceals the causes he has for complaint against Bouillon, and deputes Sully to him, 84, 85. Laon taken: makes his entry into several towns of Picardy: the success of his arms in the provinces, 93. The duke of Guise returns to his obedience, 100. Henry's obliging behaviour

to him, and the praiſes he gives to the princes of that houſe, 105--109. The familiar manner in which this prince lives with his courtiers, 106. His amours with the fair Gabriella: converſation between him and Alibouſt upon this ſubject, 112, 113. Change which he makes in the council of finances, 114. He declares war againſt Spain, 118. Is wounded by Châtel: Particulars relating to this horrid attempt, and to the baniſhment of the jeſuits, 119, *& ſeqq.* Firſt ſucceſs of his arms againſt Spain, 122. He goes to Burgundy, 123. His amour with the fair Gabriella, 124. A new council ſettled during his abſence, 126. Converſation between him and Sully at Moret, 127. The count of Soiſſons diſguſted, ib. Campaign of Burgundy: battle of Fontaine-François, 137. Henry returns to Paris, and, with Sully, deplores the misfortunes which happened in Picardy, 142. Conditions upon which the Pope grants him abſolution, 144, 145. Cannot prevent the loſs of Calais, which he had refuſed to yield to Elizabeth, 147. He provides for the ſecurity of Picardy, 148. He reproaches the duke of Montpenſier with the part he had in the criminal deſigns of the grandees, 149. Reproves the duke of Bouillon, whom he ſends ambaſſador to London, 150, 151. Is deſirous of ſending Sully with him, but he is unwilling to go, 152. He lays ſiege to La-Fère, 154. Is ſeized with an indiſpoſition, 156. Loſes Arras: ſucceeds better in other expeditions, 157. Angry with his council for ſuffering him to be in want of neceſſaries during this campaign, 159, 160. Henry gives audience to the deputies from Provence and Languedoc, 166. Commiſſions Sully to break off the marriage between the princeſs Catherine and the count of Soiſſons, 167. Is angry with Sully upon this occaſion, and without cauſe; but makes him reparation, 176--178. The different fortunes of his arms in ſeveral provinces, 181, 182. After much irreſolution, and many obſtacles, he obliges the council of finances to receive Sully amongſt them, 183, 184. The duke of Maïenne makes a treaty with him, and comes to pay him his obedience, 189. He orders Sully to viſit the diſtricts, 191. Recals him, in conſequence of ſome bad counſels he had received; does him juſtice, rewards and ſupports him againſt Sancy and the council, 195, 196. His ſpeech to the aſſembly of Notables, 208. The prudent conduct he obſerves towards them by the advice of Sully, 212, *& ſeqq.* Project for raiſing the ſiege of Arras, 220. The great concern he expreſſes for the loſs of Amiens, 222. Sully directs him to the means of regaining this place, 223. An extraordinary council called upon this occaſion, 227. He leaves Sully at the head of the council, and departs for this expedition, 229. His labours at this ſiege: he carries his miſtreſs thither: his ſolicitude for Sully's ſafety, whom he makes uſe of to diſconcert the pernicious deſigns of the proteſtants, 233. He beſtows the poſt of grand maſter of the ordnance upon d'Eſtrees, after having promiſed it to Sully; to whom, in recompence, he gives the government of Mante, 238. Particulars relating to the ſiege of Amiens; it is taken, notwithſtanding all the endeavours of the arch-duke to prevent it, 241. Letters of Henry IV. 242, 243. Several military expeditions, in which he has different ſucceſs, 244, *& ſeqq.* The king returns to Paris, and makes preparations

for his march into Brittany, 248. A fine saying of Henry's with regard to marshal Biron, ib. He listens to negotiations for a peace, 250. Suffers himself to be moved in favour of the duke of Mercœur: the freedom with which Sully expatiates upon this error, 252. He pacifies Brittany, and makes himself be obeyed there, 253. Labours for the edict of Nantz, 258. A bon-mot of his upon Elizabeth, the arch-duke, and himself, 259. A fine conversation which he holds with the English and Dutch ambassadors, upon the necessity of a peace, 261, 262. He puts the last hand to the edict of Nantz, 264. Speaks and acts with authority to Bouillon and the protestants, 265. Resides some time at Rennes: a curious conversation between him and Sully upon the dissolution of his marriage, 267. The extreme weakness of this prince with respect to his mistress, 274, 275. He goes into Picardy, 276. His pleasant replies to those that harangue him, 277. He signs the peace of Vervins at Paris: praises of this prince, and a bon-mot of his upon this treaty: other particulars relating to the publication of the peace, 279, 280. Henry applies himself to the affairs of government; regulations and establishments which he makes in the militia, fortifications, police, and the belles-lettres, 281, 282. He interests himself in the question of the true or false Don Sebastian, 283. Causes a conference to be held at Boulogne, between the deputies of Spain and England, and names two cardinals, ib. The duchess of Beaufort abuses his indulgence in the ceremony of the baptism of her second son, 286. Henry supports Sully against her, and reconciles them: a curious conversation between them three, 290, *& seqq.* This prince dangerously ill at Monceaux, 293. The posts he bestows on Sully, 302. His great confidence in him, 305. Sums paid by Henry to the chiefs and cities of the League at their treaties, 310--312. He takes Sully's part against d'Epernon, 316. and the grandees, 318. The authority which he gives him, 325. Talents of this prince for government, and his great knowledge in the finances, ib. 326. Marriage of the princess Catherine with the prince of Bar, in which he is ill served by D'Ossat: he causes the ceremony to be performed by the archbishop of Rohan, notwithstanding the opposition of the clergy, 338, *et seqq.* Henry reforms the edict of Nantz, 348. His prudent conduct in the affair of Martha Brossier, 352. He makes Sully superintendant of the finances, buildings, and fortifications, and grand surveyor, 354. Death of the duchess of Beaufort, 355. Henry's presage of her death, 358. His excessive grief; is comforted by Sully, 364, 365. A bon-mot of this prince's to father Ange, 367. Henry IV. goes to Blois: the occasion of this journey, iii. 4. He writes to Mageret upon the dissolution of his marriage with her, and causes this affair to be prosecuted diligently, 6. He falls in love with mademoiselle D'Entragues, 7. Is weak enough to give her a promise of marriage, 8. which Sully tears in his presence, 10. His discontent when Sully informs him that the treaty for a marriage between him and the princess of Tuscany is concluded, 11. An Italian who attempted to stab him is seized, 12. He gives the post of grand master of the ordnance to Sully, 15. His reception to the duke of Savoy, 18. Presents made by these

two princes to each other, 19. Henry ſupports Sully againſt the commiſſaries, and avoids the ſnares laid for him by the duke of Savoy in the affair of the marquiſate of Saluces, 22. Is preſent at the diſpute between the biſhop of Evreux and Du-Pleſſis Mornay, 27. The letter he writes to D'Epernon upon this occaſion, 28. His departure for the expedition of Savoy: takes the marchioneſs of Verneuil along with him, 29. He is ſtopped by the artifices of the duke of Sully, 32, 33. Takes Chamberry, &c. 34. Is married by proxy to the princeſs of Tuſcany, ib. Relies upon Sully for the management of this war, 37. Comes to the ſiege of Charbonniers, 39. To that of Montmelian, and expoſes his perſon there imprudently, 53, 54. The reception he gives to the deputies from Geneva: ceremonies and particulars of his marriage with Mary de Medicis, 61, 62. Ill ſerved by the commiſſioners for the peace, 63. His perplexity occaſioned by the intelligence between his courtiers and the duke of Savoy, 65, 66. He concludes an advantageous treaty, and returns to Paris, taking the queen along with him, 68. He corrects the abuſes in money and trade, &c. 73. Prohibits the wearing of gold or ſilver ſtuffs: the introduction of thoſe ſtuffs into France: the ſimplicity of his own dreſs, 74. Prohibits likewiſe the tranſportation of gold and ſilver coin out of the kingdom, 75. Eſtabliſhes a chamber of juſtice, 77. from which he draws but little advantage, 81. Henry IV's advice to the prince of Orange; and the journey he takes to Orleans, 82, 83. Motives of his journey to Calais, 84. His ambaſſador at Madrid inſulted, for which the pope procures him ſatisfaction, 85. The magnificent titles which the grand ſignior gives him by his ambaſſadors, 86. An embaſſy from the Venetians: his anſwer to the Spaniſh ambaſſador, 88. Reciprocal letters which paſs between him and Elizabeth: the reaſons which hinder them from conferring together perſonally, ib. They are calumniated on this account, 89. Henry ſends Sully to Dover to confer with queen Elizabeth, 90. He informs Sully of the birth of the dauphin, 98. Orders La-Riviere to calculate his nativity, 99. Sends him to St. Germain to be nurſed, 101. Procures a reſtitution of the iſles of Pommégue, &c. from the grand duke, ib. Appoints the count of Bethune ambaſſador to Rome, tho' Villeroy and Sillery oppoſe it, 104. Letters from this prince to Sully upon D'Ornano, and upon his ſtud of horſes at Meun, 105, 106. Endeavours to fix Biron in his allegiance, 107. Gives him a conſiderable gratuity, 109. Sends him ambaſſador to London, and to Switzerland, 111, 112. Receives notice of his conſpiracy againſt him, 114. Letters which he wrote to Sully, and the converſation he had with him upon the depoſitions of La-Fin, 115, 116. The amuſements of this prince at the Arſenal, 121. Is attacked by a fit of the gout: goes to Blois, and diſconcerts the deſigns of Biron there, 122. See *Malecontents*. A grand council held to determine upon the manner of arreſting Bouillon, D'Auvergne, and Biron, 128. Sully diſſuades Henry IV. from arreſting D'Epernon, 130. Another ſecret affair between him and Sully, concerning the queen and the Italians, 132. He ſhows himſelf in Poitou, Limoſin, and Guyenne, 133. He cauſes Biron and Auvergne to be arreſted: particulars relating to their

detention, 136, *& seqq.* The tryal of Biron, 144. His speech to the relations of this marshal, 147. Causes the baron de Fontenelles to be executed, and grants a pardon to all the other conspirators, 148. To Hebert and the Baron de Lux, 149. To the count of Auvergne: his motives for this clemency, 152. 154. To the prince of Joinville, whom he puts under confinement, 156. He endeavours, but in vain, to draw Bouillon to court, 158. Reproaches Spain on account of Marshal Biron's conspiracy, 161. Conversation between him and Sully, upon the bounds he intended to put to his benefactions to him, 162. 164. Affair of the advocates terminated peaceably, 166. His adventure with the attornies, whom he causes to be whipt, 169. Operations with regard to money: reflections upon them, 170, *et seqq.* Gold and silver mines discovered in France, 174. Edict against duels, 175. His journey to Calais, 177. Henry legitimates his son by the marchioness of Verneuil: is indisposed at Monceaux, 178. Goes to Metz, 184. Banishes the Sobeles, 185. Reconciles several German princes who come to pay their respects to him there, 187. Receives the jesuits there favourably, and promises to repeal their banishment, 188. Frees the pope from his apprehensions, on account of his armaments, 194. Henry IV. continues to support privately the Flemings against Spain, 196. His answer to the elector Palatine, who wrote to him in favour of Bouillon, 197. Sully's letter to him on this subject, 199. His grief for the death of queen Elizabeth, 200. His conversation on this subject with Sully, whom he determines to send ambassador to London, 201. His buildings, ib. 202. The private and public instructions which he gives to Sully: the great importance of this embassy, 205, 206. Henry dangerously ill at Fontainebleau: his great confidence in Sully: he recovers, 207, *et seqq.* Henry's letters to the king and queen of England, 215. Letters between the king and Sully during his stay in London, 217. Insult given to the French flag, 218. Sully removes the king's apprehensions on account of a supposed union between England and Spain, 263. This prince's reasons for taking the part of the English priests, 271. Sully acquaints the king of England with the great design, 289. See *Political Design, James.* King James emulous of Henry IV. 299. The error of not giving a charte-blanche to Sully, 302. Form of the treaty of alliance between the two kings, 304, *et seqq.* Presents made by Sully to the king, the queen, and the court of England, 310, 311. Henry caresses Sully highly at his return from London, 312. Praises him in public, and justifies him against the malicious aspersions of the count of Soissons, 315. Secret conversations on the subject of this embassy, 317. Measures taken against the intrigues of Spain at London, 323. Remonstrances made by Sully to Henry IV. upon the abuses of small edicts, 327. He retracts a grant which he had been surprised into by the count of Soissons, and defends Sully against the resentment of this prince and the marchioness of Verneuil, 329, *et seqq.* A private agreement between the king, the minister, and the sovereign courts, concerning these edicts, 329. Sully receives his majesty at Rosny: an accident occasioned by the rising of the waters, 334. Henry visits Normandy, 335.

Is taken ill at Rouen, 335. New discontent given him by Bouillon and the protestants, 336, *et seqq.* He gives the government of Poitou to Sully, 340. Establishes silk manufactures: conversation on this subject between him and Sully, by whom he cannot be dissuaded from this design, 341. 347. His great expences at play, for his mistresses, &c. ib. Sends a colony to Canada, 348. Medals presented to him by Sully, iv. 1. Death of the duchess of Bar: an examination into the effects of this princess, made by Henry and the duke of Bar, 2, 3. A fine answer made by Henry to the nuncio on this subject, 2. He recals the jesuits, 4, 5. Notwithstanding all the reasons urged by Sully against it, 14, 15. To whom he promises all sorts of satisfaction from them, 16. He gives them La-Fleche: makes father Cotton his confessor: other favours which he bestows upon them, 17. 20. His stay at Chantilly, 20. He discovers the treason of L'Hôte, and causes him to be pursued, 25. His treatment of Villeroi, 30, 31. He restores him to favour, and comforts him for what had happened, 34. Henry sends his cardinals to the conclave, 38. Promotion of French cardinals, 39. Makes frequent visits to Sully at the Arsenal: his conversation with him upon his domestic disquiets, 40. He is offended with Sully for his resolute opposition to him, 41, 42. Makes him an apology for it, 43. Confides to him his uneasiness, occasioned by the queen and the marchioness of Verneuil, 44. Writes a letter to the marchioness full of reproaches, ib. Demands from her the promise of marriage, which she refuses, 45. The faults he attributes to the queen, 46, 47. Cannot follow Sully's advice, 48. And prevails upon him to try gentle methods, 49. Sully procures a reconciliation between him and the queen, with whom again he is embroiled, 52, 53. Cannot resolve to act with authority in his domestic affairs, 53. His weakness with regard to madame de Verneuil, whose artifices put Sully in danger of losing his confidence, 57. She attempts to get the king's marriage with Mary de Medicis cancelled, 60. His health endangered by these domestic troubles, 61. Favours queen Margaret in her process for her mother's estates, 62. Labours to prevent the plots of the count of Auvergne, with Spain and the protestants against him, 64. Projects with Sully a journey to the south of France, which the courtiers endeavour to dissuade him from, 66, 67. Calumnies spread against him, 69. He sends Sully into Poitou: honours paid him by the Rochellers in the person of the governor he sends to them, 70. Good consequences of this journey, 73. Henry gets the promise of marriage, which had made so much noise, out of the hands of madame de Verneuil, 79. He causes the count of Auvergne to be arrested: his reply to the countess of Auvergne, 86. Likewise D'Entragues and the marchioness of Verneuil, 87. Cannot resolve to banish the marchioness; and for her sake pardons the two criminals, 92. Particulars relating to this affair, ib. The gallantries of this prince, and the dangers he runs by visiting his mistresses, 94. Henry deposites his money in the Bastile: his speech in full council upon this occasion, 96. He undertakes to have the rents registered, 104. Establishes a chamber of justice, 105. Other operations in the

finances, 106; and regulations in the militia. The royal hospital for disabled soldiers, 109. Talents of this prince for government, 110. His two favourite maxims for war, 111. He unseasonably prohibits any commerce with Spain, 113. He repairs this error by concluding a treaty of commerce, for which he rewards cardinal Bufalo, 116. He continues secretly to support the United Provinces, 121. His discourse with the constable of Castile, upon the agreement between Spain and England; and with Sully, upon the same subject, 127, 128. The reception given to this ambassador, 132. Germany and Italy favourably disposed toward his great design, 133. The part he takes in the affair of the Valteline, 136. See *Crisons, Fuentes.* He gets possession again of the bridge of Avignon, 139. *& seqq.* Henry purchases the earldom of St. Paul from the count of Soissons, 142. Procures his natural son to be received into the order of Malta, 144. His buildings for his manufactures, ib. The religious orders he allows to be established in France, ib. He renews his correspondence with the marchioness of Verneuil: pardons the counts of Auvergne and D'Entragues, notwithstanding Sully's advice to the contrary, 145. Quarrels again with the queen, 148. Permits the jesuits to demolish the pyramid: particulars of this affair, 151. Does Sully justice in the great dispute he has with father Cotton for the college of Poitiers; and reconciles them, 152 --161. His great penetration and exact judgments of men, 154. He reconciles Sully and D'Epernon, 164, 165. A dispute with Grillon about the post of colonel of the guards, in which the courtiers and jesuits give him ill impressions of Sully, 166, *et seqq.* Sully's letter to him, and his answer to it, 172. He discovers his error, and excuses himself to Sully, 175. The interesting conversation between them, 179. His too great propensity to raillery and witticisms, 181. And his credulity in believing false reports, 183. He places all his confidence in Sully, and gives him the first place in his friendship, 188. Justifies him against the slanders of the courtiers, 191. Quarrels with him, and is again reconciled, 193. Henry concludes a marriage between mademoiselle de Sully and the duke of Rohan, 194. Gratuities and favours which he bestows upon Sully, 195. Denies him others, which he had solicited for his brother and son-in-law, 196. Orders Sully to demand mademoiselle de Melun in marriage for the marquis de Cœuvres, but the offer is rejected by her relations, 198. Great plenty and opulence in France during his reign, 204. An account of the debts of the state at his advancement to the throne, 205. Public edifices repaired or built by him, 207. Order and subordination established in the government, 208. Henry's stile in writing his letters to Sully: donations to several persons, 209. He establishes his silk manufactures, 211. Becomes a mediator between the princes of Europe; presents made by him to them, 212. Has the principal share in the election of pope Leo XI. and pope Paul V. rejoicings on this occasion, 215. Gives orders to Spinola, who is passing to Flanders, 221. Dissatisfied with his subjects who serve in the arch-duke's army, 223. Causes some prizes taken from Spain to be restored, 224. His politics disapproved by his council, 225. Thought to have a design of making himself emperor, ib. 226. Receives notice of some seditious

ditious plots against him, 227. His uneasiness about the assembly of protestants held at Châtelleraut; determines to send Sully thither; the general and particular instructions given to Sully, 229, *et seqq.* He is attacked by a fit of the gout at Saint-Germain, 232. Receives some informations against the assembly at Châtelleraut, 242. Letters from Henry to Sully, 246. Sully explains the king's intentions to the assembly, 248. He is dissatisfied with them for not making Sully president, 252. Bouillon makes an attempt to impose upon him, but fails, 253. He causes the Luquisses to be arrested, 258. Is very attentive to the motions of the protestant assembly, 259. Sully removes his apprehensions of the plots of the faction, 263. and terminates, to his satisfaction, the debates relating to the deputies-general, 265. and to the cautionary towns, 269. Henry complies too much with the desires of Lesdiguieres in the affairs of Orange and Blaccons, 270. The reception he gives Sully at his return, 276. He makes preparations for his journey into the southern provinces of France, 277. The rout he takes: he seizes several fortresses belonging to the duke of Bouillon, 280. Particulars and motives of this journey: he causes the chambers des grand jours to be held by Sully in Limosin, and returns to Paris, 284. He decides in favour of Sully, in his dispute with the count of Soissons for the quarters of the grand-master of the ordnance, 287. His obliging behaviour to the deputies from Rochelle, 289. Sully, at his return from Limosin, gives him an account of his conduct, 291. Du Laurens first physician, ib. Honours paid by Henry to queen Margaret, 292. He causes the castle of Usson to be dismantled, 294. His too great indulgence for duels: his blameable notion concerning the predetermination of the last moment, 301. Several instances of good fortune which he had met with, 302. John de l'Isle attempts to stab him; he pardons him, ib. Sully presents medals for the year 1606 to the king and queen; a conversation between them, 303, 304. Henry's engaging and tender behaviour to his queen, 307. Sully receives new-years gifts from him, 309. His conversation with Sully relating to the means of humbling the house of Austria, 310, *et seqq.* Henry's intention of taking Sedan, 313. Creates Sully duke and peer, and honours the entertainment he makes on this occasion with his presence, 314. His irresolution with regard to the affair of Sedan, 316. He is at length determined by Sully, 319. whom he orders to write first to Bouillon, 321. and to take proper measures with the protestants, 327. His departure, and the rout he takes, 328. Disposition made for the siege of Sedan, 331, 332. Consents to the conference proposed by Bouillon, 333. and concludes a treaty unknown to Sully, 334, 335. Bouillon comes to pay him homage, 337. Sully endeavours to make him turn his arms against the towns of the earldom of Saint-Paul, but cannot prevail, 339. and offends the king, by opposing his public entry into Paris, 340. A saying of Henry upon the reduction of Sedan, 341. He supports the city of Metz against the jesuits, 346. His donations to them at La-Fleche, 347. He blames father Cotton in the affair of Adrienne de Fresne, 348. Refuses the clergy to publish the council of Trent, 352. His speech on this subject, ib. He re-

ſtrains the proteſtants alſo, and terminates, by Sully, the difference between them and the catholics at Rochelle, 354. Diſguſted with the family of Rohan, 353. Ceremony of the baptiſm of the children of France. 357. He ſends them to Fleury, ib. Eſcapes drowning at Neuilly, 258. Henry's gaiety and ſprightly ſayings on this occaſion, ib. Gratuities granted by him to Sully and other perſons, 359. Regulations for the finances, 360. His expences for play, 363. for public works, 364. A converſation between him, Sully, and ſome of the courtiers, upon different ſubjects, 365, 366. He aſks Sully's advice concerning the affairs of Flanders, 373. The calm and peaceable life of this prince, v. 1. He takes the ſeals from Bellievre and gives them to Sillery, 2. His tenderneſs for his children, 3. Birth of his ſecond ſon, ib. His fondneſs for hunting, 4. He ſtays a long time at Fontainebleau, 4, 5. His friendſhip and eſteem for Sully, ib. He puts a ſtop to the proſecutions for the murder of the young d'Epinoy, 6, 7. Quarrels with Sully, but immediately after makes a reconciliation with him, 8. Employs him in the ſynod of Rochelle, and in the diſpute between father Seguiran and the Rochellers, 10, *et ſeqq.* A converſation between him and Sully, concerning the plots of the court in favour of Spain, 20. His hatred of the family of Lorrain: Sully reaſſures him, and they labour together to ſuppreſs theſe cabals, 21. He conſents that after his death his heart ſhould be carried to La-Fleche, 17. He cauſes ſome prizes taken from Spain to be reſtored, 24. He follows Sully's advice to refuſe the offer made him by the United Provinces to ſubmit themſelves to the dominion of the French, and to give him towns in hoſtage, &c. 26. The part he takes in the treaty for a truce between thoſe provinces and Spain, 30--33. Cauſes the ſort of Rebuy to be demoliſhed, and ſupports the garriſons againſt Spain, 34. Henry protects the republick of Geneva, 35. And the Italian princes, 36. Reconciles pope Paul V. and the Venetians, ib. 37. Reunites the finances of Navarre to thoſe of France, and pays the debts of the nation, 38. Puniſhes the diſobedience of the parliaments of Toulouſe and Dijon, 41. Amount of the ſums expended in preſents till the year 1607, 39. A bon-mot of his upon l'Argentier, a farmer of the revenue, 46. A ſuit of law between him and the houſe of Gonzague, for the eſtates of the houſes of Foix and Albret, 47. Diſapproves of Sully's advice to compoſe the council of the men of the ſword, 49, 50. and contrary to his opinion eſtabliſhes a chamber of juſtice, 51. He reaſſures Sully againſt his accuſers, 52. Aſſiſts Fontange in the ſiege of Pierrefort, 54. His great care to beſtow public employments upon men of merit, 56. Gratuities to ſeveral perſons, his debts diſcharged, and his loſſes at play, 57. His expences in buildings and manufactures, 58. Henry's frequent journeys to his ſeveral palaces, his indiſpoſitions, his tenderneſs for his children ſometimes indiſcreet, 59. Quarrels between him, the queen, and marchioneſs of Verneuil: his letters to Sully on this ſubject, 60, 61. He reſtores Sedan to the duke of Bouillon, 62. Occupations and amuſements of Henry IV. 63. He propoſes to Sully a marriage between the marquis of Roſny and mademoiſelle de Crequy, 66. Makes him great offers upon condition that he will

will embrace the roman catholic religion, 68, 69. He reaſſures him againſt the artifices of his enemies, 74. The great wiſdom of this prince in diſſipating factions, ib. 75. His amours and miſtreſſes, ib. 76. A long converſation of Henry's upon political and domeſtic plots formed againſt him in the queen's houſhold, by the family of the marchioneſs of Verneuil, &c. 79, 80, 81, &c. His reſpect for the queen, 85. Birth of his third ſon, 86. The friendſhip he ſhews Sully upon this occaſion, ib. Employs him in the cabals of court, 87. Baniſhes the prince of Joinville for his gallantries with madame de Verneuil, with whom he quarrels, and is afterwards reconciled, 88--91. Joinville has another intrigue with madame de Moret, 91. He diſgraces Sommerive for an intrigue with the ſame lady, 92, *et ſeqq.* and D'Eguillon for procuring Balagny to be aſſaſſinated, 97. Other quarrels in his court, occaſioned by his uneaſineſs in pardoning duels, 98. He obliges the family of Mercœur to accompliſh the marriage between mademoiſelle de Mercœur, and the duke of Vendome, 99. Receives information againſt the houſe of Guiſe, and a new faction, 101. Sends Sully to the aſſembly of proteſtants at Gergeau, 104. Henry's reſidence in his ſeveral palaces, the private life and indiſpoſitions of this prince, his tenderneſs for his children, 107, 108. He gives the biſhopric of Metz to the duke of Verneuil, 109. Demands made by the clergy, ſome granted, others refuſed, 110. Public works and buildings in Paris, 111. His expences for play: maliciouſly reported that he endeavoured to ruin the noblemen by gaming, 112, 113. He relieves the people after the riſing of the Loire, 114. Diſpoſes of the biſhoprics according to Sully's recommendation, 115. He obliges Spain and the duke of Lorrain to make reſtitution of their uſurpations upon his frontiers, 116. Regulations in the finances, 117. Brevet for the taille expedited in full council, 119. Oeconomy and diminution of the impoſts under his reign, 127. His reception of the duke of Mantua, 128. The part he has in the agreement between Spain and the United Provinces, ib. A pleaſant ſaying of his to Don Pedro, ib. He follows Sully's advice in this affair, 129. He obliges Spain to do him juſtice with regard to the boundaries of Navarre and Bearn, 134. Refuſes to have any hand in the revolt of the Moors, 136. Papers and medals preſented to him by Sully, 140. He ſtays two days at the Arſenal, 143. He accuſes Sully with indiſcretion concerning the ſecrets revealed to him by fa. Cotton, 147. Goes to the Arſenal to communicate his uneaſineſſes to Sully: a long converſation between them, 152. Upon the public news, and upon his paſſion for mademoiſelle de Montmorency, 154. Upon the plots againſt his life diſcovered in Spain by Vaucelas, 155. Upon thoſe cauſes of complaint which the queen gave him upon this ſubject, Villeroi, &c. 157. Upon his deſigns of marrying his children, 158. Upon the reſolution he takes to renounce the princeſs of Condé, 161. Sully endeavours to remove his apprehenſions, adviſes him, excuſes the queen, and labours to make her alter her conduct, 163, *et ſeqq.* Henry haſtens the execution of his great deſigns, 167. And employs himſelf with Sully in compoſing a cabinet of ſtate, ib. 168. Converſation between them upon the ſeveral methods of raiſing money, 172.

Eſtabliſhment of poſt horſes and ſtage coaches, 173. Of the droit annuel: reflections upon this operation, ib. 174. Deſign of reſtoring the office of the ancient Roman cenſor, 177. Of deſtroying all tricks and unfair practices in the law, and other pieces of the cabinet of ſtate, 179, &c. Another converſation upon this ſubject, 183. Henry's character of his three miniſters, 186, &c. Debts diſcharged, and gratuities and expences of this prince in play, buildings, &c. 191. Edict againſt fraudulent bankrupts and duels, 192, 193. He chaſtiſes N———, who had calumniated Sully, 194. The prince of Condé and the king complains of each; high words paſſed between them on account of the princeſs of Condé, 200. Plots againſt Henry, for which his paſſion for that princeſs is the pretence: Sully gives him notice of the prince's deſigns, 201, 202. Henry's grief for the prince's flight: ſeveral particulars relating to this incident, 203--205. Falſe informations given him againſt the proteſtants, 212. Conſpiracy againſt his perſon at La-Fleche, 213. This report ill founded, 214, 215. Henry's journeys to his ſeveral palaces, 216. Treaty of the mediation of the kings of France and England, between Spain and the United Provinces, 217, 218. Henry protects the rights of the prince of Epinoy, 219. He objects to the title of ſovereign lord of Sedan aſſumed by the duke of Bouillon, 223. and obliges the grand duke to do him juſtice with regard to a ſlight ſhewn to his ambaſſador, 225. He conſoles the queen for the death of the grand duke, ib. and contracts a friendſhip with his ſucceſſor, 227. Permits the grand ſeignior to have a reſident at Marſeilles, 229. A converſation between Henry and Sully on the death of the duke of Cleves, &c. 230. The emperor Rodolphus ſeeks his friendſhip, and promiſes to aſſiſt the princes intereſted in this affair againſt the houſe of Auſtria, 236. The plots of the courtiers to diſſuade him from his great deſign, 246. The princes of Germany ſend a deputation to him: his converſation with Sully upon this ſubject, 247, 248. He ſuffers himſelf to be prejudiced againſt the counſels given him by Sully: another converſation between them, 252, 253. The ſentiments with which he endeavours to inſpire the duke of Vendome for Sully, 256. Preparations made for the execution of the great deſign: letter to the arch-duke on this ſubject, 258, 259. He talks of his deſigns indiſcreetly before his courtiers, 260. Converſations and letters between him and Sully: other diſpoſitions and preparations for the great deſign, 262, 263. Conſpiracy againſt this prince: the report of it ſpread every where, and the diſcourſe on this ſubject, 269. Pretended prognoſtics, and Henry's own foreknowledge of his approaching death: converſations between him and Sully, and other particulars, 270, 271. Information of a conſpiracy given by Schomberg, and the affair of La Coman, 273--277. Henry aſſiſts at the coronation of the queen, 278. Malicious reports ſpread againſt him concerning his motives for making war, 279. He ſends La Varenne to the Arſenal, 281. He himſelf in his way thither is murdered, 282. Particulars relating to him a few days before his death: his preſages of his fate: the manner in which this parricide was committed by Ravaillac, 283, &c. The different opinions concerning the authors, and the cauſes of his aſſaſſination examined into,

into, 286. Sully complains of the neglect that was shewn in prosecuting them, 306. The character of Henry IV. his clemency, his gaiety, his pleasant repartees, his great qualities, and his faults, ib.--308. The ten wishes of this prince, 309. His death greatly regretted, 314. Different sentiments of the courtiers upon his loss, 323, 324. The new council governed by maxims of policy very different from his, 325. The great design broken by his death, 335. The ingratitude of the court and the ministers with respect to him, 340. Exposition on his political design. See *Political Design.*

Henrichemont. (Maximilian III. Francis de Bethune, prince of) Grandson to Sully, his undutiful behaviour the cause of his death, vi. 121.

Heran. (N. de Saint) de Montmorin, refuses to obey the orders of Charles IX. at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i. 39.

Hertray. (René de Saint-Denis de) Takes possession of Alençon for the king of Navarre, i. 48.

Hesse. (William, landgrave of) Comes to visit Henry IV. at Metz, iii. 187. Sully is accused of holding a criminal correspondence with him, iv. 186. Caumartin prejudices him against the duke of Bouillon: he refuses to assist him, iv. 256. Gains France some allies in Germany, 368. His claim to the succession of Cleves, v. 234. See *Cleves.* His ancestors Philip and Maurice assisted by Francis I. and Henry II. against Charles V. 240. He joins with France against the house of Austria, 257. See *Political Design.*

Heudicourt. One of the members of the council of finances, ii. 126.

Heures. (N. d') Present at the defeat of the great convoy before Laon, ii. 76. Follows Henry IV. into Franche-Comte, 141.

Holland. See *Flanders.* Manufactory for linen cloth in Paris of the same kind as that made in Holland, v. 58.

Holstein. (Duke of) Satisfaction which he gives Henry IV. iv. 212.

Honfleur. Taken from the League by the Royalists, i. 187.

Honorio. (Brother) A capuchin fryar: gives Henry IV. information of a conspiracy against his life, iii. 12.

Honorius. Emperor of the East, vi. 57.

Horn. (Prince of) Beheaded at Brussels, i. 193.

Hortes. (Viscount of) refuses to obey the orders of Charles IX. to massacre the Huguenots, i. 40.

Hospital. (Michael de l') Chancellor: Charles IX. takes the seals from him, i. 20.

Hospital of the bridge of Avignon. (Serving brothers of) misapply the funds destined for it, iv. 141.

Hospitals. Built, or repaired by Henry IV. iv. 207. Scheme for a regal hospital in the cabinet of state, v. 169.

Hote. (Nicholas l') One of Villeroi's secretaries, an account of his treason, iv. 25. Discovered by Rasis, 26. They endeavour to seize him, 31. He escapes, 32. and is drowned in the Marne, 34. Particulars relating to this affair, ib. See *Villeroi.*

Howard. (Lord) Admiral of England: receives the count d'Aremberg, iii. 223. Serves the Spanish faction against Sully, 232--252--300.

Huberſon, (Jean) and her couſin diſcover the conſpiracy againſt Henry IV. carried on at La-Fleche, v. 213.
Huets. Sully reſides in this caſtle, i. 127.
Huguenots. See *Proteſtants*.
Hugh Capet. Sully's opinion of this king, v. 145.
Hume. (Lord) Engaged in the Spaniſh faction at London, iii. 233. Conducts Sully to Greenwich, 264--287.
Humieres. (Charles d') Brings ſuccours to the duke of Maienne after the battle of Ivry, i. 198. He forces the Spaniſh camp at Ham, and is ſlain there, ii. 131. His eulogium, ib. 132.
Hungary. The emperor Rodolphus makes war againſt that people, iii. 12. and againſt the Turks, 70--120. Further account of this war, 181--182. Part of the grand deſign relating to that kingdom, v. 80--89--97. See *Political Deſign*.
Hurault. See *Chiverny*. *Maiſſes*.

J.

JACOB. (Francis) A jeſuit involved in the proſecution againſt Châtel, ii. 122.
Jacob. Agent and commiſſioner from the duke of Savoy, in the affair of the marquiſate of Saluces, comes to compliment Henry and Sully, iii. 2--19. Diſcontented with the queen regent, v. 338. See *Saluces*, *Savoy*, &c.
Jacome. (Saint-) Taken by Henry IV. iii. 37.
Jacquinot. Groom of the chamber to Henry IV. v. 311.
Jambeville. Commiſſioner for the tax of a penny in the ſhilling, iii. 123. Solicits for the office of firſt preſident at Rouen, v. 56.
James Stuart, King of Scotland, afterwards of England: the great importance of ſecuring his friendſhip after the death of Elizabeth, iii. 203. He cauſes his acceſſion to the throne of England to be notified to France, 210. The deſign of Sully's embaſſy to this prince, 211. He is prejudiced againſt the count of Beaumont, 214. and againſt Henry IV. and Sully; his character and conduct, 234. The French proteſtants endeavour to engage his protection, 243. He ſends to compliment Sully upon his arrival, 244. Obliges him to alter his intentions of appearing at court in mourning, 245. Gives him his firſt audience: honours which he pays to Sully, and the public converſation between them, 247. His invective againſt the king of Spain and his council, 249. Praiſes Henry IV. ib. His paſſion for hunting, 250. The terror and hatred with which a ſuppoſed plot of the jeſuits inſpire him againſt Spain and the arch-dukes, 253. The king of Spain endeavours to engage him to unite with him againſt France, 259. He gives a ſecond audience to Sully, who gains his approbation of Henry's deſigns upon Spain and the United Provinces, 265. He promiſes not to ſupport Bouillon, 269. Complains of Henry's having ſupported the Engliſh prieſts, ib. 270. Reciprocal civilities between the pope and him, 272. He is diſſatisfied with the count d'Aremberg and the Spaniards, 275, 276. He invites Sully to dine with him: particulars of

of this entertainment, 277. He promiſes Sully to give ſatisfaction for the piracies of the Engliſh, 278. He gives Sully a third audience, and has a long converſation with him, in which Sully diſcovers to him the artifices of his miniſters, 287. and diſcloſes to him the great deſign of Henry IV. Precautions taken by Sully on this ſubject, &c. 289. See *Political Deſign.* James takes Sully's part againſt his miniſters, 300. and ſigns the form of a treaty, 306. Sully has his audience of leave: the obliging behaviour of James to him, and the promiſes he makes him, 309. Reciprocal preſents made by the king and Sully to each other, 310. The fears of this prince upon the arrival of the Spaniſh ambaſſador at London, and his irreſolution, 314--318. His clemency in puniſhing the conſpirators againſt his life, 319, 320. New troubles in his court: he baniſhes the jeſuits from his dominions, ib. Sends the treaty ſigned to Sully, 321. Henry makes him a preſent of ſome fine horſes, 322. A ſcheme laid by the pope, Spain, and the jeſuits to dethrone him, iv. 21. James takes advantage of the prohibition of commerce between France and Spain, 113. and afterwards endeavours to compoſe this difference, 115. Is prevailed upon to make an agreement with Spain contrary to his treaty with Henry, 119. He gives the name of Great Britain to his dominions: the bad conſequences of his pacific diſpoſition, 125. He procures a treaty between Spain and Flanders, 126. Sully's enemies raiſe malicious reports againſt him for his praiſing this prince, 186. He again ſeeks the aſſiſtance of Henry and Sully againſt Spain, 224, 225. His friendſhip for Sully, 226. He diſcovers and puniſhes a conſpiracy againſt his life, 376. He protects the preacher Melvin, with whom Henry is offended, v. 14. His bad policy in endeavouring to procure a treaty for a ſuſpenſion of arms, and a truce between Spain and the United Provinces, 33. He obliges his ſubjects to take a new oath of fidelity to him, 36. Treaty of mediation of him and Henry between Spain and the United Provinces, 217. Part of the great deſign relating to him. See *Political Deſign. England. Wales, (Prince of).*

James. (Company of) Serves as the forlorn hope in the battle of Ivry, and is diſtinguiſhed there, i. 191, 192.

Janizaries. They revolt againſt Mahomet III. iii. 120. And oblige him to baniſh the ſultaneſs-mother, iv. 145.

Jard. (Abbey of) Sully diſpoſes of it, vi. 50.

Jarnac. (Battle of) i. 1. Errors which the prince of Condé and admiral Coligny committed there taken notice of by Henry IV. 9.

Ibarra. (D. Diego d') One of the Spaniſh plenipotentiaries to the ſtates of Paris: his plots ineffectual: his faults, i. 309. Afterwards plenipotentiary from Spain and Flanders, v. 31.

Jeannin. (René) Preſident of the parliament of Dijon, makes propoſals from the League to Henry IV. i. 260. Memorial of the demands and offers he makes to Spain from the League likewiſe, 279. The anſwer of the Spaniſh council, 281, 282. His views and real ſentiments with regard to Henry IV. Spain, and the League, 295. He propoſes other conditions to Henry, 303. Who rejects them with indignation, 306. The oath which he is accuſed of having made to the League againſt this prince, 317, 318. He is obliged to give

give up Laon to him, ii. 93. His advice to the duke of Maïenne, 95. Juſtified, ib. He is employed in the compoſition of the edict of Nantz, 264. Aſſiſts in Henry's name at the conference of Boulogne, 284. He and Villeroi made ſecretaries for foreign affairs, 305. Allows an article in the edict of Nantz, which he is obliged to alter, 348. One of the commiſſioners for the treaty of Lyons, in which he favours the duke of Savoy, iii. 61, 62. Serves the king faithfully in Biron's conſpiracy, 135. Follows the king to Calais, 178. Solicits him in favour of the jeſuits, 188. He aſſiſts at the council in which Sully receives his inſtructions for his embaſſy to London, 215. Endeavours to procure the recal and eſtabliſhment of the jeſuits, iv. 5--79. Is made a commiſſioner for the regiſtration of the rents, 105. v. 5. His ſervices in Flanders in the affair of the ſuſpenſion of arms, 28. He concludes the treaty of truce, and that of the mediation of the kings of France and England, 217. He ſerves Sully with the arch-duke in the prince of Epinoy's affairs, 219. He prejudices Henry againſt Sully's advice with regard to the armament for Cleves, 252. Is appointed ambaſſador to Flanders and England, 265. Mary de Medicis makes him one of her ſecret council, in which he favours the new policy, and the diſſipation of the finances, 325. He is put at the head of the finances, 327. He joins Conchini againſt Sully, 345. Is uſed ill by the duke of Nevers and other lords, vi. 13.

Jeſuits. Accuſed of being concerned in the plot of Barriere, and cleared, ii. 8, 9. Their proceſs againſt the univerſity and the curates of Paris: particulars relating to this affair: Sully's motives for ſupporting them, 67--70. They are involved in the proceſs againſt Châtel, and baniſhed, 121. Examination of this affair, and their juſtification, ib. The pope requires Henry to recal them, 145. The council rejects their petition, 284. Henry's kindneſs to them, and the promiſes he makes them at Metz, iii. 188. Solicitations of d'Oſſat, &c. in their favour, ib. They are cleared of a pretended conſpiracy againſt the king of England, 253. Commotions raiſed by them in England in the affair of the Engliſh prieſts, 270. King James's averſion to them, 310. The affair of their reeſtabliſhment diſcuſſed: councils held on this occaſion: converſations between him and Sully: reaſons for and againſt the repeal of their baniſhment: conditions on which they are to be recalled, and other circumſtances, iv. 4, *& ſeqq.* They ſolicit Sully's protection, 17. Reflections upon this head, and the eulogium of this ſociety, 18--20. The opinions of ſome jeſuits upon grace; upon the authority of the pope; and upon confeſſion, ib. Henry gives them the college of La-Fleche, ib. Memorial againſt their policy, 21. They foment diſputes between the catholics and the proteſtants among the Griſons, 136. They obtain leave to demoliſh the pyramid: their hatred of Sully and other particulars, 151. A great quarrel between them and Sully on account of the college of Poitiers, 152, *& ſeqq.* Their cabals with the courtiers againſt Sully: they almoſt procure his diſgrace, 162--180. They endeavour in vain to ſettle in Metz, 345, 346. Preſents made them by Henry IV. for their houſe at La-Fleche, 347. The affair of Adrienne de Freſne prejudices him againſt them, 348. The part they have in the

the conſpiracy againſt the king of England: their juſtification, 376. See *Garnet*, *Oldecorne*, *James*. They endeavour to get Father Seguiran a preacher received into Rochelle, v. 15. Henry IV. ſupports their college of Poitiers, 17. He conſents that after his deceaſe his heart ſhould be depoſited at La-Fleche: a ſmart ſaying on this occaſion, ib. 18. They cabal at court and throughout the kingdom in favour of Spain, 18. The Venetians refuſe to let them ſettle in their dominions, 36. They eſtabliſh themſelves in Bearn, 110. Jeſuits mentioned by name in a letter of father Cotton's, 148. They are involved in the pretended conſpiracy of La-Fleche, and cleared, 214, 215. They ſerve the emperor Rodolphus in the cruelties he exerciſes upon the proteſtants of Germany, 257. They are accuſed of having been concerned in the parricide committed on the perſon of Henry IV. and cleared of that crime, 290, 291. Sully inſinuates that they were accomplices in that crime, 306. They endeavour to ruin this miniſter, 321. The queen regent calls them into her ſecret council, 325. See *Cotton*. They unite with the pope and Spain againſt the proteſtants, 341. They endeavour to diſſuade the council from the expedition of Juliers, 361. See *Council*, *Spain*, *League*, &c.

Jewels of the Crown. Sums expended in purchaſing them, v. 40.

Jews. The offers they make to the grand ſeignior to deſtroy the holy ſepulchre, ii. 327.

If. (Iſle and caſtle of) Uſurped from Henry IV. and reſtored to him again by the grand duke of Tuſcany, iii. 101. Deſign of Spain upon this iſland, 323--325.

Ignace Armand. Provincial of the jeſuits: Henry IV's kindneſs to him at Metz, and the promiſes he makes him there, iii. 187, 188. He endeavours to procure the re-eſtabliſhment of his ſociety in France, iv. 5. An imprudent letter written to him by father Cotton, v. 147--150.

Ignorant Friars. Eſtabliſhed, iii. 337.

Illuſtrious Men of Antiquity. A converſation upon this ſubject between Henry IV. Sully, and the courtiers, v. 144--146.

Impoſts. Reflections upon the nature of ſeveral impoſts, iv. 201, 202. Diminution of the taille, and other impoſts. A new regulation made by Sully in the levying of taxes, &c. 203. Several impoſts in France: how eſtabliſhed: reflections upon this ſubject, v. 120, &c. Accounts relating to the taille: to the royal revenues, &c. 141. Memorial upon the different methods of raiſing money, 172. See *Taille*, *Royal Revenues*, *Finances*, &c.

Incarville. Comptroller-general of the finances, made one of the members of the new council of finances, ii. 126. Supports the fraudulent financiers, 192. Concerned in the farms under borrowed names, iv. 200.

Inchi. (Charles de Guare d') Receives Monſieur into Cambray, for which he is afterwards baniſhed, i. 83, 84.

Indies. The immenſe treaſures drawn from theſe by the kings of Spain, and the cruelties committed there by Philip, ii. 330. The deſign of this prince to prohibit the commerce of them to all the reſt of Europe, 333. They exhauſt Spain, iii. 293. Deſigns and means of depriving Spain of the commerce of the Indies, 296.

See *Political Deſign*. Sully oppoſes the ſettlement of a colony there: obſervations upon this ſettlement, 348. The Dutch make a voyage to the Eaſt Indies, iv. 375. Article in the treaty of truce, interpoſition, &c. relating to the trade to the Indies, v. 218. See *America*, *Aſia*, &c.

Infants and Infantas of Spain. Don Carlos. See *Carlos*, (Don) Anne-Maria-Mauricette, Clara-Eugenia, Iſabella. See the following articles. See alſo *Spain*.

Infanta of Spain. (Anne-Maria-Mauricette of Auſtria) Her birth, iii. 101. Plots in the queen's houſhold to marry her to the Dauphin contrary to Henry's deſign, v. 158.

---------- (Clara-Eugenia of Auſtria) The ſcheme of marrying her to the cardinal of Bourbon rendered ineffectual by the French lords, i. 130. See *League*, *States of Paris*, &c.

---------- (Iſabella of Auſtria) She is married to the archduke, and made governors of the Low Countries, ii. 337.

Infidel Princes. See *Muſcovy*, *Turkey*, *Perſia*.

Intereſt. Of eight or ten *per* cent. aboliſhed, iii. 73.

Invalid Soldiers. An eſtabliſhment made for them, iv. 109.

Invincible. A fleet of Philip II. ſo called, vanquiſhed and diſperſed, ii. 330.

Joannini. Agent from the grand duke of Tuſcany for the marriage of Mary de Medicis with Henry IV. iii. 131. Cabals in the queen's houſhold with the Spaniſh party, v. 155. Sully's converſation with him upon the inſult received by our ambaſſador at Rome, from the duke of Tuſcany's ambaſſador, 225.

John. (Don) Of Auſtria: gains the battle of Lepanto, i. 11. Lays the ſcheme of the League with the duke of Guiſe, 98.

John I. King of France, ſubmits to the authority of the ſtates of the kingdom, v. 125.

Joinville. (Claude de Lorrain, prince of) Cabals with Spain, iii. 85. Is arreſted, and pardoned by Henry IV. at Sully's entreaty: his character, 156. Diſgraced for his gallantries with the marchioneſs of Verneuil and the counteſs of Moret, v. 91, 92. His quarrel with the prince of Conty, 98. Grants which he procures from the queen regent, vi. 20.

Jon. (Du) One of the courtiers whom Henry IV. allowed to live familiarly with him, v. 311. His advice to Sully after the death of that prince, 315.

Jours (Grands). See *Chamber des Grand Jours*.

Jouſſeaume. Receiver-general of the finances, arreſted at Milan by Sully's diligence, and hanged, iii. 170.

Joyeuſe. (Anne duke of) Marſhal of France, leads the royaliſt army againſt the League, and ſuddenly turns it againſt the proteſtants, i. 100. His diſcourſe to Sully on this occaſion, 101. Leads the army of Henry III. and the League into Guyenne, 115. Marches againſt Henry IV. into Poitou, 128. The deſign of Henry III. by giving him the command of this army, 131. He takes St. Maixant, Maillezais, &c. 132. Sully defeats one of his ſquadrons, and narrowly miſſes taking him priſoner, 133. His troops ill treated in his abſence, 134. He returns and puts himſelf again at their head, 138. An inſtance of his generoſity, ib. He is defeated and

and slain at the battle of Coutras: the errors he committed there; and the particulars of this battle, 139--143. He was one of the favourites of Henry III. ii. 98.

Joyeuse (Antonio Scipio, knight of Malta, afterwards duke of). His party in Provence, i. 268. He besieges Villemur, 271. Is defeated there, and drowned in the Tarn, 273.

---------(Claude). See *St. Sauveur*.

---------(Francis de). Cardinal: endeavours to justify, at Rome, the assassination of the Guises, i. 156. Is sent by the duke of Maïenne into Spain, ii. 15. Commissioned by the pope to dissolve the marriage of Henry IV. with Margaret de Valois, iii. 6. Advises Henry to give the government of Poitou to Sully, 338. Is sent to Rome to the conclave, iv. 38. Sully confers with him upon the means of pacifying the two religions, 343. Is proxy for Paul V. at the baptism of the Dauphin, 357. Employed by Henry to compose the difference between the pope and the Venetians, v. 36. His prejudices Henry against Sully, in the affair of the armament of Cleves, 252. Is appointed by that prince one of the council of the regency, 266. Mary de Medicis makes him one of the public council, 326.

----------(Henry count of Bouchage, duke of). A capuchin friar, and cardinal: one of Henry III's favourites, ii. 98. Concludes a treaty with Henry IV. 157. Sum paid him at his treaty, 311. He marries his daughter to the duke of Montpensier, and enters again among the capuchins: a smart saying of Henry's upon him, v. 86. His death, 110.

----------(Henrietta Catherine de). Marries the duke of Montpensier, v. 86.

Ireland. Elizabeth subdues the rebels there, who had been supported by Spain, iii. 118.

Is. An estate purchased by Sully, vi. 48.

Isabella. Her example proposed to Henry IV. by Sully, v. 246.

Isle. (Fort of) Built upon the Scheld by the Spaniards, iv. 126.

Isloire. A victory gained by Henry IV's party there, i. 202.

Italy. Part of the great design relating to it, iii. 298. Henry IV. gains the friendship of the princes of Italy, iv. 133. See *Political Design*. The debts due by France to Italy discharged by Sully, v. 39. Comedians sent for from Italy by Henry IV. 63. The princes and states of Italy unite with Henry against the house of Austria, 159--258. Ambassadors appointed for Italy, 265. Part of the great design relating to Italy with respect to religion, vi. 73. And policy, 96. See *Political design*.

Jubile. (Secular) A magnificent ceremony at Rome, iii. 70. The king and queen go to Orleans, 81.

Juliers. Duchy and dukes of this name: a dispute concerning the succession to it, v. 231. See *Cleves*. Siege and reduction of this place by the confederate princes, 359--362.

Jurisdictions. Offices to be created in them upon occasion, v. 176. See *Bar, Bailiwicks, Sovereign Courts*.

Ivry. (Battle of) Phenomena which preceded it, i. 191. Errors committed there: a particular account of this battle, 192, *& seqq*.

Juvigny, or *Divigny*. One of Sully's enemies, iv. 182. His memorial, 184. Henry IV. punishes him, 191.

K.

KINTORE. One of the Scotch faction at London, iii. 232. Deputed to the count of Aremberg, 276. Favours the French interest, 318.

L.

LAGNY. Taken by the prince of Parmy, i. 209.

Lambert. Sent to France by the prince of Orange, to break off the negotiations for a peace between Spain and the United Provinces: his artifices, v. 130.

-------(Saint). A party of pleasure made by Henry IV. there intercepted by the arrival of the Spaniards, ii. 79.

Landereau. (Charles Rohaut Du) Attempts to surprize La-Rochelle, i. 20.

Landgrave. See *Hesse*.

Langlois. Sheriff of Paris: contributes to get Henry IV. received into that city, ii. 42. Agent for Margaret de Valois in the dissolution of her marriage with Henry IV. iii. 6.

Langoiran. (N. de Montferrand de) Makes his escape at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30. Takes Sully's part against Bouillon, 53.

Langres. They refuse to admit the jesuits there, iv. 152.

Languedoc. Deputies from this province to Henry IV. ii. 166. What passed between the two parties, 182. Henry transfers the states to the Lower Languedoc, iii. 105. This province an antient fief of the crown: not alienated, iv. 140. Its registers united to the domain: a dispute on this subject between Sully and the parliament of Toulouse, v. 40, 41.

Lansac. The younger attempts to surprise Rochelle, i. 20.

Lansquenets. They betray Henry IV. at Arques, i. 181. Are cut to pieces at the battle of Ivry, 196. They mutiny at the siege of Rouen, 228.

Laon. Besieged by Henry IV. ii. 60. The succours which Maïenne endeavours to throw into this place defeated: the great diligence and labours of Henry IV. at this siege, 71. He refuses to give the government of Laon to Biron, 77. The Spaniards march towards it with all their forces, 80. But cannot prevent its being taken, 92--94.

Larry. (Saint). See *Bellegarde*, *Thermes*.

Laval. Taken by Henry IV's party from the League, i. 187.

-- ----(Charlotte de). First wife to the admiral Coligny, i. 17.

-------(Guy de). Son of D'Andelot. See *Andelot*.

-------(Guy) count of). Proposed for a husband to mademoiselle de Sully, ii. 220. This marriage broken off, iv. 194. See *Fervaques*.

Laval. (Urbain de). *See Bois, Dauphin.*

Lavardin, or *Laverdin.* (Charles de Beaumanoir de) Murdered in the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 32.

---------- (John de Beaumanoir de) Marſhal of France, i. 50. Takes Sully's part againſt Frontenac and Bouillon, 52. A ſingle combat propoſed to be fought between him and La-Deveſe, 57. He quits the party of Henry IV. 65. A trick played him by Chicot, 100. La-Tremouille forces him to abandon the poſt of Coutras, 140. He commands the king's forces in Burgundy, iii. 148. Is made governor of Perche and Maïenne: reſigns the government of Poitou in favour of Sully, 340. who purchaſes Montricoux of him, vi. 50.

League. (The) The cauſe of the great power of the Guiſes, 61. Raiſe the ſtandard of rebellion, 97. Its origin: weak beginnings; and its progreſs, 98, 99. The heads of the League aſſemble at Châlon, 100. Oblige Henry III. to join them, and diſpoſe of his troops as they pleaſe, 106. They ſend three armies againſt Henry IV. 116 Towns and fortreſſes which they take and loſe, 126, 127. They defeat the foreign forces at Auneau, 148. The day of the barricadoes, on which Henry III. is obliged to leave Paris: their inſolence before and after this action, 150. The weakneſs and the errors of this prince's conduct give them courage, and they oblige him to grant all their demands, 154, 155. He puts himſelf under their protection, after the murder of the Guiſes, 158--161. The ſucceſs of the arms of the two kings againſt them, 170. And of Henry IV. after the death of Henry III. 184, 185. Sixtus V. foretels their defeat, 184. They loſe Meulan, and take Pontoiſe, 188. Seize Rouen, 190. And are beaten at Noyon: other loſſes ſuſtained by them, 217. Henry deprives them of great part of Normandy, 222, 223. They ſend troops to the ſiege of Rouen, 234. They make propoſals and offers to Henry IV. 260. Their troops defeated at the attack of St. Denis, and at the paſs of La-Vienne; but they gain the battle of Craon, 263. Leſdiguieres diſconcerts their deſigns upon Provence and Dauphiné, 268. Their troops defeated at Villemur, 272, 273. Conditions propoſed by them to Philip II. and his anſwer to them, 279. Their diſtruſt of one another, 284. Sully negotiates with them for Henry IV. 296. The conditions which they want to impoſe upon the king, 304, 305. They diſagree with the ſtates of Paris, 308--315. Their plots, and the oath they take againſt Henry IV. 318. They ſend a deputation to this prince, 327. The wiſe conduct he obſerves with them after his abjuration, ii. 2. They employ ſome monks to murder Henry, 8. They retire to Soiſſons at the reduction of Paris, 43. Lyons, and ſeveral other cities, forſake them openly, 57, 58. They ſupport the jeſuits in their proceſs againſt the univerſity, &c. 68. Their partizans for the duke of Maïenne in Burgundy defeated, 96. They oppoſe the declaration of war againſt Spain, 117. Are driven out of Dijon and Talon, 135. Defeated with the Spaniards at Fontaine-Françoiſe, 137, *& ſeqq.* They ſubmit to Henry IV. 157, 158. Military expeditions in different provinces: ſome ſucceſsful, others unfortunate, 181, 182. A liſt of the treaties made, and ſums paid by Henry IV. at the extinction of the League, 310--312. Their partizans

partizans set Martha Brossiere to work, 352. They murmur at Sully's ambassy to London, iii. 202. Jesuits, &c. justified for their attachment to the League, iv. 14. A powerful faction in Europe conducted upon the maxims of the League, 24, 25. Adopted likewise by many persons in the court and council of Henry IV. 152. Their motives for hating Sully, 180. Debts contracted by France during the League, 205. The partisans of the League cabal with the Spanish ambassador against the power of Henry, and his designs, v. 18. Debts contracted on account of the League paid by Sully, 39. The aversion of Henry to the policy and favourers of the League, and to their schemes, 101. They labour to dissuade him from his great designs, 246. See likewise upon this whole article, *Guise, Maïenne, Villeroi, Jeannin, Jesuits, Pope, Spain, Courtiers*, &c.

Leagues Grises. See *Grisons*.

Lennox. (Earl of) One of the Scotch faction at London, iii. 232--254. Sully makes him presents, 311.

Lenoncourt. (Philip cardinal of) Deputed to the court of Henry IV. i. 104--120. Assists at the conference between Catherine de Medicis and the duke of Guise. See *Barricadoes*.

Leo. X. (Pope) His conduct blamed by Sully, iv. 343.

--- XI. (Pope) Great rejoicings in France for his advancement to the pontificate: his death, iv. 215.

Leonora Galigai. See *Galigai*.

Leopold, Archduke of Austria. The emperor Rodolphus gives him the investiture of Cleves: his proceedings with Henry IV. upon this affair, v. 236. See *Cleves*.

Lepanto. (Battle of) i. 11.

Lerma. (Duke of) Favourite of Philip III. iii. 250.

Lesdiguieres. (Francis de Bonne de) Constable: commands the forces of Henry IV. in Dauphiné, i. 116. Disconcerts the designs of Spain and the duke of Savoy in Provence, 268. He drives the duke of Epernon from Provence, ii. 110. Other exploits against the dukes of Savoy and Epernon, 181, 182. He informs Henry IV. of the duke of Savoy's designs, iii. 17. His services during the campaign of Savoy, 40, *et seqq*. Is made marshal of France, and governor of Piédmont, by the advice of Sully, 65. Accused of corresponding with Biron, iv. 68. Thanks Sully for procuring the post of colonel of the guards for the marquis of Crequy: Sully's complaints of him, 192. His deputies excluded from the assembly of Châtelleraut, 238--251. The rage with which he acts against Blaccons in the affair of Orange, 270. Bouillon's jealousy of him, 255. His plots at Châtelleraut for the establishment of a protestant republic, &c. disconcerted by Sully, 262. Henry IV. is apprehensive of his designs, 276--351. His conferences with the heads of the protestants under him suspected, v. 14. The motives which induce Henry IV. for marrying the marquis of Rosny into this family: disputes, plots, and complaints, against Sully, on occasion of this marriage, 65, 66, *et seqq*. Henry IV. resolves to give him the command of the army in Italy, 258. See *Political Design*. Villeroi rails at him in the queen regent's council, and Sully defends him, vi. 26, 27.

Lesine. Attached to Sully, iii. 52.

Letters of Henry IV. The prodigious exactness he discovers in them, and

and his attention to the moſt minute particulars, ii. 241. iv. 209, 210. The eſteem and affection he expreſſes for Sully, v. 5, 6. See upon the contents of theſe letters, the articles *Henry* IV. *Sully*, &c.

Lettres. (Belles) See *Belles Lettres.*

Levis. See *Caylus-Vertadour, Mirepoix.*

Lewis le Debonnaire. Character of this king, vi. 60.

Lewis the Young. His character, vi. 61.

Lewis (Saint) His edict againſt duels, iv. 297. He commands his ſon to aboliſh the taille, v. 125. Character of this prince, 145. vi. 93.

Lewis Hutin. Takes an oath at his coronation, to ſubmit to the authority of the ſtates of the kingdom, v. 125.

Lewis XII. Value of the taille in his reign, v. 126. Character of this king, 145. vi. 63.

------- XIII. His fondneſs for Sully v. 320. He holds his bed of juſtice, and confirms there the regency of Mary de Medicis, 321, 322. Preparations made for his coronation, 359. Quarrels among the grandees and miniſters at this ceremony, vi. 13. The reception he gives Sully: his happy diſpoſitions, 17. He rewards Sully's ſervices, by giving him the ſtaff of a marſhal of France, 117. He is againſt him in his proceſs with his grandſon, which is the cauſe of his death, 121. Sully's auſtere reply to him, 128.

Lewkener, maſter of the ceremonies in London, diſobliges Sully, iii. 220, 221--246.

Lhuillier. (John) Lord-mayor of Paris. Contributes to get Sully received there, ii. 42.

Liancourt. (Nicholas d'Amerval de) Marries the fair Gabriella. See *Eſtrees* (Gabriella d'). Particulars relating to this marriage, ii. 364.

---------- (N. Du Pleſſis) Firſt equerry of Henry IV. receives this prince at Liancourt, and injures Sully there, ii. 185, 186. He is appointed by Henry IV. one of the members of the council of regency, v. 266.

---------- (Madame de) See *Eſtrees* (Gabriella d').

Libels (Satyrical) againſt the government, very common in the reign of Henry IV. iv. 181.

Lieramont. (Francis de Dampierre de) Governor of Catelet, ii. 99.

Lieſſe. Henry takes a journey there, iii. 311.

Ligne. (L'Amoral, prince of) Endeavours to deprive the princes of Epinoy of their eſtates, iii. 12. Refuſes to marry mademoiſelle de Melun to the marquis de Cœuvres, iv. 198.

------ (John de) Count of Aremberg. See *Aremberg.*

Ligny. (Mary de Melun, princeſs of) Henry IV. and Sully oblige her to do the princes of Epinoy juſtice, with regard to their eſtates, v. 220, 221.

------ His party in Provence, i. 269.

Liſle. (John de) A madman, who attempts to aſſaſſinate Henry IV. iv. 302.

Limeuil. Henry IV. aſſiſts the duke of Bouillon to take this place, iv. 326.

Limoſin. Military exploits between the two parties in this province, ii. 131, 182. Henry's journey thither, iii. 133. A ſecond journey taken by Henry and Sully to Limoſin, to ſeize the cities of the duke of Bouillon, iv. 280.

Lingben. Taken by Spinola, iv. 222.

Livarot. (John d'Arces de) One of the favourites of Henry III. ii. 98.

Livre. (La-) Apothecary to Henry IV. his account paid, iv. 210.

Livron. The duke of Montpenſier fails in his attempt upon this place, i. 45.

Lognac. The aſſaſſin of the duke of Guiſe, dies miſerably, iv. 209.

-------- A proteſtant captain. Gratuities granted him by Henry IV. iv. 29.

Loire. Advantages from joining it with the Seine and the Soane, iv. 103. The canal of Briare, 112. See *Briare.* A great inundation of this river in 1608, v. 113, 114.

Lombardy. (Kingdom of) A project for eſtabliſhing it in favour of the duke of Savoy, iv. 313.

Lomenie. Sent by Henry IV. to Sully, v. 33.

Loncounai. A proteſtant gentleman ſaved at the maſſacre of Paris, i. 30.

Londe. (La) Mayor of Rouen, for the League, i. 177.

London. Sully's magnificent reception there, iii. 224. The hatred of the French to the citizens, 225. breaks out on occaſion of the fact committed by Combaut, 226. Factions which prevail there: not cuſtomary to treat ambaſſadors, 247. The people riſe againſt the Spaniards, and praiſe Sully's conduct, 255. Honours he receives at his departure, 310. The troubles owing to his ſtay, 319.

Longchamp. Propoſed for deputy of the church of Pons, v. 14.

Longuet. One of Sully's enemies at court, iv. 182.

--------- Preſents a memorial upon purchaſing of the domaine to Henry IV. v. 47.

Longueville. This family continues attached to Sully againſt all his enemies, vi. 10.

---------- (Henry d'Orleans de) Continues with Henry IV. after the death of Henry III. i. 176.

Loppes. A proteſtant gentleman, preſent at the defeat of the great convoy ſent to Laon, ii. 76.

Lorges. Surpriſes Chateaudun, i. 167.

Lorrain. The forces of Lorrain defeated, and Dun, Stenay, &c. taken by the duke of Bouillon, i. 263. Lorrain ſeparates from Spain, and unites with France, ii. 117. Succeſs of the arms of Lorrain in the war of 1595, 122. Reſtitution made by Lorrain of its uſurpations upon the frontiers of Champaign, v. 116. Henry IV. deſigns to re-unite that territory to France, by marrying the heireſs to the Dauphin, 158. Part of the great deſign which relates to Lorrain. See *Political deſign.* See alſo *Lorrain* (Charles II. duke of).

Lorrain, (Family of) Hated by Henry III. i. 61. The fancied claims of this family to the crown, 151. Their plots, &c. with the ſtates of Paris, 309.

Lorrain-Guiſe. See *Guiſe*, and the following articles.
Lorrain. (Charles of) Duke of Guiſe. See *Guiſe.*
-------- (Charles, cardinal of). i. 12. His death, 45. He forms the ſcheme of the League at the council of Trent, 98. His real ſentiments upon religion, 105. His pretenſions upon Metz, 151.
-------- (Charles, cardinal of). Biſhop of Straſbourg. Henry IV. puts an end to the war, and the proceſs between him and the prince of Brandenbourg for this biſhopric, iii. 187. His death, v. 110.
-------- (Charles of). Duke or Maïenne. See *Maïenne.*
-------- (Charles of) Duke of Aumale. See *Aumale.*
-------- (Charles II. duke of). His plots with the ſtates of Paris uſeleſs, i. 309. His treaty with Henry IV. at the extinction of the League, ii. 311. The princeſs Catherine refuſes to marry him, 339. He makes an agreement with Henry for the poſſeſſions belonging to the ducheſs of Bar, iv. 4. Comes to France, and ſtands godfather to the princeſs Chriſtina, 357. Henry IV. obliges him to make a reſtitution of all that he had uſurped upon the frontiers of Champaign, v. 116. His deſign of marrying his daughter to the Dauphin, 158. Diſputes with him concerning the boundaries of the country of Meſſin terminated, 192. Grants made him by the queen regent, vi. 20.
-------- (Charles-Emanuel de) Count of Sommerive. See *Sommerive.*
-------- (Claude de). A ſtem of the houſe of Guiſe. His children, i. 12.
-------- (Claude de). Duke of Aumale. See *Aumale.*
-------- (Claude de). Prince of Joinville. See *Joinville.*
-------- (Francis de). Duke of Guiſe. See *Guiſe.*
-------- (Francis de). Grand prior of France, i. 12.
-------- (Henry de). Duke of Guiſe. See *Guiſe.*
-------- (Henry de). Duke of Bar. See *Bar.*
-------- (Henry de). Count of Chaligny. See *Chaligny.*
-------- (Lewis de). Cardinal of Guiſe. See *Guiſe.*
-------- (Nicholas de). Count of Vaudemont. See *Vaudemont.*
-------- (Philip-Emanuel de). Duke of Mercœur. See *Mercœur.*
-------- (René de). Duke d'Elbeuf. See *Elbeuf.*
-------- (Catherine-Mary de). Ducheſs of Montpenſier. See *Montpenſier.*
-------- (Frances de). Mademoiſelle de Mercœur. See *Mercœur.*
-------- (Lewis de). See *Vaudemont.*
-------- (Lewis-Margaret de). Mademoiſelle de Guiſe. See *Guiſe.*
-------- (Mary de) de Guiſe. Queen of Scotland, i. 13.
-------- (Ducheſs of). Falls dangereuſly ill: compliments made her by the king and queen, v. 128.
Lotharie. Duels authoriſed in his time, iv. 296.
Loudun. Errors in the conduct of the prince of Condé and admiral Coligny at the ſkirmiſh of Loudun, taken notice of by Henry IV. i. 9. Aſſembly of proteſtants held in this city: Sully's ſervices there, vi. 117.
Love. Why this paſſion is dangerous to princes, iv. 93. Amours of Henry IV. See *Miſtreſſes.*
Lezarge. (Lewis Francis de) One of the chief royaliſts in Li-

noſin, ii. 182. The city of Bourg taken by following his counſel, iii. 35.

Louviers. Sully not able to take it, i. 177. Taken by Henry IV. 222.

Louvre, Henry IV. begins to build the great gallery there, iii. 202.

Luat. (Ange Capel du) Compoſes a book upon the finances, ii. 324.

Luc. (Francis d'Epinay de Saint-) Grand maſter of the ordnance, contributes to the reduction of Paris, ii. 41. Preſent at the ſiege of Laon, 72. One of the favourites of Henry III. 98. His exploits in Brittany, 181--227--233. His death and character, 236.

----- (Saint-) Goes to London with Sully, iii. 218--226. Receives him in Poitou, iv. 72.

Lullins. Agent and commiſſioner from the duke of Savoy in the affair of Saluces, iii. 2--19.

Lune. (Don Sancho de) Commands a body of Spaniſh troops in Italy, iii. 325.

Luneburg Brunſwick. See *Brunſwick.*

Luquiſes. Provincial gentlemen. Their impriſonment and proceſs, iv. 258. Their puniſhment, 284.

Luſignan. Taken by the duke of Montpenſier, i. 44.

Lux. The place of rendezvous for the army of Henry IV. ii. 137. See *Fontaine-Françoiſe.*

---- (Edmund de Malain, baron de) Negotiates the converſion of Henry IV. i. 317. The part he had in the battle of Fontaine-Françoiſe, ii. 138. He adviſes Biron to go to court, iii. 135. Obtains his pardon, after he had made a free confeſſion to Henry IV. and to Sully, 149. Is deputed by this prince to the parliament of Dijon, v. 41.

Luxembourg. Alliances of this houſe with the houſes of Bourbon and Bethune, ii. 254.

---------- (Henry de) Duke of Piney. Ambaſſador to Rome, ii. 285. His proceſs with the parliament, iii. 166.

---------- (Sebaſtian de). See *Martigues.*

---------- (Mary de). See *Martigues.*

Luxury. Sully's notions of luxury, iii. 78, *& ſeqq.* Regulations and taxes againſt luxury projected, 344. v. 176, 177. See *Cabinet of State.*

Lyons. Seized by the princes, i. 21. Surrenders to Henry IV. notwithſtanding the efforts of the duke of Nemours to prevent it, ii. 57. Its canons refuſe to allow the duke of Savoy's claim of honorary canon, iii. 17, 18. Henry's ſtay in this city in his way to Savoy, 29. Henry ſolemnizes his nuptials with Mary de Medicis there, 62. Proceſs carried on by this city againſt Feydeau, v. 48. Maintains its privileges againſt Villeroi and d'Alincourt, and is ſupported by Sully, vi. 24, 25, &c.

Lyre. (Abbey of) Belonging to cardinal Du-Peron, iv. 220.

M.

MACARY. (Saint-) Loſt by the proteſtants, i. 50.

Madame Catherine de Bourbon, Ducheſs of Bar. Is ſent back by Charles

Charles IX. to her brother, i. 48. Her taſte for diverſions, 54. Her love for the count of Soiſſons, 145, 146. She is the cauſe of his journey to Bearn, 264. She gives him a promiſe of marriage, ii. 20. which ſhe afterwards puts into Sully's hands, 26. Sully is ſent to her by Henry IV. to break off this marriage: converſations between them, 167, *et ſeqq.* She endeavours to deprive him of the king's favour, 176. Henry takes the farms from her which ſhe enjoyed in his name, 318. Several matches refuſed by her: ſhe at length conſents to marry the duke of Bar: obſtacles raiſed to this marriage by Rome and the clergy, 338, 339. A conference is held to perſuade her to change her religion, but to no purpoſe, 341. She comes to viſit the king at Metz, and receives him at Nancy, iii. 186. A diſpute between Henry and the duke of Bar, on account of the ſucceſſion to her eſtates, iii. 3. Particulars relating to her death, her character, and the diſpenſation for her marriage, 2, 3.

Madrid. (Caſtle of) or Bois de Boulogne. Queen Margaret reſides there for ſome time: honours paid her by the king and queen, iv. 292, 293.

Mats. The utility of joining this river with the Saone, iv. 103.

Mahomet III. His character: the janizaries and the city of Conſtantinople revolt againſt him, iii. 120.

Maïenne. (Charles of Lorrain, duke of) Takes Brouage, i. 61. Commands the army of the League in Guyenne; takes ſome towns there, but cannot ſurpriſe Henry IV. 115. Marches to Tours, where he narrowly miſſes taking Henry III. and is driven from thence by Henry IV. 165, 166. His troops defeated at Arques, 182. Forced to abandon Dieppe, and marches towards Paris, 184. A ſaying of Sixtus V. upon him and Henry IV. ib. He takes Pontoiſe, and loſes Meulan, 188. Loſes the battle of Ivry, 90. Faults committed by him there: particulars of this battle, 192, *et ſeqq.* Encounters at Noyon, &c. where his troops are beat, 217. He loſes Mante and Houdan, 219. He puniſhes the inſolence of the ſixteen, 234. Joins his forces with thoſe of the prince of Parma, 246. His advice the cauſe of the checks this prince meets with in the neighbourhood of Rouen, 249. Memorial of the propoſals made by him to the king of Spain, and the conditions which he was willing to impoſe upon the League, with the anſwers to them, 279. The arts he practiſes againſt the Spaniſh party and his own nephew, and the faults he commits at the meeting of the ſtates of Paris, 308, 309. The parliament oppoſes him, 312, 313. The meaſures taken by him to exclude Henry IV. from the throne, 314. He endeavours to render the king's abjuration uſeleſs, ii. 1. Oppoſes the deputation from the Pariſians to this prince, 3. Demands a new truce, which is denied him, 15. Takes the government of Paris from the count of Belin, and gives it to Briſſac, by whom he is betrayed, 39--41. He baffles the deſigns of the duke of Nemours, 58. Marches to the aſſiſtance of Laon, but cannot hinder it from being taken, 70, *& ſeqq.* Endeavours to ſecure Burgundy, 95. Which revolts from him, 96. Errors in his conduct upon that occaſion, 136. He makes his treaty with Henry IV. who treats him with great kindneſs at Monceaux,

189, 190. Sum of money paid him upon making his treaty, 310. He gives Henry satisfaction for the behaviour of the count of Somerive his son: services done him by Sully on this occasion, v. 92, 93. Henry accuses him with opposing the marriage between mademoiselle de Mercœur and the duke of Vendome, 99. He refuses to sell his domain of Antibes to the king, 116. Henry appoints him of the council of the regency, 266. Mary de Medicis makes him one of her public council, 326. Grants which he procures from the queen regent, vi. 20.

Maïenne. (Mademoiselle de) Henry IV. refuses to consent to her marriage with the marquis of Rosny, v. 55, 56.

-------- (City of) Taken by Henry IV. i. 187.

Maignan. Sully's valet de chambre: gives him a seasonable assistance at the siege of Paris, i. 170. Saves his life at the battle of Ivry, 194. Carries him in triumph to Rosny, 200. Of great use to him at the siege of Rouen, 229.

--------- A doctor of the Sorbonne, attends Biron upon the scaffold, iii. 146.

Maillezais. Taken by Henry IV. i. 126. Retaken by the League, 132.

Mailly (James de). See *Benehart.*

Maine. (Le) An enemy of Sully's, iv. 182.

Mainfroy. Competitor with Charles of Anjou, i. 6.

Maintenon. (Lewis d'Angennes de) Misses taking Chartres for the League, i. 167. Makes an agreement with D'Ossat for the abbey of Coulon, iii. 194.

Mayor. (Lord) of London. Sully's proceedings with him on the affair of Combaut, iii. 228.

Maisses. (Andrew Hurault de) His services against the rebels, ii. 66. He is admitted into the council of finances, 114. Where he unites with Sully, 218. Is appointed one of the commissioners in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, iii. 19. Present at the council wherein Sully receives his instructions for his embassy to London, 210. At the council for repealing the banishment of the jesuits, iv. 5. One of the commissioners in the affair of the earldom of St. Paul, 142.

Maitre. (John le). See *Parliament, States of Paris, Maïenne.*

Maius. (Alexander) A jesuit: accused of being an accomplice of Châtel, ii. 122.

Maius or *Mayo.* (Laurence) A jesuit: labours to procure the settlement of his society in France, iv. 5. His promise to Henry IV. in the name of his society, 15.

Maixent (Saint Retaken by the League, i. 132. Henry IV. and Catherine de Medicis confer together at this place, 130. Synod held there, ii. 90. The government refused to Sully, iv. 197.

Malderet. Deputed by the United Provinces to Henry IV. vi. 92.

Malicorne. (John de Chourses de) Unable to succour Talmont, i. 122. Resigns the government of Poitou in favour of Sully, iii. 340.

Malta. (Knights of) They take Canise, and destroy Passava, iii. 120. Henry IV. procures his son Alexander to be received into that order, iv. 144.

Mamert. (Saint) Sully insulted there by the officers of the count of Soissons, ii. 128.

Mandelot. (Francis de) His humanity to the protestants on Saint Bartholomew's day, i. 40.

Manderscheidt (John). See *Strasbourg.*

Mandoce. (Bernardin de) Propofals and offers made by him from Spain to Henry IV. i. 91. Other offers from Spain made by d'Entragues, ii. 5. Henry IV. sends La Varenne thither, 6.

Mandoce. (Ignatius de) One of the Spanish plenipotentiaries to the states of Paris, i. 309.

Mangot. Sully quarrels with him, v. 51.

Manicamp. (Philip de Longueville de) Lieutenant for the duke of Vendome in the government of La-Fere, ii. 156. Sent to Flanders upon the prince of Condé's flight, v. 211.

Manou. (John d'O de) One of the catholic leaders in the party of Henry IV. i. 291.

Mansfield. (Charles) Leads a Spanish army into France during the sitting of the states of Paris, i. 309. Takes Noyon, 314. and La Chapelle, ii. 60. Unable to prevent the loss of Laon, 70, *& seqq.* Is defeated by the duke of Bouillon, 123. Loses an opportunity of fighting with the army of Henry IV. at Amiens, 240, 241.

Mante. The government of it refused to Sully, and given to his brother, i. 204. The duke of Maïenne fails in the attempts upon this city, 219. Henry IV. resides there before the reduction of Paris, 223. Conferences upon religion held there, 322. and an assembly of protestants, ii. 3. The value of this government in money given to Sully, iii. 340. He causes a bridge to be built there, v. 112.

Mantua. In what manner this principality passed into the family of Gonzague, iv. 355. The designs of Henry IV. upon the territory of Mantua, v. 159.

-------- (Vincent de Gonzague, duke of) Brother-in-law to the queen, iv. 355. The reception given him by Henry IV. at Paris, v. 128.

-------- (Eleonora de Medicis, duchess of) Godmother to the Dauphin: comes into France to perform this ceremony: they give her the precedence of the princes of the blood, iv. 356.

-------- (Eleonora de Gonzague, princess of) Henry IV. proposes to marry her to his third son, v. 158.

-------- (Margaret de Gonzague, princess of) Henry IV. proposes a marriage between her and the duke of Bar, iv. 212. She is taken ill, v. 127, 128.

Manufactures of fine stuffs. Do not succeed at first at Tours, iii. 13. Reflections on this subject, 14. Henry IV. establishes them contrary to the advice of Sully, 344. Sully opposes the re-erecting of buildings for them, iv. 144. v. 58.

Mar. (Earl of) One of the Scotch faction at London, iii. 232--257. Deputed to Sully, 273--287.

Marabat. Excluded from the general deputation at the assembly of Châtelleraut, iv. 266.

Marais. (Mademoiselle du) Daughter-in-law to the duke of Sully: married by Henry IV. to La-Boulaye, iv. 195.

Marc. (Saint) Driven out of Meulan by d'Aumont, i. 175.
Marc d'or. A subsidy destined by Henry IV. for the maintenance of his household, ii. 244.
Marchand. (Charles Le) Gives his name to the bridge Marchand, v. 111.
Marechaussées. General and particular regulations for them in Berry, v. 45.
Margaret de Valois, queen of France. Celebration of her nuptials with Henry IV. i. 27. She leaves him, and returns to court, where she quarrels with her mother and brothers, 92. Negotiations for the dissolution of her marriage commenced, ii. 268. Sully endeavours to procure her consent to it by letters, which she answers favourably, 275, 276. Particulars relating to her life, 276. Her hatred to the duchess of Beaufort, 287. The affair of the dissolution of her marriage resumed, and completed: processes of her conduct on this occasion, &c. iii. 4, 5, &c. Henry IV. obliges the count of Auvergne to do her justice with regard to the inheritance of Catherine de Medicis: praises of her moderation and disinterestedness, iv. 62. Sully goes to her, to confer with her concerning the cabals of the disaffected party, 241. She quits the castle of Usson, which she consents should be demolished: and resides in the castle of Madrid: honours which she receives there from the king and queen: her great confidence in Sully, 292, 293. Particulars of her life: her death: her good and bad qualities, 293. Presents which she makes to the duke and duchess of Sully, 309. She assists at the baptism of the children of France, 357. Gives the dauphin her mother's estates, which are augmented in their value by Sully, v. 40--190.
Marguerit. Advocate-general of Rouen: favours granted by Henry IV. to his children, v. 191.
Marie. (Sainte) Requested by Henry IV. v. 57.
Marillac. Engaged in the gallantries of Henry IV. v. 76.
Marine. The deplorable condition it was in at the time of the peace of Vervins, ii. 309, 310. Regulations for its establishment, v. 53. Schemes for this purpose, 171. See *Cabinet of state.*
Marion. Sully's letter to him, v. 118.
Marivault. (Claud de l'Isle de) Present at the battle of Aumale, i. 236. At the siege of Laon, ii. 72. At the defeat of the grand convoy, 74.
Mark. (La) Earldom and counts of this name: how this principality became united to the duchy of Cleves, v. 231.
---- (William Robert de la) Brother to the duchess of Bouillon: his death and last will, i. 223, 224.
---- (Robert de la) Father to the duchess of Bouillon, i. 223. He held Sedan under the protection of Francis II. iv. 326.
---- (Charlotte de la). See *Bouillon* (duchess of).
Markham. (Lord) Conspires against the king of England, iii. 320.
Marle. (Castle of) Henry IV. resides there in his youth, ii. 79.
Marmande. Lost by Henry IV. i. 53. Skirmishes before this town, 71, 72.
Marmoutier. Henry II. narrowly escapes being taken there by the duke of Maïenne, i. 165.

Marne. L'Hôte drowned in attempting to ſwim over this river, iv. 33.
Maroniere. Governor of Talmont, i. 122.
Marquemont. (Denis de) Archbiſhop of Lyons. Endeavours to procure a diſſolution of the marriage between Henry IV. and Margaret de Valois, ii. 267. Is refuſed a cardinal's hat, iv. 39.
Marquets. (Des) Signs a writing of diſcharge for the effects of the ducheſs of Bar, iv. 4.
Marſeilles. Its reduction by the duke of Guiſe, ii. 110. Deputation from thence to Henry IV. 166. Sum paid at its ſurrendering, 311. Biron's party endeavour to get poſſeſſion of this city, iii. 114. Deſigns of Spain upon the iſles, 324. Inſurrections which happen there upon the prohibition of commerce with Spain, iv. 113. Schemes of the diſaffected party to ſeize it, 228. The troubles in this city pacified, 368.
Marſilliere. (N. de) A proteſtant officer: deputed to Germany, i. 121.
Marteau. (Michael de la Chapelle) Traverſes Villeroi's treaty with Henry IV. ii. 30--49. What paſſes between Sully and him with this governor, 49. He leaves Rouen, 50.
Marthe. (Meſſieurs de Saint) Friends of Sully: their letters juſtify him againſt the calumnies of father Cotton in the affair of the college of Poitiers, iv. 158.
Martigues. (Mary de Beaucaire, ducheſs of) Leaves the duke of Mercœur with Henry IV. ii. 251. Viſits Sully, 254. She raiſes obſtacles to the marriage of the duke of Vendome with mademoiſelle Mercœur, v. 98.
Martin. (Charles le Clerc de Saint) Slain at the taking of Cahors, i. 67.
---------- (M. de Saint) Firſt gentleman of the bed-chamber to the king of Navarre, ii. 180.
---------- (Madame de Saint) Wife to the firſt preſident, related to the princeſs Catherine, ii. 180.
Maſſin. (Madame de) Her reception of Sully her nephew, i. 89.
Martinengue. His party in Provence, i. 269.
Matelet, Governor of Foix. Throws himſelf into Calais, and ſurrenders it to the Spaniards, ii. 147.
Matignon. (James de) Marſhal of France. He takes Montgomery priſoner, i. 44. Judgment upon his procedure, ib. He commands an army in Guyenne: loſes Caſtets, 115. Henry IV. eſcapes him, ib. Joyeuſe fights the battle of Coutras without his aſſiſtance, 139. He refuſes to ſuccour Villemur, 270. Henry makes him one of the council of finances, ii. 114. He defeats the Crocans, and raiſes the ſiege of Blaye, 182.
---------- (Odet de). See *Thorigny.*
Matthias. Arch-duke of Auſtria. The United Provinces offer him the ſovereignty over them: but are afterwards diſguſted with him, i. 77.
Maubuiſſon (Abbey of). See *Eſtrées* (Angelica d').
Maugiron. (Francis de) One of Henry III's favourites, ii. 98.
Mauleon. Taken by Henry IV. i. 127.
Maupeou. Oppoſes the re-eſtabliſhment of the jeſuits, iv. 10. v. 45.

Appointed by Henry IV. one of the council of the regency, 266.
Maur. (Saint) Sully treats there for the union of the two kings, i. 119. Henry IV. refides for fome time in this caſtle, v. 59.
Marevert. (Nicholas de Louviers de) Wounds admiral Coligny, i. 25.
Maurier. (Benjamin Auberry du) His letter to Bouillon, iii. 161--198. The ſervice he does him in the affair of Sedan, iv. 321. Benefits conferred on him by Sully, and his advice to him after the death of Henry IV. vi. 35, 36.
Mauveſin. (Synod of) A deputation from it to the duke of Bouillon, iv. 265.
Maximilian I. (Emperor) Philip II. endeavours to deprive him of the empire, ii. 330. His claims upon the Low Countries conteſtible, v. 232.
---------- II. (Emperor) His diſpoſitions with regard to the territories of Cleves, Juliers, &c. v. 234, 235. See *Cleves.*
Meaux. (Enterprize of) i. 21. Vitry ſurrenders this city to Henry IV. ii. 15.
Medals. Of gold and ſilver preſented to Henry IV. by Sully, iv. 1--303. v. 21-75--260.
Medavy. (Charles Francis Rouxel de) One of the general officers of the League, i. 178. He commences a treaty with Sully, ii. 11. Concludes it, 27. Difficulties raiſed to this treaty, 29. The money paid him, 311.
Medicis. (Houſe of) Of late date, v. 226.
-------- (Alexander de) Cardinal of Florence, negotiates for the peace of Vervins, ii. 249. Sully receives him at Paris, and at St. Germain, 295. He is made pope. See *Leo* XI.
-------- (Catherine de) Queen of France. Unſucceſsful in the war againſt the proteſtants, i. 2. Deceives them by the peace of 1570, 3. Favours the princeſs of Lorrain through her hatred to the houſe of Bourbon, 13. Occaſion of her interview at Baïonne with the duke of Alba, 19. Her artifices to draw the huguenots to Paris, 20, 21. The meaſures ſhe takes to ruin the proteſtants: maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, 28. Particulars and reflections on this ſubject, 31, 32. The grandees join the huguenots againſt her, 41. Her ſchemes for the eſtabliſhment of her children, 42. Charles IX. hates her, ib. Her artifices to diſunite Henry IV. and Monſieur, 47. She deceives them both by the peace called Monſieur's Peace, 49. Conferences in ſeveral places between her and Henry IV. but without effect, 62. Methods made uſe of by her to draw every one of his officers from him, 65. Her letter to the prince of Condé, in which ſhe thanks him for having taken arms againſt the king, 72. Her ſchemes to procure the ſovereignty of the Low Countries and the kingdom of Algiers for the duke of Anjou, 76. Her treachery in treating with Sully, 92. She loſes an opportunity of ſuppreſſing the League, and of uniting the Low Countries to France, 101. Reflections upon her bad policy, 129. She goes into Poitou, and has ſeveral conferences with Henry IV. Sully penetrates into her ſecret deſigns, 130, 131. A ſaying of hers which proves that ſhe was very indifferent about religion, 131. Several negotiations between her, the duke of Guiſe, &c. after the

the action of the barricadoes, 150, 151. She reconciles Henry III. and the Guises, 155, 156. Her death, 158. Disadvantageous character of this princess, ib. 159. She opposes the marriage of the princess Catherine with Henry III. ii. 338. Her last will in favour of her daughters, iii. 62. The value of her estates, ib. Margaret disposes of her inheritance in favour of the dauphin, v. 40. The king of Navarre (Antony) formerly disputed the regency with her, 348.

Medicis. (Come II. de) Grand duke of Tuscany, succeeds Ferdinand: insult given by his ambassador to the ambassador from France at Rome, for which Henry obliges him to give satisfaction, v. 224, 225. Henry engages him in his interests, 227.

-------- (Eleanor de) See *Mantua.* (Duchess of)

-------- (Ferdinand de) Grand duke of Tuscany, marries Mary de Medicis in the name of Henry IV. iii. 34. He surrenders the isles of If to this prince, 101, 102. Plots of his ambassador at Madrid against the designs and person of Henry III. v. 156. His death, 224, 225. Henry IV. comforts the queen for it: speech of Ferdinand to the French ambassadors, 225.

-------- (Francis Marie de) Grand duke of Tuscany: marriage of his daughter to Henry IV. proposed and concluded, iii. 11.

-------- (D. John de) A bastard uncle to the queen: comes with her to Paris, iii. 69. Stands proxy for the grand duchess of Tuscany to princess Christina of France, iv. 357. v. 57. He advises Henry IV. to send Conchini back to Italy, and the queen forces him to leave France, 82, 83--228.

-------- (Mary de) A marriage proposed between her and Henry IV. iii 10. The grand duke marries her in the name of the king, 34. She arrives at Lyons, where her marriage is completed, 62. She comes to Fontainebleau, afterwards to Paris, where Sully entertains her at the arsenal: Italians in her train, 69. Goes to keep the jubilee at Orleans, 81. Becomes pregnant, and is delivered of the dauphin: a speech of Henry's to her, and some particulars relating to the birth of her child, 97. He gives her Monceaux, 101. She follows the king to Blois, 122. This prince takes a severe resolution against her and the Italians, 133. He discloses to her his design of arresting Biron, 140. Birth of the princess Elizabeth of France: Henry's extreme tenderness to the queen during her lying-in. 177. He takes her with him to Metz, 185. His advice to her when he thought himself dying, 207. Sully presents medals of gold and silver to her, and receives presents from her in return, iv. 1, 2. Uneasiness which she gives the king by her jealousy and bad temper, 44, 45. Sully advises her on this subject, but she will not listen to him, and he endeavours to reconcile them, 48; *et seq.* Grants which she procures from the king, 51. Sully persuades her to write a submissive letter to the king, 52. They are reconciled, and quarrel again by the artifices of the marchioness of Verneuil, 53. Mutual complaints between her and Sully, who forbears to engage any more in their quarrels, 56. Other quarrels between her, the king, and the marchioness of Verneuil, which Sully endeavours to appease, 54. Presents made to her by Henry IV, and to the officers, and women of her household,

houſhold, 209. She attends the king in his journey to Auvergne, &c. 283. Viſits and honours paid by her to queen Margaret, 293, 294. A curious converſation between her, the king, and Sully, upon their diſputes, 306. She makes complaints of Henry, 307. A pleaſant ſaying of this prince to her, upon the birth of her ſecond daughter, ib. He refuſes to take thoſe meaſures which Sully propoſes to terminate their quarrels: preſents made by her to Sully, 309. She favours the Spaniſh policy againſt that of the king, 312. Attends this prince in his expedition to Sedan, and favours the duke of Bouillon, 328. Procures the ducheſs of Mantua precedence of the princes of the blood, 356. Eſcapes being drowned at Neuilly, 358. A familiar dialogue between her and the king, 370. Birth of her ſecond ſon, v. 3. New quarrels between her, the king, and the marchioneſs of Verneuil: ſhe pawns her jewels, &c. 58. Sully again endeavours to compoſe their quarrels: particulars and anecdotes on this ſubject, 76, *et ſeqq.* Henry's complaiſance to her. Birth of his third ſon, 85, 86. She gives the king dangerous advice againſt the proteſtants, 102, 103. She goes to Chartres, 148. Her friendſhip for father Cotton, 149. Plots againſt the life of Henry IV. carried on among the people of her houſhold, 155. This princeſs both blamed and juſtified on this ſubject, 162. She permits the dukes to enter the court of the Louvre in their coaches, 167. Grants which ſhe procures for Leonora from Sully, 190. Conſequences of her jealouſy of the princeſs of Condé, 198. Henry IV. comforts her for the death of the grand duke, 225. He appoints her regent during the execution of his great deſigns, 266. She inſiſts upon being crowned in oppoſition to the deſires of Henry, 272. Juſtification of this princeſs, and other particulars relating to her in the account of Henry's aſſaſſination, 276, 277. She ſends for Sully to the Louvre: the reception ſhe gives him, 320. The parliament declare her regent, 321, 322. Her ſecret council compoſed of perſons whoſe maxims of policy are directly oppoſite to thoſe of Henry IV. 325. The count of Soiſſons endeavours to get her regency annulled, 329. Difficulty of appeaſing the quarrels between the princes of the blood, 332. An extraordinary council held upon the affair of Cleves, in which ſhe will not follow Sully's advice, 334. A particular council wherein, contrary to Sully's advice, ſhe takes meaſures againſt the duke of Savoy, 338. Her policy wholly oppoſite to that by which Henry IV. governed himſelf, 340. Bears Sully ill will for his connections with the prince of Condé, 349. She receives this prince coldly, but afterwards gains him by gratuities, 351--357. Her diſſimulation with Sully, 359. She ſends an army to the ſiege of Juliers, 360. She ſecretly determines to diſmiſs Sully, vi. 1. She ſends him a comptant, which he refuſes to ſign, 5. Her reaſons for ſending for Sully from Montrond, 13. The gracious reception ſhe gives him, 16. Conchini gives her bad impreſſions of him, 19. A profuſion of gratuities, grants, and favours beſtowed by her upon the grandees, 20, 21. Mortifications which ſhe gives Sully, 23. She ſupports Villeroi and d'Alincourt againſt him in the affair at Lyons, 24, *et ſeqq.* Sully reſigns his employments of ſuperintendant of the finances

finances and governor of the Baſtile, brevets and recompences which he receives for them, 30--34. Different opinions upon his proceeding in this reſpect, 31, 32. Letters between her and Sully, wherein ſhe promiſes him her protection, 39, 40, &c. She gives him a conſiderable augmentation of his penſion, 44. She is obliged to yield to the proteſtants in the aſſembly at Châtelleraut, 109. and to the duke of Rohan in the affair of St. John d'Angely, 111. She aſks Sully's advice upon the rebellion of the princes: her letters to him, 360.

Medor. One of the conſpirators at La-Fleche, v. 213.

Megrin. (Paul Stuart de Cauſade de Saint-) A favourite of Henry III. ii. 98.

Meillant. Secretary to the council of finances, ii. 126.

Melun. Henry IV. eſcapes being aſſaſſinated there, ii. 8.

------- (Houſe of) And diſtinguiſhed perſons of this name, i. 7, 8. See following articles.

------- D'Epinoy. See *Epinoy.*

------- de Ligne. See *Ligne.*

------- de Roubais. See *Roubais.*

------- (Hugh de) Viſcount de Gand, i. 7. Sully loſes this inheritance, 78. iii. 13.

------- (Anne de) Lady de Roſny, i. 7--78.

------- (N. de) Henry IV. gives him the abbey of Moreilles, iv 196.

------- (Mademoiſelle de) Her relations refuſe to marry her to the marquis de Cœuvres, iv. 198.

Menager. Deputed from the ſtates of Blois to Henry IV. i. 59.

Menevcourt. Counſellor to the parliament of Rouen: in the party of Henry IV. ii. 166.

Mercœur. (Philip-Emanuel de Lorrain, duke of) Is by Henry III. imprudently made governor of Brittany, i. 185. Defeats the Royaliſts at Craon, 263. His ſchemes diſconcerted by Sully, 278, &c. His plots with the ſtates of Paris ineffectual, 309. His ſucceſs in Brittany, ii. 94--181. Henry IV. makes preparations for a journey into that province, to drive him from thence, 248. A bon-mot of his with regard to his pretended claims upon Brittany, ib. Methods which he makes uſe of to obtain his pardon, 251. His party in Brittany ſuppreſt, 253. The ſum he receives upon making his treaty, 310. He goes into Hungary to ſerve the emperor in his wars, iii. 12. He is made lieutenant-general there, 70. He takes Albe-Royale from the Turks, 120. Particulars relating to his death: his eulogium, 181, 182. Henry IV. purchaſes the tower of Bouc from him, 210. His ſon ſerves in the expedition of Sedan, 331.

---------- (Frances de Lorrain de) Contracted to the duke of Vendome, ii. 251. Great difficulties in accompliſhing their marriage, v. 98--101.

---------- (Mary de Luxembourg, ducheſs of). The methods ſhe makes uſe of to move Henry IV. in favour of her huſband, ii. 251. Sully is reconciled to her, 254. Obſtacles raiſed by her to the marriage of her daughter with the duke of Vendome, v. 98, &c.

Merens. Obtains a gratuity from the king, iv. 209.
Merovius. Character of this king, vi. 59.
Merovingians. Character of this race, vi. ib.
Meſmes. (N. de) i. 3. Deputed by Catherine de Medicis to Rochelle, 15.
------- (John-James de) See *Roiſſy.*
Meſmin. (Mademoiſelle de Saint) Sully falls in love with her, but afterwards ſubdues his paſſion, i. 94.
Meſnil. (Du) Captain of the old palace of Rouen in the king's party, ii. 166.
Meſnil-Baſtr. Counſellor of the parliament of Rouen in the king's party, ii. 166.
Meſſillac. (Raymond de Raſtignac, de) Succours Villemur, i. 271.
Metz. Henry IV. goes thither, and drives out the Soboles: other motives for this, and the conſequences of it, iii. 185. Sully ſupports this city againſt the jeſuits, iv. 345, 346. The duke of Verneuil is made biſhop of it: rights of this chapter, v. 109.
Meulan. Taken by D'Aumont and Sully, i. 175. The League make a fruitleſs attempt upon it: Henry IV. runs great dangers in ſuccouring it, 188. Other dangers which he eſcapes there, ii. 88.
Meyragues. (Lewis D'Alagon, or Lagonia, baron de) His crime and puniſhment, iv. 284.
Miatte. (St. Paul de La) Aſſembly of proteſtants held at this place. Deſigns formed againſt Henry IV. i. 102.
Michau. (Captain) An adventure which Henry IV. has with him, i. 97.
Michel. Vayvode of Tranſilvania: defeated by George Baſte, iii. 120.
------- (Saint) Deputed by Henry IV. to Sully, v. 102. He informs Sully of the aſſaſſination of Henry IV. 282.
Mignon. (Nichole) Attempts to poiſon Henry IV. his puniſhment, iii. 24.
Mignonville. A proteſtant officer, i. 121. Commands the artillery at Coutras, 140.
Military. (Affairs and regulations belonging to it) Part of the troops diſbanded, ii. 280. The miſerable condition to which the civil wars had reduced it, 309. Eſtabliſhments for the invalid ſoldiers, and other regulations, iv. 109. Order in military diſcipline reſtored, 208. Schemes for this purpoſe, v. 171. A uſeful regulation in military diſcipline projected by Henry IV. vi. 103, 104.
Milly. (Conferences of) The ſubject treated of there, ii. 10.
Milon. A proteſtant officer: occaſions the taking of Monſegur, i. 74.
Mines of gold, ſilver, &c. Diſcovered in France, iii. 174.
Miniſters of ſtate. Character of a perfect miniſter, ii. 296, *et ſeqq.* What ſort of perſons were then called miniſters and ſecretaries of ſtate: the title of miniſter not much in uſe, 304. Maxims of Sully upon this employment, iv. 169. How kings ought to behave to miniſters, v. 10. Faults which they often commit. Qualities neceſſary to be poſſeſſed by miniſters of ſtate, 172.
Mulens. A city taken by Henry IV. iii. 37.

Mieſſens. (Henry D'Albret, baron de) One of the proteſtant lords, i. 52--ii. 180.
Mirande. A ſnare laid by its inhabitants for Henry IV. i. 56.
Mirebeau. (James Chabot de) His behaviour at the battle of Fontaine Françoiſe, ii. 137.
Mirepoix. (Louiſa de Bethune, marchioneſs of) Her ingratitude to the duke of Sully her father, vi. 50.
Miron. Firſt phyſician to Henry III. his ſpeech to this prince. See *Henry* III. He aſſiſts at the conferences after the barricadoes, i. 156.
------ (Francis). Lieutenant civil, and intendant of Paris: Biron's diſcourſe to him upon the ſcaffold, iii. 144. His death, v. 110. His oppoſition to the regiſtring the rents: particulars relating to his life: Sully's generoſity to his family, 111.
Miſtreſſes of Henry IV. Their names: the children he had by them, v. 75, 76.
Mole. (Joſeph Boniface de La) Beheaded, i. 43.
------ (Edward). His oppoſition to the duke of Maïenne. See *States of Paris.*
Molina. A jeſuit: his opinion concerning grace, iv. 19.
Momier. Concierge of St. Germain en Laye, ii. 295.
Monaco. Spain uſurps this principality, iv. 133.
Monarchy. (Univerſal) Proofs that Charles V. Philip II. and Philip III. formed ſchemes for it, iv. 310.
Monceau. (Du) Commiſſary in Berry, v. 45.
Monceaux. (Marchioneſs of) See *Eſtrées* (Gabriella de).
Moncenis. A proteſtant town, v. 105.
Moncontour. (Battle of) i. 9.
Mondoucet. (Claude) Reſident in the Low Countries, i. 28.
Money. That of Spain very common in France, ii. 11. Abuſes in it corrected, and new regulations, iii. 73. Foreign money prohibited, 74. The carrying of coin out of the kingdom prohibited, 75. The value of it raiſed, and reckoning by livres eſtabliſhed, 170--174. Maxims and reflections upon theſe operations, ib. Edicts concerning the coin, troubles occaſioned by them, ib.
Monks. See *Friars.*
Mons. Taken by the prince of Orange, i. 18.
Monſegur. Taken by the proteſtants, i. 74.
Monſire. (Gamaliel de) Sent by Henry IV. to draw out the garriſon from Sedan, v. 62.
Mont. (Du) or *Des-Monts.* Sent into Canada, iii. 348.
------ (St. Mary de) A proteſtant gentleman, well affected to the king, ii. 351.
Montaffie. (Houſe of) in Piedmont. Sully diſſuades Henry IV. from purchaſing the eſtates of that houſe, iii. 103. A quarrel on this occaſion between the count of Soiſſons and Sully, v. 330. The queen regent favours the count of Soiſſons in this affair, vi. 4.
---------- (Lewis count of). Marries his daughter to the count of Soiſſons, iii. 103.
---------- (Anne de). Marries the count of Soiſſons, iii. 103.
Montagne. A converſation between him and De Thou. See *Thou* (De).

Montagu. Taken by the proteſtants, i. 66.
Montataire. Deputed to Sully by the prince of Condé, v. 348.
Montauban. A cautionary town given to the proteſtants, i. 3. It maintains its privileges, 41. Aſſembly of proteſtants held in this city: tumults among them, 102. Their eulogium upon Henry IV. iii. 389. Taken by Lewis XIII. Sully's ſervices at this ſiege, vi. 117.
Montauſier. A proteſtant officer. Preſent at the battle of Coutras, i. 140.
Montbazon. (Lewis de Rohan, duke of) i. 106. The reception he gives Sully, 112, 113. Preſent at the battle of Saveuſe, 168. Is killed at Arques, 182.
---------- (Hercules de Rohan, duke of). Sully's friendſhip for him cenſured, iv. 185. Henry IV. lives with him at Livry, v. 152. Appointed one of the regents, 266. Involved in Ravaillac's conſpiracy, 302. Deputed to Sully by the queen regent, 319.
Monte. (Horace Del-) Commiſſioner from the pope for the diſſolution of the marriage between Henry IV. and Margaret de Valois, iii. 6.
Monteſſan. Attends Henry IV. in the campaign of Savoy, iii. 60.
Montferrat. Henry IV. has a deſign upon this principality, v. 159.
Montglat. (Lewis de Harlay de) Firſt ſteward of the houſhold to Henry IV. He is ſent by that prince to meet the foreign army, i. 147. He is reſident from France in Germany, iv. 330. Appointed ambaſſador to the Porte, v. 265.
---------- (Madame de). Governeſs to the children of France: ſhews the dauphin in Paris, iv. 144. Preſents made her by Henry IV. 209. By Sully, 305. Carries the children of France to Noiſſy, v. 60--108.
Montgomery. (Gabriel count of) Kills Henry II. in a tournament, i. 13. Eſcapes at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, 32. Returns into France, 43. Is taken and executed: the opinion of the author concerning the promiſe that was ſaid to be given him by Matignon, 44.
Montguyon. Henry IV. occupies this poſt. See *Coutras.*
Montignac-Le-Comte. Taken by the duke of Maïenne, i. 117.
Montigny. (Francis de la Grange de) Preſent at the defeat of the grand convoy ſent to Laon, ii. 75. Henry IV. is wounded by Châtel as he was giving him audience, 119. That prince refuſes him the poſt of grand maſter of the ordnance, 237. Makes him governor of Metz, and the country of Meſſin, iii. 183. Sully's friendſhip for him calumniated, iv. 185. A quarrel between him and the duke of Epernon, v. 98. The queen regent declares for Epernon againſt him, vi. 21.
Montlieu. See *Coutras.*
Montluc. (Blaiſe de) Marſhal of France: commands in Languedoc, i. 40. His opinion concerning the ſiege of Rochelle, 41.
--- ----- (John de). Biſhop of Valence: reveals the ſecret of the court concerning the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30.
Montluc-Balagny. See *Balagny.*
Montluet. (Francis D'Angennes de) Sent by Henry IV. to Bouillon, iv. 255. His opinion upon the enterprize of Sedan contrary to

to Sully's, and endeavours to diſſuade Henry from underſtanding it, 317.

Montmagny. A rich citizen of Paris, iv. 211.

Montmartin. Treats for the government of Poitou for Sully, iii. 340. Sent to the Griſons on the affair of La-Valteline, iv. 376. Deputed by the king to aſſiſt at the ſynod of Rochelle, v. 12, 13.

Montmelian. A converſation between the duke of Savoy and Sully concerning this place, iii. 18, 19. Crequy takes the city, and Sully makes preparations for beſieging the caſtle, 37. He lays ſiege to it, and obliges it to capitulate: the labours he endures, and the dangers he expoſes himſelf to during this ſiege, 49.

Montmorency. (Anne de) Conſtable of France: he rekindles the war, i. 12. Is very powerful in the reign of Henry II. an account of his miniſtry, ib.

---------- (Charles de). De Damville. admiral: an important ſervice done him by Conchini, vi. 7.

---------- (The Chevalier de). Seizes the Luquiſſes and other rebels, iv. 258.

---------- (Francis de). Called the marſhal de Montmorency: ſent to Rouen to puniſh the injuries committed againſt the proteſtants, i. 15. Sent to London to treat of a marriage between queen Elizabeth and the duke of Alençon, 18. Refuſes to come to court, 31. Charles IX. ſpares the lives of his brothers at the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, that he might not provoke him, 32.

---------- (William de). See *Thore*.

---------- (Henry de). Called ſucceſſively marſhal de Damville, marſhal and conſtable de Montmorency: he joins the proteſtants, i. 46. His opinion of the duel between Turenne and Duras, 65. He gives the proteſtants good counſel, 103. Commands the troops of Henry IV. in Languedoc, 116--123. Supports his party in Dauphine, 268. Succours Villemur, 271. Is made conſtable: his ſucceſſes in Dauphine, ii. 123. His reaſons for entreating Henry to come into Burgundy, 124. He oppoſes Sully's entrance into the council of finances, 185. He gives a ball at court, 221. Sully gains his approbation of his method of managing the finances, 319, 320. The death of his ſecond wife, 356. He is appointed one of the commiſſioners in the affair of the marquiſate of Saluces, iii. 19. And for the peace of Savoy. Serves the king but indifferently on that occaſion, 61--63. Commands the troops left in Piemont, 68. He is ſuſpected of being an accomplice with Biron, 148. Henry IV. reſtores him to his favour at the entreaty of Sully, 151. He and his family intercede for the count of Auvergne, 152. He does Sully a ſervice, 177. He favours the repeal of the jeſuits baniſhment, iv. 5. Is employed in the prohibition of commerce between France and Spain, 114. Henry cauſes the foreſt of l'Aigle to be divided between himſelf and the conſtable, 210. He draws up the proceſs againſt the Luquiſſes, 259. Henry IV. deſigns to marry mademoiſelle de Vendome to his ſon, v. 73. He is appointed one of the members of the council of regency by this prince, 266. He offers his ſervices to Sully after the death of Henry IV. 319. The queen regent makes him one

one of her council, 326. He assists at it, and takes Sully's part against Bouillon, vi. 10. His quarrels with the grandees and the ministers, ib.

Montmorency. (Charlotte de). See *Angouleme* (duchess of).

---------- (Charlotte-Margaret de). Henry IV. will not consent to her marriage with the marquis of Rosny, v. 65, 66. but destines her for the prince of Condé, 98. She is married to him contrary to Sully's advice: motives of this marriage, and the passion of Henry for this princess, 153, 154, & *seqq.* Henry promises Sully to renounce his passion, 161. Sully's prudent advice to him on this occasion, 166. The plots and discontent of the prince of Condé, 199. Her husband carries her to Flanders: particulars relating to their flight, 203, 204. Disadvantageous reports raised against the honour of this princess, 208.

---------- (Hippolita de). See *Epinoy.*

Montmorency-Crevecœur. See *Crevecœur.*

Montmorency-Du-Hallot. See *Hallot.*

Montmorin. See *Saint Heron.*

Montpazier and Villefranche. These towns surprized by the inhabitants of each other, i. 51.

Montpensier. (Francis de Bourbon, duke of) Takes Fontenai and Lusignan, i. 44.

---------- (Francis de Bourbon, duke of). Raises the siege of Livron, i. 45. Attends Monsieur in Flanders, 85. and endeavours to dissuade him from the treachery he committed at Antwerp, 87.

---------- (Henry de Bourbon, duke of) Commands the royal forces in Normandy, i. 185. An account of this expedition, 222, & *seq.* Henry III. to blame in taking the government of Brittany from him, 185. He loses the battle of Craon, 263. Is wounded at the siege of Dreux, 324. Sully reconciles him and the count of Soissons, ii. 20. The part he has in the treaty with admiral Villars, 32. Receives a recompence from Henry IV. 45. He proposes to this prince to make the governments hereditary, and sovereignties, 149. He acknowledges his fault, and repairs it, ib. Henry sends Sully to him upon some false accusations, 165. And designs to marry him to the princess Catherine, 166. He marries the heiress of the house of Joyeuse, 367. Is suspected of being concerned in Biron's conspiracy, iii. 148. Gives Sully his interest for obtaining the government of Poitou, 338. His friendship for him calumniated, iv. 185. Henry IV. destines his only daughter for the second son of France, 158.

---------- (Catherine Maria de Lorrain, duchess of) The clemency and generosity of Henry IV. to this lady, ii. 44.

---------- (Maria de Bourbon) Only daughter of Henry duke of Montpensier: she is contracted to the second son of France, v. 158.

Montpezat. (Henry des Pres de) Sent by the duke of Maïenne into Spain, ii. 15. Serves the League, 182.

Montrichard. Henry III. and Henry IV. have a conference there, i. 162.

Montrivoux. An estate purchased by Sully, vi. 50.

Montrond. An eſtate of Sully's, to which he retires during the coronation of Lewis XIII. motives which induced the queen regent to recal him, vi. 12--48--119. Improvements made by Sully in this caſtle, 134.

Moors. In Spain, i. 11. They revolt, and implore aſſiſtance from France; which they cannot obtain, v. 135, 136. They are baniſhed out of Spain, 139.

Mora. (Chriſtopher de) A favourite of Philip III.'s, ii. 328.

Moreau, or *Mor'e.* (The commander) Offers made by him to Henry IV. on the part of Spain, i. 91.

Moreilles. (Abbey of) Given to a nephew of Sully's, iv. 196.

Moret. Sully receives the king there, ii. 128--142. Henry purchaſes that houſe, iv. 359.

------ (Jaqueline de Beuil, counteſs of) Preſents which ſhe receives from Henry IV. iv. 209. Her character: anecdotes relating to her life, ib. Other preſents made her by Henry, 363. He goes to ſee her, v. 4--75. Her children by him, ib. An intrigue between her and the prince of Joinville, 91. She endeavours to ruin Sully, 195.

Morette. (Count of) One of the duke of Savoy's commiſſioners in the affair of Saluces, iii. 19.

Morfontaine. Keeper of the royal treaſure, ii. 200.

Morgan. The count of Auvergne's agent. His ſeizure, and proceſs, iv. 77, 78.

Morges. His information againſt Leſdiguieres, iv. 68.

Morinville. A gentleman attached to Sully, i. 108.

Moriſques. See *Moors.*

Morlais. Taken by D'Aumont, ii. 94.

Morlas. One of the heads of the proteſtants: he changes his religion, and is greatly eſteemed by Henry IV. ii. 194. See *Salette.*

Mornay, (Philip) Du Pleſſis, i. 112. He cures Henry IV. at La Mothe-Frelon, 160. He is made governor of Saumur, 163. A letter which Henry IV. ſent to him upon his treaty of union with Henry III. 164. A letter from him to Henry IV. after the battle of Aumale, 243. He interpoſes in the converſion of Henry IV. 317. Serves Villeroi in his treaty with the king, ii. 46. Cabals in the proteſtant party during the ſiege of Amiens, 234. Cauſes an article to be inſerted in the edict of Nantes, by which it is obliged to be amended, 351. His public diſpute with Du Perron, iii. 25. His plots at London, 243. The king of England ſpeaks to Sully in his favour, 252. He plots in favour of Bouillon, and againſt the pope, 336, 337. He excites the proteſtants to rebellion, ib. Sully excludes his deputies from the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, and diſconcerts his ſchemes there, iv. 250--268. He endeavours to break off the enterprize againſt Sedan, 316. Farther account of his plots with the proteſtants, v. 101. Sully juſtifies him to the king againſt a ſlander that was raiſed againſt him, 213. He openly ſupports Sully's party againſt the court, and the council of the queen regent, vi. 109. See *Châtelleraut.*

Mornay (Peter de). See *Buhy.*

Moroſini. (John Francis) The pope's nuncio. Henry III. dares not oppoſe him, i. 161.

Morſan. (Bernard, provoſt of) Procures juſtice to be done to the huguenots at Rouen, i. 15.

Mortier-Choiſy. A contractor, v. 190.

Mulberry-Trees. Ordered by an edict to be planted in the kingdom, iii. 175. Henry has them cultivated contrary to Sully's advice, 341. Stuffs made of the bark of theſe trees, iv. 211.

Muſcovy. Part of the great deſign relating to this ſtate, vi. 77. See *Political Deſign.*

Motke. (Valentine de Pardieu de la) Brings troops to the aſſiſtance of the League at the ſiege of Rouen, i. 235. His death, ib.

Motke-Frelon. (La) Henry IV. is taken ill at this place, i. 160.

Motte. (Bridge of the) The two kings have an interview there, i. 165.

Motteville. Preſident of the parliament of Rouen. In the party of Henry IV. ii. 166. v. 87.

Mouſſy. (N. Bouthillier de) ii. 99. Defeats a body of forces belonging to the League, 122.

------ (Father). A jeſuit. His letter on occaſion of the quarrel about the college of Poitiers, iv. 159, 160.

Mouy. (Iſaac Vaudré de) A proteſtant officer, i. 108. Preſent at the battle of Saveuſe, 168. Does not arrive till after the battle of Ivry, 198. Adviſes the amendment of the edict of Nantes, ii. 351.

Muſat. Treaſurer of France. Contributes to the ſeizure of the count of Auvergne, iv. 80. Gives information of the ſeditious cabals, 228. His connections with Leſdiguieres render him ſuſpected, v. 14.

------ Treaſurer of the extraordinary of war. Attached to Sully: advice, and marks of confidence, which he receives from him, vi. 35, 36.

Muſtapha. (Agi Ibrahim) Aga of Cairo. His letter to Sully concerning a reſident from the Porte at Marſeilles, v. 229.

N.

NANCY. The ducheſs of Bar makes an entertainment for Henry IV. there, iii. 200.

Nargis. Goes into the ſervice of the arch-duke in Flanders, iii. 200.

------- (Beauvais) His converſation with the duke of Guiſe. See *Guiſe* (Henry de).

Nantz. (Edict of) Extorted by the proteſtants, ii. 234. Henry IV. employs himſelf in drawing up articles, 248. His ſtay at Nantz for that purpoſe, 257. Oppoſition made to its being regiſtered, 264. They find it neceſſary to make ſome alterations in it: treachery of theſe who were employed to compoſe it, 346, *& ſeqq.* The edict is at length regiſtered, 351. and propoſed by Henry IV. as a fundamental writing in the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, iv. 234.

Naples. Henry IV. propoſes to give this kingdom to the pope, iv. 133. See *Political Deſign.*

Narbonne. The rebels endeavour to ſeize this place, iii. 114.

---------- (Viſcounty of) Purchaſed by the houſe of Bourbon, i. 9.

Nargonne. A commiſſioner in the affair of the tower of Bouc iv. 210.
Naſſau. (William de) Prince of Orange. See *Orange.*
-------- (Henry de) Ambaſſador from the United Provinces to London: James refuſes to acknowledge him, but afterwards treats him better, iii. 236--239.
-------- (Juſtin de) Ambaſſador from the States-General to France: a converſation between Henry IV. and him, ii. 260.
-------- (Lewis de) Or count Lodovic. One of the heads of the proteſtant party in France, i. 23.
-------- (Maurice de) Prince of Orange. See *Orange.*
-------- (Philip de) Brings troops to the aſſiſtance of Henry IV. at the ſiege of Rouen, i. 226. He defeats the count of Mansfield, ii. 123.
Navarre. (Kingdom of) Uſurped by the Spaniards, i. 11. Deſign of Catherine de Medicis to purchaſe it from the houſe of Albret, and to exchange it with Spain, 76. Claims of the houſe of Rohan upon the eſtates poſſeſſed by that of Albret there, iv. 194. The finances of Navarre are reunited to thoſe of France, v. 38. A diſpute concerning the boundaries of this kingdom terminated to Henry's advantage, 134. Part of the great deſign which relates to this ſtate, vi. 95. See *Political Deſign.*
-------- (Kings of) See the following articles.
-------- (Antony de Bourbon, king of) i. 1. His death, 11. Particulars relating to his life, ib. 12.
-------- (Henry d'Albret, king of) Particulars relating to this prince at the birth of his grandſon, i. 9.
——— (Henry de Bourbon, prince, afterwards king of). Afterwards king of France. See *Henry* IV.
-------- (Jean d'Albret, queen of) i. 11. Retires to Rochelle at the peace of 1570, 15. Motives which determine her to go to Paris, 16. Her death, 28. Opinions concerning it, ib.
Nemours. A treaty extorted by the League in this city, i. 99. Conferences there between Catherine de Medicis and the duke of Guiſe after the action of the barricadoes, 156.
--------- (Charles-Emanuel de Savoy, duke of). Fights for the League at Ivry, i. 196. Defends Paris againſt Henry IV. 207. His party in Provence unſucceſsful, 268. As likewiſe his deſigns and plots at the ſtates of Paris, 309. The city of Lyons ſurrenders to Henry IV. notwithſtanding his endeavours to the contrary: the treatment he receives there, ii. 57, 58. The conſtable de Montmorency defeats his troops, and takes his towns, 123. His death, 157. Sum paid him at his treaty, 310.
--------- (Henry de Savoy). See *Saint Sorlin.*
--------- (La Garnache). See *Garnache* (La).
Nérac. A brave action of Henry's before this town, i. 60. Conferences between this prince and Catherine de Medicis there, 62.
Néreſtan. (Philibert de) Captain of the guards: he arreſts the count of Auvergne, iv. 86. Supports Sully's opinions upon the enterprize of Sedan, 325.

Nery. (Madame de) Prevails upon d'Eſtrees to treat with Sully for the poſt of grand maſter of the ordnance, iii. 15.
Neſle. (Marquis of) Slain at the battle of Ivry. See *Ivry.*
Netancourt. (John de) Count of Vaubecourt, deputed by Bouillon to the king, iv. 332. Henry IV. makes him governor in Sedan, 337.
Neubourg. (Philip-Lewis, count palatine of) His claim to the ſucceſſion of Cleves,, v. 233. He divides it with the elector of Brandenbourg, 362. See *Cleves.*
Nevers. (Charles de Gonzague, duke of) Is wounded at the ſiege of Buda: his eulogium, iii. 181. He ſerves in the expedition of Sedan, iv. 331. Proceſſes between him and Henry IV. for the eſtates of the houſe of Albret, v. 47. He is ſent ambaſſador to Rome, 109. He treats the miniſters ill, vi. 13. Grants which he procures from the queen regent, 20. Eſtates purchaſed by Sully of him, 48.
------- (Lewis de Gonzague, duke of) Makes himſelf dreaded by Henry III. i. 161. Attaches himſelf to Henry IV. after the death of that prince, 176. Brings troops to the king, and endeavours to procure the chief ſway in his council, 212. Excites the catholics to mutiny at the ſiege of Rouen; the cauſe of another misfortune which happens to the king at Bully, 237. He becomes one of the heads of the third party, 283. His plots with the ſtates of Paris, 311. Henry IV. ſends him to Rome, to pay obedience in his name to the pope, ii. 1. He is made governor of Champaign, 103. and head of the new council of finances, 114. His quarrels with Sully, 116. He commands the king's forces in Picardy, 125. Quarrels with the other commanders: his ill ſucceſs, 130. His death, 157. Opinion of his conduct, 158.
--- --- (Ducheſs of). Engaged in the intrigues of Henry IV. v. 160.
Neufchâtel. Taken by Henry IV. i. 178. Ill defended by Givry, 246.
Neuville. See *Villeroi*, and *Alincourt.*
Neufvy. (Bertrand de Melet de Fayolles de) An officer in the party of the League, i. 113.
------- (Madame de). Gives bad advice to the princeſs Catherine, ii. 172--176.
Neuilly. The king and queen are in danger of being drowned there, iv. 358.
Nicholas. (Simon) His gay diſpoſition: the freedom and liveline's of his jeſts, iii. 130.
Nieuport. Loſt by the treachery committed at Antwerp, i. 87. The prince of Orange gains a battle there againſt the arch-duke Albert, and is obliged to raiſe the ſiege, iii. 70.
Nimes. Makes an advantageous treaty, i. 41.
Noailles. Quarrels between this family and that of Roqueiaure compoſed by Sully, iv. 359.
------- (Francis de). The occaſion of his embaſſy to the Porte, i. 76. He commands the forces at the ſiege of Pierrefort, v. 55.

Nobleſs. Sully's reflections upon the little reſpect ſhown to them upon their unequal alliances, and degenerated manners, iii. 78, *et ſeqq.* Schemes of Henry IV. concerning them, v. 171. See *Cabinet of State.*

Nocle (Beauvais la). See *Beauvais.*

Nogent le Bethune. Buildings there by Sully, vi. 131.

Noirmoutier. (Marchioneſs of) See *Sauves.*

Noilly. The children of France reſide in that caſtle, v. 60--108.

Nompar. See *Force* (La).

Norfolk. (Duke of) One of king James's privy-counſellors, iii. 223.

Normandy. Places taken by the Royaliſts in that province, i. 187. Military operations, &c. by the duke of Montpenſier, 222, 223. See *Gautiers.* Normandy ſends ſupplies to Henry IV. for the ſiege of Rouen, 226. Its towns and governors ſubmit to that prince, ii. 38--51. Motives for Henry's journey into the Upper and Lower Normandy, iii. 335. Sully ſupports the intereſts of this province, iv. 361.

North. (Courts of the) Their bad policy diſapproved by Sully, iii. 258, 259.

Northumberland. (Earl of) One of the factious lords at London, iii. 233. He conducts Sully to his firſt audience, 247. His abilities: Sully gains his friendſhip, 253. He receives ſome advices of importance from him, 260. Sully is conducted by him to his ſecond audience, 265. and is appointed one of the commiſſioners to confer with him, 273. Sully makes him preſents, 311. He inſults colonel Vere, 320.

Notables. (Aſſembly of) At Rouen: motives, deliberations, and the reſult of this aſſembly: Henry IV's conduct there, and reflections on this ſubject, ii. 203--207. See alſo *General States.*

Notaries. Declared competent judges in all contracts, &c. v. 181.

Noue. (Francis de La-) Catherine de Medicis privately countenances his defeat in Flanders, i. 28. Eulogium of this officer, ib. He takes the ſuburb of St. Germain by aſſault, 186. Henry's great generoſity to him, ii. 43.

----- (Odet de La-). Propoſed for deputy general of the proteſtants, iv. 254. and accepted, 266. He is againſt the expedition of Sedan, 324. Is employed by Sully in the affair of Metz againſt the jeſuits, 346. Serves the king in the ſynod of Rochelle, v. 11.

Noyer. (Du) One of the conſpirators at La-Fleche, v. 214.

Noyon. The forces of the League defeated there: the town taken, i. 217, *et ſeqq.* Retaken by count Mansfield, 314.

Nugnes, or *Ordognes.* Sent by Mandoce to Henry IV. ii. 5.

Nuys. Taken by Marſhal Biron, ii. 123.

Nyort. Loſt by Henry IV. i. 128. but afterwards retaken by him, 160.

O.

O. (Francis d') de Freſne, ſuperintendant of the finances, attaches himſelf to the ſervice of Henry IV. after the death of Henry III.

III. i. 174. but governs his finances badly, and suffers him to be in want of every thing, 203. Endeavours to have the chief sway in his council, 213. Hinders the catholics from obeying him at the siege of Rouen, 232. and raises a mutiny among them, 259. He becomes one of the heads of the third party, 283. Interposes in the affair of Henry's conversion, 317. Procures the government of Paris, ii. 41. Solicits for the jesuits in their process with the university, 67. His profusion: his vices, 98. Particulars relating to his death, 99. He rents the farms under borrowed names, iv. 200.

O. (John d') De Manou. See *Manou.*

Odou. (N. d') Serves the king in the affair of the Moors revolt against Spain, v. 136.

Offices. (New created, ii. 224. Offices of the finances and the bar suppressed, iii. 81. Creation of offices to be made upon occasion, v. 176.

Officers of the crown and others: Sully alters the form of their payments and pensions, ii. 318. Suppresses part of them in the finances and the bar, iii. 81.

Oise. (George de Brancas-Villars, chevalier d') Surrenders le Havre to Henry IV. ii. 51. Obtains a pension for it, 97. Attends the king in the campaign of Franche Comte, 141. Sum paid him at his treaty, 311.

Oldecorne. (Edward) A jesuit, engaged in the conspiracy of the English lords against James, iv. 376. v. 36.

Oleron. (Isle of) Taken by the protestants, i. 3.

Olivari. (Seraphin Cazailla): his reply to Clement VIII. who refused to give Henry IV. absolution, ii. 1. Sully procures a cardinal's hat for him, iv. 39. Debts paid to him by Henry, v. 57.

Oreu. (Biron d') Or de Luna: defeated at Auneau, i. 148.

Ondevous. Agent from the duke of Bouillon, iii. 65.

Oost Frise. (Prince of) Supports Embden with the United Provinces against Spain, iii. 180.

Oraison. (Marquis d') One of Sully's train in his embassy to London, iii. 226. Employed in the affair of the marriage between mademoiselle de Mercœur, and the duke of Vendome, v. 99.

Orange. A dispute concerning this place and Blaccons, iv. 237--270. Henry IV. shows too much indulgence to Lesdiguieres upon this occasion, ib. See *Châtelleraut, Blaccons.*

------- (William de Nassau, prince of). Takes Mons from the Spaniards, i. 18. Lieutenant general to the arch-duke Matthias, 77. He escapes being murdered at Antwerp: the Flemings rise against the French upon this occasion: he pacifies them, 85, 86. He foresees and renders ineffectual the designed treachery at Antwerp, 87. Endeavours in vain to reconcile Monsieur and the Flemings, 88.

------- (Maurice de Nassau, prince of) Gains the battle of Nieuport against the arch-duke Albert, and raises the siege of that place, iii. 70. Endeavours to carry the war into the neighbourhood of Dunkirk, 83. Takes Rhimberg, and loses Bolduc, ib. 84. Henry IV. secretly grants him supplies, 95. He takes Grave: other operations, 179. Drives the Spaniards out of Vactendonk, 195.

Takes Cadsan: besieges Sluys, which he takes, 119, 120. Other military operations, 221. Interests himself in the affair of Orange and Blaccons, 238. Maintains his reputation but indifferently during the campaign of 1606. His disagreement with Barnevelt, one of the principal causes of the truce, 371, *& seqq.* He loses Antwerp, v. 25. He opposes a suspension of arms, 33. and plots in France to prevent it, 129. but Henry IV. and Sully guard against him, 131. He consents to the treaty of truce, 217. He joins the German princes assembled at Hall, 247. See *Cleves*. Takes Juliers at the head of the confederates, 359. His part in the great design, vi. 88. and the forces he contributes towards its execution, 97. See *Political Design*.

------- (Princess of) The United Provinces make her a present, iv. 121. Letters which she writes to Bouillon on the part of Henry IV. on occasion of the expedition to Sedan, 322. She receives a letter from Henry IV. upon the surrender of Sedan, 341--v. 83. Letters wrote by her to Sully, on the affair of the truce between Spain and the States General, 130.

Orbitello. Spain unjustly takes possession of it, iv. 133.

Order. (New) Of knighthood proposed by Henry IV. to be instituted, v. 169. Sully makes one for himself, vi. 128.

Orders. (Religious) See *Religious*.

Ordnance. (Grand master of) Biron, La-Guiche, St. Luc, d'Estrées, Sully, Rosny. See these names.

Orleans. Taken by the protestants, i. 21. Surrendered by La-Châtre to Henry IV. ii. 15.. Sum paid for it, 311. The king and queen keep the jubilee there, iii. 81. Henry passes some time there in his journey to Auvergne, iv. 280. Troubles in this city, v. 148.

------- (Gaston-John-Baptist of France, duke of Anjou, afterwards duke of) See *Anjou*.

------- (N. de France, duke of) His birth, 3, 4. He is taken ill, 108. Is contracted to mademoiselle de Montpensier, 158. Concini takes the government of Normandy from him: Sully presages his death, vi. 4. Cause of it, 17.

Ornano. (Alphonso d') marshal of France: He gives Henry III. good advice on the day of the barricadoes, i. 151. He supports the party of Henry IV. in Dauphine, 268. Supports the Lionnois against the League, ii. 58. Helps to defeat the troops of the dukes of Savoy and d'Epernon, 183--227. Services done by him to Henry IV. after the death of the duchess of Beaufort, 158. The king is disgusted with him, iii. 105. He is concerned in the duties arising from anchorage, 334. Sully's friendship for him calumniated, iv. 185. Sully takes his part against Epernon, 291. He disapproves of the outrageous sermons of father Gonthier, v. 156.

Orval. (Francis de Bethune count of) Henry IV. makes him a very considerable present, vi. 47. Receives some services from him: employments which he possessed: the lands of Orval erected into a duchy in his favour: the duchy of Sully goes into his hands, ib. 48. His share in the divisions Sully made of his estates: other particulars concerning him, 119.

Osorio. A Spanish officer, defends La-Fere, ii. 155.

Ossat. (Arnaud d') Cardinal, accused of favouring the League, ii. 144, 145. An examination into his conduct and sentiments, ib. Employed in the dissolution of Henry's marriage with Margaret de Valois, 267. and obtains a dispensation for the marriage of the princess Catherine and the duke of Bar, which he was accused of endeavouring to hinder, 340. His conduct in this respect examined, ib. He serves Henry IV. at Rome in the affair of Martha Brossier, 353. Further particulars of his negotiation for dissolving Henry's marriage, iii. 6. The treaty which he makes with the grand duke of Tuscany for the restitution of the isles, &c. blamed by Sully, 102. and justified, ib. Accusations of this minister against him, 188, *& seqq.* These accusations examined, ib. Mortifications which he receives from Sully, 193. He is made coadjutor of Baieux, 194. His opinion concerning the affair of the English clergy, 270. Sully presents a memorial against him to the king, iv. 114. Heads of the accusations contained in this memorial, 21. His justification: particulars relating to his birth, his life, and his death, 23.

Ostend. Lost by the treachery at Antwerp, i. 87. The arch-duke Albert lays siege to it, iii. 83. Châtillon and some other Frenchmen are slain there, 96. Farther account of this siege, 178. The Spaniards endure great fatigues, and are very unsuccessful, 194. The surrender of this place, in which the long resistance made by the Flemings almost exhausts Spain, iv. 122.

Otho. Emperor: duels authorised in his time, iv. 296.

Otoplote. The financiers carry on their frauds under this name, ii. 159.

Ottocar. King of Bohemia, i. 5.

Oval, or *Douval.* A courier sent from France to London, iii. 321.

P.

PAlatine. (Elector) The heads of the protestant party form a design to make him the protector of the French protestants, i. 102. Henry IV. withdraws the farms from his hands, ii. 317. And refuses to pardon Bouillon at his request, iii. 197, 198. He continues to support Bouillon, and endeavours to procure him the protection of king James, but in vain, 243--269--336. His fears occasioned by the expedition of Sedan, iv. 330. He writes a polite letter to Sully, v. 127.

Palatine (Princes). See *Neubourg, Deux-Ponts.*

Palcheux. A protestant officer: present at the battle of Arques, i. 180. At that of Ivry, 197. Is unjustly put under an arrest for the surrender of Neufchâtel, 246.

Palliers. Sells the lands of Caussade to Sully, vi. 50.

Palot. Receiver-general, turned out of his office by Sully, iii. 326.

----- The prince of Condé's agent at Paris, v. 347.

Pangeac, or *Pangeas.* (N. de Pardaillan de) Obliges the count of Soissons to quit Bearn, and is ill used by him on that account, i. 264.

Pangeac. (Madame de) Gives good advice to the princeſs Catherine, ii. 172. Endeavours to reſtore Sully to her favour, 179, 180. Gives an exact inventory of the effects of that princeſs, iv. 4.

Panny. (Du) Agent from D'Entragues in London, iii. 243.

Parabere. A proteſtant officer: takes Corbie, i. 216. Preſent at the ſiege of Laon, ii. 72. Serves the king faithfully, iv. 72--255. At the aſſembly of Châtelleraut: his character, 259--260. His letter to Sully concerning Bouillon, 326--353.

Paran. (Father) A jeſuit, v. 149.

Paraſis. An enemy to Sully, iv. 182.

Pardaillan. See *Pangeac, Segur.*

Pardieu. See *Mothe* (La).

Paré. (Amboiſe) Surgeon to Charles IX. his converſation with that prince concerning the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 38.

Parfaite. An officer in the houſhold of Henry IV. iii. 317. Familiar with this prince, iv. 365.

Paris. Huguenots maſſacred in that city. See *Bartholomew* (Saint). The exerciſe of the proteſtant religion forbid within ten leagues round it. See *Peace of* 1577. Tranſactions there on the day of the barricadoes, i. 150. The general conſternation there, after the departure of Henry III. The Pariſians ſend a deputation to that prince, 155. The two kings inveſt Paris, 170. Henry IV. attacks the ſuburbs, 186. He takes them by aſſault, and beſieges the city: he raiſes the ſiege in compaſſion to the inhabitants: the horrors of this ſiege: other particulars concerning it, 205, *& ſeqq.* The ſtates are held in that city: their convocation: tumult and confuſion there, 308. See *League, Guiſe, Spain,* &c. The curates of Paris enflamed againſt Henry IV. 313. Their joy at this prince's abjuration of his religion: the Pariſians ſend a deputation to him, contrary to the inclinations of Maïenne, ii. 3. The reduction of this city; and particulars relating to Henry's entry there, 42. Proceſs againſt the jeſuits carried on by the univerſity and the curates of Paris, 67. Tranquillity and order reſtored there, 220. Sum paid by Henry for its ſurrender, 311. The ſovereign courts of Paris oppoſe the regiſtering of the edict of Nantz, 347. which is altered, and at length regiſtered, 351. The reception given to the queen by this city, iii. 69. The dauphin is carried publicly thro' Paris, 101. Preſents which this city made to the queen on occaſion of the dauphin's birth, ib. Public buildings in it by Henry IV. 202. iv. 207. A contagious diſtemper, which rages in Paris, prevents the ceremony of the baptiſm of the children of France from being performed there, 357. Other public edifices, v. 112. The general grief and conſternation of this city at the death of Henry IV. &c. See *Parricide, Ravaillac, Parliament.*

Pariſiere. (N. de La) Deputed by the city of Poitiers to Henry IV. on occaſion of the quarrel between Sully and father Cotton, iv. 158.

Parliament of Paris. The League cannot engage it in their ſchemes on the day of the barricadoes, &c. i. 155. It oppoſes the deſigns of Maïenne and the League, upon the ſtates of Paris: a decree given by it upon the ſucceſſion to the crown; what perſons had moſt ſhare in this decree; and other particulars relating to it, 312. It

is recalled from Tours, ii. 45. Plots carried on in the parliament in favour of the jesuits, against the university and curates of Paris, 67. Sully is made honorary counsellor of the parliament of Paris, 302. It is obliged to alter the edict of Nantz, and to register it after great opposition, 351. The parliament supports its advocates against the king, iii. 166, 167. Opposes the edicts upon money, 173, 174. And the recal of the jesuits, iv. 9--20. An arret issued by it against the prince of Condé, v. 211. Conduct of the parliament upon the death of Henry IV. Particulars relating to the process against Ravaillac and others, on occasion of this parricide, 277. The parliament confirm the regency to the queen, 321, *& seqq.*

Parliaments. Of the kingdom: disobedience of the parliaments of Languedoc and Burgundy. See these names. Sully complains of the parliaments, v. 42. His disputes with them, 117, 118. The droit annuel. Creations of offices, and other regulations with respect to the parliaments projected. See *Cabinet of State.*

Parma. (Alexander Farnese, duke of) Raises the blockade of Cambray, and makes a fine retreat, i. 81. He forces Monsieur to quit Flanders, 88. A speech of his upon the barricadoes, 152. He obliges Henry IV. to raise the siege of Paris, 107, *et seqq.* Takes possession of an advantageous post, and acts like an able general upon this occasion: a smart saying of his to the duke of Maïenne, 209. He takes Corbeil with great difficulty, 210. Suffers some losses in his retreat, 211. He repasses the Somme, and comes to the assistance of Rouen: Henry goes to meet him, 233. He misses taking this prince at Aumale, 243. A saying of his upon this action, ib. He repasses the Somme, and again takes the road to Rouen, 246. He avoids fighting, and arrives at Rouen, 247, 248. Henry IV. deceives him, and gains several advantages over him: he is wounded: he escapes the pursuit of Henry IV. by a masterpiece of good conduct at the passage of the Seine, 253. A mutiny in the army of Henry IV. prevents his being pursued, 254. He goes back to Flanders, 263. Designs to return again into France, but dies, 273, 274. Opinion concerning his death, 274. His schemes not pursued by the states of Paris to the great advantage of Henry, 308. See *Spain, League, Maïenne.*

Parquer. President to the parliament of Grenoble, iv. 353.

Parricide. Committed on the person of Henry IV. in what manner this crime was executed, v. 282. Examination into the different opinions concerning the authors and the motives of this parricide, 283, 284. Names of the several persons who were accused of being accomplices in it, 289.

Partenay (Catherine de). See *Guellenc.*

Partenay. Lost by Henry IV. i. 128.

Parties casuel (Regulations concerning the). v. 173.

Pasleal. Ambassador from France to the Grisons, iv. 137.

Pastelée. A nun, who pretends to inspiration, iv. 350. The faction in the queen's household make use of her to serve their pernicious designs, v. 159.

Paguier. Brings letters from Villeroi to Henry IV, iii. 82.

Paſſage. (Du) Gives the king information of the duke of Savoy's deſigns, v. 17.
Paſſava. See *Châteauneuf.*
Paſſy. Defended by Sully againſt the troops of the League, i. 191.
Pavement of Paris. Regulation concerning it, iv. 207. Sums expended upon that account, v. 39.
Paul V. Rejoicings in Paris for his advancement to the pontificate, iv. 216. His attachment to France: honour paid by him to the French ambaſſador. See *Bethune.* His great eſteem for Sully: his brief to him, and Sully's anſwer to it, 218, 219. He congratulates Henry upon the expedition to Sedan, 338. Origin and effects of the diſpute between him and the Venetians, 341. He ſtands godfather to the dauphin, 357. His moderation with reſpect to the proteſtants, v. 12. He forbids the Engliſh to take the oaths of fidelity to king James, 36. Henry IV. terminates the diſpute between him and the republic of Venice, 36, 37. Brief from Paul V. and this miniſter's anſwer to it, 37, 38. He grants with ſome difficulty the biſhopric of Metz to the duke of Vernevil, 109. Preſſes Henry, but in vain, to publiſh the council of Trente, 110. He agrees to the union againſt the houſe of Auſtria, upon the promiſe that is made him of being put into the poſſeſſion of the kingdom of Naples, 258. The queen regent unites with him and Spain againſt the policy of the laſt reign, 341. His moderation towards the proteſtants, vi. 78. His part in the great deſign of Henry IV. 95, 96. Forces and money to be contributed by him towards its execution, 97. See *Political Deſign.*
Paul. (County of Saint) Purchaſed by Henry IV. with too little precaution: particulars relating to the homage paid for this county, iv. 142. See *Soiſſons* (Count of). Sully cannot prevail upon Henry to attack the towns, 339.
----- (Francis D'Orleans, count of, Saint) Governor of Picardy: one of the commanders of the king's forces in that province, ii. 125. He is defeated before Dourlens, 132. And juſtifies himſelf to Henry IV. concerning the aſſaſſination of the younger D'Epinoy, v. 7. He forms a deſign to go into the ſervice of the archdukes, 94.
Peace of 1570. Advantageous for the proteſtants, i. 3. That of Monſieur ill obſerved on both ſides: articles of this peace, 49. Of Fleix. See *Fleix.* Of Vervins. See *Vervins.*
Peace of Lyons. See *Savoy, Lyons,* &c.
Pearls. (Manufacture of falſe) Eſtabliſhed by Henry IV. iv. 211.
Pecais. Mortgaged to prince Caſimir by the prince of Condé, i. 72.
Pecbe. (Du) Treats with D'Eſtrées for the poſt of grand maſter of the ordnance for Sully, iii. 15.
Pedro (Don De Toledo), ambaſſador from Spain to France: labours to procure a peace, v. 128. His intrigues at court: a bon-mot of Henry's upon this ambaſſador, ib. 129.
Peer of France. This dignity conferred on Sully, iv. 313. A diſpute between the dukes and the eccleſiaſtical peers, upon the right of precedence at the coronation of Lewis XIII. v. 322, 323. See *Dukes.*
Peguillon. See *Martigues.*

Pehu. (William de La-Mothe de) An accomplice in the aſſaſſination of Du-Hallot. See *Allegre, Romain,* (Saint) *Rouen.*

Pelleve. (Nicholas de) Cardinal: he reveals the plots of St. Bartholomew, i. 31. Propoſes a marriage between the Infanta of Spain and the arch-duke Erneſt to the ſtates of Paris: his plots unſucceſsful, 310. See *League, Guiſe, States of Paris.*

Pembroke. (Earl of) Sully ſees him at Dover, iii. 90.

Penny in the Shilling. A tax imprudently eſtabliſhed by the aſſembly of notables, ii. 212. Revoked by the king, iii. 133. And changed into an augmentation of the taille, iv. 107.

Penſions of State. Sully changes the form of them: his labours in this reſpect, ii. 317, 318.

Penthievre. Pretended claims of this houſe upon Brittany, ii. 248, *& ſeqq.* See *Mercœur, Martigues.*

Pepin le-Bref. Sully's character of this king, vi. 59.

Peres. (Antonio) Miniſter to Philip II: diſgraced: this prince's advice to Philip III. concerning him: the maxims of this miniſter's government, ii. 336.

Perigord. Agent for the duke of Guiſe in his treaty, ii. 101.

Peronne. (Aſſembly of) The deſign of the League formed there, i. 97, 98. Henry IV. makes his entry into this city, ii. 94.

Perron. (James-David, cardinal Du-) One of the authors and promoters of the third party, i. 283. Conferences in which Sully brings him over to Henry's intereſt, 299, *& ſeqq.* He inſtructs this prince in the roman catholic religion, 326. And has the chief hand in his converſion: he endeavours to convert Sully, 329. See *Abjuration.* He is ſent to Rome by Henry IV. to pay obedience to the pope, and is made biſhop of Evreux, ii. 1. Labours with Sully to procure a reconciliation between the duke of Montpenſier and the count of Soiſſons, 20. His conduct at Rome blamed, 144. and juſtified, 145. He labours to procure a diſſolution of the marriage between Henry IV. and Margaret de Valois, ii. 267. His public diſpute with Du-Pleſſis Mornay: reciprocal letters between him and Sully, and other particulars relating to this ſubject, iii. 25, *& ſeqq.* He ſerves the king but indifferently at the treaty of Lyons, 61. And ſupports the intereſt of the jeſuits: Sully's reproaches of him on this occaſion, iv. 20. Sully endeavours to make him approve of the tolerations of religions, 36. and obtains a cardinal's hat for him, 39. The friendſhip between him and Sully, and their letters to each other, 213. His reſidence at Rome; he does Sully ſome ſervice there, 220. He congratulates this miniſter upon the ſucceſs of the expedition to Sedan, 338. Converſations between them upon the means of pacifying the quarrels between the profeſſors of the two religions, 343. He is made archbiſhop of Sens and great almoner, 345. He diſcovers the plots of the Spaniſh ambaſſador with the courtiers to Sully, v. 19. Perſuades Paul V. not to inſiſt upon the recal of the jeſuits with the Venetians, 37. Cannot prevail on Sully to change his religion, 73. He is appointed of the council of the regency by Henry IV. 266.

------- (Du-). Brother to the cardinal. Sully makes uſe of him to get the contract of marriage between the princeſs Catherine and the count of Soiſſons into his own hands, ii. 23. A converſation

between

between him and Sully in the presence of Henry IV. iv. 369. He discovers the plots of the Spanish ambassador at court to Sully, v. 19.

Persia. (Sophy of) Sends an ambassador to the Emperor Rodolphus, iii. 86. His wars with Turky and Muscovy, iv. 145.

Personio. (Robert) A jesuit. His advice to the pope the cause of the troubles in England, iii. 270. He is engaged in the conspiracy against king James, iv. 376.

Perly le Ricke. A captain in Nereſtan's regiment. Serves at the siege of Ostend, iv. 120.

Perweis. Claims of this house upon the duchy of Cleves, v. 231. See *Cleves.*

Pest. Taken by the Christians from the Turks, iii. 182.

People. Not proper to govern a state, iv. 99. See *Government, States-General, Policy.*

Phelipeaux. Treasurer of the Exchequer. Friend to Sully, v. 102. vi. 100.

Phenomena. Seen the evening before the battle of Ivry, i. 191.

Philip the August. King of France. By his excessive impost raises a rebellion in his kingdom, v. 124. Sully's character of this king, 145.

Philip le Belle. King of France. Motives for the edict he published against duels, iv. 297. Sully's character of this king, vi. 63.

Philip de Valois. King of France. Occasions a rebellion in his kingdom by his excessive impost, v. 125.

Philip II. King of Spain. Causes of the war being re-kindled between Henry and him, i. 12. His offers to Henry IV. 91. His design of making the duke of Savoy count of Provence disconcerted by Lesdiguieres, 268. Conditions offered this prince by the duke of Maïenne and the League, and his answers to them: his views by supporting the League, 279, *et seqq.* His plots with the states of Paris ineffectual, 308, 309. Proposals made by him to Henry IV. after his abjuration, ii. 2. Motives for his desiring a peace with France, 250. He is taken ill, and dies, 327. His last will, 328. Maxims of government, and advice given by him to his son, 329, *et seqq.* Particulars relating to his person, his character, and policy, 330--336. He orders an examination to be made into the usurpation of Navarre, 331. A marriage between him and the princess Catherine proposed, 339. Proofs of his designs for universal monarchy, iv. 312. The causes that hindered their succeeding, ib. Motives for the advice he gave to the duke of Anjou concerning the treachery at Antwerp, v. 164. See *Philip* III. *Spain, the League,* &c.

Philip III. King of Spain. Instructions and advice given him by Philip II. when dying, ii. 331. He banishes Mora, and gives his place to Doria, 336. Marries the arch-duchess of Gratz, ib. 337. He condemns the pretended Don Sebastian to the gallies, iii. 118. Congratulates Henry IV. upon the discovery of Biron's conspiracy: Henry's answer, 161. Takes possession of Final, Piombino, &c. without any just claim, 180. and endeavours to seize Embden, but in vain, ib. Favours the duke of Savoy in his attempts upon Geneva: complaints and invectives of the king of England against him,

him, 249. Conversations between king James and Sully, upon the means of humbling the king of Spain, 265. His designs upon Barbary, 322. Upon the coasts of the Mediterranean, 323, 324. He sends for the children of Savoy to Madrid, and makes them grandees of Spain, 324. He resumes his father's designs of universal monarchy, iv. 310. He carries on plots in the court of France against the life of Henry IV. v. 18. He ratifies the treaty for a suspension of arms with the United Provinces; and afterwards concludes a truce for twelve years, 31, 32. Mary de Medicis adopts his policy, and seeks his alliance, 325 He sends ambassadors to France upon the death of Henry IV. vi. 11. See upon this article, *Austria* (House of), *Spain*, *Flanders*, *James*, *Seditious*, *Parricide*.

Picardy. Towns of this province into which Henry made his entry, ii. 94. The campaign of Picardy unfortunate for France, 131. Other expeditions of Henry's after the taking of Amiens, 244, 245.

Piercy. (Lord) Defeats the rebels in Ireland, iii. 118.

Pierrefort. (Castle of) Besieged, v. 54.

Pile. (La-) Attorney-general of Rouen. Friend to Sully; serves him in the treaty with admiral Villars, ii. 34.

Piles. (Armand de Clermont de) A protestant lord, i. 24. Murdered at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 35.

Pimentel. An Italian. Henry IV. admits him into his parties of pleasure: a comical adventure between Sully and him, v. 64. His arts to win at gaming, 113.

Pielant. (Mademoiselle de) One of the women-attendants upon the children of France, iv. 305.

Piombino. Usurped by Spain from the emperor, iv. 133.

Pisany. (John de Vivonne de) Deputed by Henry IV. to the pope, who refuses to give him audience, i. 314. Sent to Rome to pay obedience to the pope, ii. 1.

Pius IV. Pope. Degrades the cardinal de Châtillon, i. 17.

Pius V. Refuses to give a dispensation for the marriage of Henry IV. with Margaret de Valois, i. 27. Deplores the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 31. His character, iv. 213.

Plague, Or a contagious disease at Paris, hinders the celebration of the baptism of the children of France, iv. 357.

Plaisance. (Cardinal de) Legate: his plots with the states of Paris ineffectual, i. 313. He retires to Soissons after the reduction of Paris, ii. 43. See *League*.

Planche. (La) A foreign manufacturer: sent for to France by Henry IV. iv. 211.

Plessis. (Francis du) See *Richelieu*.

Plessis-Mornay. See *Mornay*.

Plesson. (Du) iv. 330.

Plume. (La) Sent by Henry IV. to the baron de Lux, iii. 149.

Pluviaut. (Claveau) A protestant gentleman, murdered at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i. 24--32.

Pluviers, or *Petiviers*. Taken by the two kings, i. 170. Affair of the provost of Pluviers, v. 295, 296. See *Conspiracy*, *Parricide*, *Ravaillac*.

Podins. A catholic officer in the royaliſt party, i. 52.
Poigny. (John d'Angennes de) Deputed from the court to Henry IV. i. 120.
Poiſſy. Taken by the two kings, i. 170.
Poitiers. Blockade of this city, i. 263. It ſurrenders to Henry IV. ii. 57. Sum paid for its ſurrender, 311. A great quarrel between Sully and father Cotton on account of a college in this city, iv. 154--161. The citizens make complaints againſt the jeſuits, v. 17.
Poitou. Henry's journey into this province, iii. 133. He gives the government of it to Sully, 340. Value of this government, ibid. His journey there: motives and deſign of this journey, 66. Honours paid him there, 70. He ſells this government to the duke of Rohan, vi. 49. Roads and public works made by him there, 130.
Pol. (Antony de Saint) Brings the forces of the League to the ſiege of Rouen, i. 235. One of the four marſhals of France made by the League, 305. Slain by the duke of Guiſe, ii. 109.
Police. Henry IV. after the peace of Vervins, applies himſelf to reſtore order in it, ii. 281. Sully's maxims upon the police, iii. 77, *et ſeqq.* 344, 345. Henry IV. reſtores it in his kingdom, iv. 208. Regulations upon it, v. 47--117. Other regulations and eſtabliſhments projected in the cabinet of ſtate, 171--182.
Policy. (Maxims of) ii. 261, 262. Thoſe of Philip II. with reſpect to France and other ſtates of Europe, 331, 332. Other maxims upon war, iii. 31. Sully's political reflections upon war, the nobleſſe, the finances, luxury, &c. 78, &c. Upon England, and Europe in general, 230, 231. Political ſyſtem of cardinal Richelieu, for humbling the houſe of Auſtria, formed upon the deſigns of Sully, iv. 25. Fine political reflections upon government, 99--103. Others upon the ruin and weakneſs of ſtates, 110. Policy examined with reſpect to religion, 248. Political maxims of kings with regard to their miniſters, v. 9, 10. The queen regent's council adopt maxims quite contrary to thoſe of Henry the Great, 325--340. Remarks upon the political conduct of the kings of France, vi. 61. See alſo *Government, Kings, Princes, Miniſters, War,* &c.
Political Deſign, or the great deſign of Henry IV. This prince correſponds with queen Elizabeth upon that ſubject, iii. 89. Sully goes to Dover to confer with her, 90. The five principal points of this deſign, 95. Sully diſcloſes it to the king of England: a converſation between them on this ſubject, 289, *et ſeqq.* See *James I. Sully.* Sully imparts it to cardinal Bufalo, iv. 133. Plots at court to hinder the execution of it, v. 18. Henry and Sully endeavour to forward it, 167. The ſucceſſion of Cleves made the pretence, 237, &c. See *Cleves.* Means of executing it, 242. The deſign endeavoured to be blaſted: converſation between Henry and Sully upon this ſubject, 145--251. The princes and electors who unite with Henry upon the great deſign, 257. Explanation of this political ſcheme, vi. 56. Henry IV's general view in it, 66. The probability of its execution proved, 67, 68. In what manner it was formed by Henry and Sully, 70. and concerted with queen Elizabeth, 72. Its purport with reſpect to religions, 76. Means by which the infidels were to be drawn out of Europe, 79. Its

purport merely political, to humble the houſe of Auſtria, 81. To eſtabliſh fifteen equal powers, 84. Meaſures taken with the princes of Europe, 91. and ſecret precautions, 93. Detail of the forces, and the neceſſary expences, 97. Diſpoſitions and march of the armies, 101. Manifeſtoes, 102. Regulations for the troops, 103, 104. The reſult which might be expected from the great deſign, 104.

Poland. Henry III. is elected king of Poland, i. 41. and returns to France after the death of Charles IX. 45. Sigiſmund king of Poland is driven out of Sweden by his uncle, iii. 12. Ancel reſident there from Henry IV. v. 266. Part of the great deſign relating to this kingdom: forces and money to be contributed by that kingdom towards its execution, vi. 97. See *Political Deſign.*

Poltrot. (John) de Méré. Aſſaſſinates the duke of Guiſe, i. 12.

Pommegue. (Iſle and caſtle of) Uſurped by the grand duke of Tuſcany, and afterwards reſtored to France, iii. 101.

Pompadour. (Lewis viſcount of) One of the heads of the League in Limoſin, ii. 182.

Pont. Henry IV. and the prince of Condé have a conference there, but quarrel, i. 61. The great boldneſs of the proteſtants in that city, v. 13, 14.

Pontaudemer. Taken from the league by the party of Henry IV. i. 187. Surrendered to the prince of Parma, 249. and retaken by Henry IV. 250.

Pontcarré. (N. de) Serves Henry IV. at Paris againſt the ſeditious party, ii. 66. Summoned to the council held upon the reſtoration of the jeſuits, iv. 5. v. 45. Appointed one of the council of regency by Henry IV. 266. and admitted into the public council of the queen regent, 326.

Pont-Courlay. A proteſtant gentleman. His plots againſt Sully in Poitou, iv. 68. Henry IV. employs him to reconcile Sully and father Cotton, on occaſion of the college of Poitiers, 160. He gives Sully ſome information concerning the ſeditious faction, v. 102.

Pont l'Eveſque. Taken from the League by the Royaliſts, i. 187.

Pont-neuf. Finiſhed by Henry IV. iv. 207.

Pontoiſe. Taken by the two kings, i. 170. Retaken by the League, 188. Which ſettles a council there, 120. A conference held in this city, 251. Sum paid by Henry at its ſurrender, ii. 311.

Popes. Leo X. Pius IV. Pius V. Gregory XIII. Sixtus V. Gregory XIV. Clement VIII. Leo XI. Paul V. Urban VIII. See each of theſe names. Plots of the legates and the partizans of the pope with the ſtates of Paris, i. 309. See *League.* Sully gives the pope the title of holineſs, and is blamed for it by the king of England, iii. 252. True policy of the popes with regard to the king of Spain and the houſe of Auſtria, 294. How the great deſign of Henry IV. was advantageous to them, 297, 298. The doctrine that the pope is the antichriſt propoſed by the proteſtants at the ſynod of Gap; and ſuppreſſed by Sully, 337. Policy of the pope united with Spain and the jeſuits, iv. 13. The pope excluded from any right to the bridge of Avignon, 139--141. True policy of the court of Rome, with regard to the Venetians, 342. The pope's nuncio admitted to the ſecret council of Mary de Medicis, who embraces

embraces the ultramontane policy, v. 325--341. Part of the great design relating to the pope: he is to be declared king, and to have the kingdom of Naples, vi. 78--85. Forces and money to be contributed by him to the great design, 97. See *Political Design.*

Porte. (The) See *Constantinople, Turky.*

Porte. (La) Raises obstacles to the marriage of mademoiselle de Mercœur with the duke of Vendome, v. 101.

Portes. (Des) See *Tiron.*

Portocarrero. (Hernand Teillo) Surprises Amiens, and is slain there: a saying of his upon the great captains of his time, ii. 222, 223.

Porto-Hercole. The Spaniards seize it unjustly, iv. 133.

Portugal. Henry IV. sends La Tremouille there to examine into the dispute concerning the true or false Don Sebastian, ii. 283. Catherine de Medicis has a claim upon this kingdom, ib.

--------- (Kings of). Don Sebastian, Philip II. Philip III. See these names.

Posts. Regulations concerning them: post-horses established, v. 173.

Poterie. (La) A gentleman attached to Sully, and present with him at the skirmish at Chartres, i. 215.

Potier. See *Gevres,* and *Blancmenil.*

Pougues. (Waters of) Taken with success by Henry IV. iii. 209. iv. 61.

Pousou. Mayor of Saint John d'Angely, iv. 198.

Prada. Secretary of state to the king of Spain. L'Hôte carries on a correspondence with him, iv. 26--36.

Praslin. (Charles de Choiseuil, marquis de) Captain of the guards, iii. 136. He arrests the count of Auvergne, 142. Sully's friendship for him calumniated, iv. 185. Gratuity granted him by Henry IV. 209. His letters to Sully upon the fondness of this prince for hunting, v. 4. A conversation between them upon the prince of Condé's flight, 204. Henry sends him to Flanders, to demand the princess of Condé, 207. The queen regent deputes him to Sully, 319.

Pré. (Du) Du Rollet makes use of him to traverse Sully's treaty with Villars, ii. 33. Who orders him to be hanged, 37.

Preaux. (Hector de) A protestant officer, governor of Châtelleraut: cabals during the siege of Amiens, ii. 234. One of the agents of France to the states-general, v. 27. Deputed by Jeannin to Henry IV. 191. Solicits the archduke in favour of the prince of Epinoy, 222--265. Foretels the persecution of the protestants under the new reign, vi. 12.

Preachers. Their number augmented at the peace of 1570, i. 3. Diminished at the peace of 1577, 61. See also *Nantz* (Edict of).

Presslaigny. A protestant gentleman present at the battle of Saveuse, i. 168.

Primerose. A protestant preacher at Bourdeaux, v. 14.

Princes. The duty of princes in the administration of their government, iv. 99, 100. See *Government, Policy,* &c.

Privas. (Synod of) The dispute concerning Saint John d'Angely terminated there, vi. 112. See *Rohan.*

Profession of faith made by Henry IV. The objections to this writing removed by Sully: it is sent to Rome, i. 330, *et seq.*

Professions and trades. Regulations concerning them projected in the cabinet of state, v. 169. See *Cabinet of State.* Artists, merchants, shepherds, and labourers, how useful to the kingdom, 171.

Promise of marriage between the princess Catherine and the count of Soissons: another given by Henry IV. to madame de Verneuil. See their names, *Sully, Entragues.*

Prognosticks of the death of Henry IV. and this prince's presages of it, v. 269, 270. See *Henry IV.*

Protection of Sedan and Raucourt. A treaty called so, made by Henry IV. and afterwards annulled. See *Bouillon, Sedan,* &c.

Protestants. The state of their affairs at the peace of 1570. Their successes in the war, i. 3. They suffer themselves to be deceived by Catherine de Medicis, notwithstanding many causes for distrust: artifices made use of to deceive them, 16. Their leaders greatly caressed at court, 24. Many of them quit Paris, 30. The massacre of St. Bartholomew, and the extremities to which they are reduced, 32, 33. They re-establish their affairs, 40. Take several towns, and become powerful by being joined by Monsieur and prince Casimir, 48. They conclude an advantageous treaty of peace, 49. They again take up arms, 50. and lose some of their advantages at the peace of Monsieur, 61. They renew the war, 66. They undertake several enterprizes with different success: the advantages which they gain by the treaty of 1580, 78. Assembly held at Montauban, and conferences at St. Paul de La-Miatte, in which their leaders lay the foundation of a protestant republic in France: Sully opposes these schemes, 102. Henry III. sends three armies against them, 115. Councils held upon the arrival of the foreign forces in France, in which they take bad resolutions, 121--123. A persecution is raised against them, 136. The defeat of Auneau throws the party into consternation, 148, 149. The murder of the Guises blasts the great designs of the League against them, 156. The councils of their leaders of dangerous consequence to Henry IV. 159. Their quarrels with the catholics in his army occasion the raising of the siege of Rouen, 245, 246. They refuse to pursue the prince of Parma, after his passage over the Seine: their designs, 257. They lose the battle of Craon, 263. And defeat the troops of the League before Villemur, 270. Sully shews them the necessity of treating with the catholics, 295, 296. They reject the conditions offered by the League to Henry IV. 306. This prince obliges them to consent to the conferences with the catholics, 313, 314. Their preachers betray their religion by flattery, 326, 327. Their leaders discover more obstinacy with regard to the article of Henry's abjuration, ib. They consent to it at length, ib. This prince's wise conduct towards them: they oppose the truce, ii. 3. and take measures contrary to the royal authority, 89. Their insolent jests at the ceremony of the king's absolution, 144. Military operations between them and the party of the League, in the provinces, 181, 182. Their frequent mutinies and schemes formed by them during the siege of Amiens: they hold assemblies on this subject,

ſubject, 234, *et ſeq.* Obſervations upon the edict of Nantz, ib. Henry employs himſelf in the compoſition of this treaty, 248. The diſobedience and plots of the proteſtants, 258. The advantages they have over the catholics by the edict of Nantz, 264. They inſert an article in it by ſtratagem, 346, *et ſeq.* but are obliged to ſuffer it to be ſuppreſſed, 351. Their leaders endeavour to prevail upon the king of England to declare himſelf protector of the proteſtant party in France, and the elector palatine his lieutenant, iii. 243. A proteſtant faction in Europe oppoſed to the catholic faction: examination of theſe two factions: their ſtrength, &c. 291, *et ſeqq.* See *Political Deſign.* Quarrels between the Engliſh proteſtants and the puritans, 320. The French proteſtants cabal at the ſynod of Gap, 336. Their rage againſt Villeroi on occaſion of the treachery of L'Hôte, iv. 33. A farther account of the plots of their leaders: their oppoſition to Sully in Poitou, 63. This miniſter is accuſed of carrying on ſecret correſpondences with them, 186. General aſſembly of proteſtants at Châtelleraut: the deſigns and conduct of the two parties in this aſſembly, 229, *et ſeqq.* See *Châtelleraut.* Queen Margaret gives ſome information againſt the proteſtants, 241. The part they take in the affair of Orange and Blaccons, 270. They endeavour to render the enterprize againſt Sedan ineffectual, 317. Precautions taken with them by Henry on this occaſion, 319. and by Sully in his letter to Parabere, 325, *et ſeq.* Henry obſerves all their meaſures, and will not permit them to hold a national ſynod, 352. He is offended with them for their conduct in the ſynod of Rochelle; but pacified by Sully, v. 10. They affect great contempt for this miniſter: other errors in their conduct, 13, 14. Murmurs and cabals at court upon Henry's conduct towards them, 18. See *Spain, Jeſuits, Courtiers.* Methods made uſe of by them to break off the propoſed marriage between the marquis of Roſny and mademoiſelle de Mércœur, and to keep Sully in their religion, 71. Farther account of their plots; and Sully's prudent advice to Henry upon this occaſion, 101, &c. General aſſembly of Gergeau. See *Gergeau.* The Moors offer to embrace the proteſtant religion, and to come over to France, 136. Falſe informations againſt the proteſtants, 212. Henry is made to ſuſpect them, in order to turn him from his great deſign, 246. Mary de Medicis declares herſelf againſt the proteſtant party, 325. and ſacrifices them to her new connections with Spain, 341. Bouillon adviſes the prince of Condé to declare himſelf the head of the French proteſtants, 356. They are threatened with a perſecution under the new reign, vi. 26. Sully defends them in full council againſt the calumnies of Villeroi, 27. Part of the great deſign relating to the proteſtant religion, 76. The proteſtants in Germany join the confederacy, 92. The proteſtants ſupport Sully openly, in the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, againſt the court, 109. War declared againſt them under the adminiſtration of cardinal Richelieu, 117.

Provence. The king of Spain endeavours to put the duke of Savoy into poſſeſſion of this province, i. 268. The rebels make an attempt to ſeize the ſtrong towns in it, iv. 228.

Provinces of France. Debts due to them diſcharged by Sully, v. 39.

Provinces (United). See *Flanders*.
Prouliere. (Philip Goureau de La) Deputed by Catherine de Medicis to the queen of Navarre, i. 15.
Prussia. See *Brandenburg*.
Puget. Treasurer of the exchequer, and an enemy to Sully, iv. 180. v. 190. Brings Sully a comptant from the queen, which he refuses to sign, vi. 5.
Puiseaux. Sully is sent thither by Henry IV. iii. 82.
Puritans. Quarrels between them and the English protestants, iii. 320. Conferences at London between them and the church of England, iv. 125.

Q.

QUASY. A protestant gentleman: what happened to him at Marmande, i. 71.
Quelus, or *Caylus*. See *Caylus*.
Quentin. (Saint) The battle of St. Quentin lost by the constable of Montmorency: an account of what followed afterwards, i. 12. Henry goes to St. Quentin to see mademoiselle D'Estrées, 216. Strange propofals made there by the princes of the blood and the French lords to Henry, ii. 148.
Questions. Intended to be asked by father Cotton of a dæmon, iv. 348, 349.
Quimper. Taken by marshal D'Aumont, ii. 94.

R.

RABODANGE. A protestant gentleman: escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30. A letter wrote to him by Charles IX. ib.
Rafis. (John de Leyré, called) Discovers the treason of L'Hôte, iv. 26, 27, Gives information of it to Barrault, and escapes out of Spain, 29. Comes to Henry IV. and gives him proofs of it: rewards which he obtains for this discovery, 36.
Ragny. (Madame de) A confidant of Henry IV's in his amours, v. 76.
Raimond. (Father) A jesuit, v. 149.
Raleigh. Sully sees him at Dover, iii. 90. One of the malecontents at London, 233. Information given by him to Sully, 260. He conspires against the king of England, 320.
Rambouillet. (Nicholas D'Angennes, marquis of) i. 106. Has great share in cementing the union of the two kings, 160. and in the treaty of Plessis-les-Tours, 163.
Rambures, (N. de) Murders the young D'Epinoy: Henry IV. and Sully suffer this affair to sleep, v. 6.
Ranchin. Physician to the constable de Montmorency: contributes to the seizing of the Luquisses, iv. 238.
Randan. (John-Lewis de La-Rochefoucault, count of) Loses the battle of Moncontour against the protestants, i. 202.

Raſtignac. (N. de) One of the heads of the League in Languedoc, ii. 182.

Ratiſbon. (Diet of) Where a conference is held between the catholics and proteſtants upon the means of reconciling the two religions, iii. 119.

Ravaillac. (Francis) The proceedings at his trial ſuppreſt, v. 277. Other faults attributed to his judges, and remarks upon this conduct, ib. 278. A particular account of the aſſaſſination of Henry IV. 283, *et ſeqq.* Examination of the different opinions concerning the cauſes of the authors of this parricide, ib. Ravaillac's puniſhment: particulars on this ſubject, 305. His trial, vi. 136.

Raucourt. See *Bouillon, Sedan.*

Ravenſperg. A diſpute concerning the ſucceſſion to it. See *Cleves.*

Raveſtein. A diſpute concerning the ſucceſſion to it. See *Cleves.*

Reaſon. (Council of) Eſtabliſhed in the aſſembly des notables at Rouen, ii. 210. The forming of this council, 216. which afterwards requeſts Henry IV. to ſuppreſs it, 217.

Rebours. Commiſſioner for the regiſtring the rents, iv. 105.

Rebuy. Henry IV. orders the fortifications of that place to be demoliſhed, v. 34.

Receivers. General and particular: Sully gives them rules, and puniſhes thoſe who act contrary to them, v. 42. The regulations to which he ſubjects them, 44. Receivers to be created upon occaſion, 176.

Recolets. Inſtituted, iii. 337.

Recrainville. (Lewis d'Alonville de) Or L'Arclainville, commands in Chartres for the League, i. 167.

Reformed. See *Proteſtants.*

Refuge. (N. Du-) Agent in Switzerland. Sully charges him with behaving ill there, v. 228.

Regalia. (Rights of) Unalienable: in what it conſiſts, iv. 140.

Regency. Of the kingdom confirmed to Mary de Medicis, v. 321, *et ſeq.* The count of Soiſſons endeavours to get it annulled, 329. As alſo the prince of Condé, 348.

Regiments. Named after the provinces raiſed by Sully, ii. 225.

Regulations. In the finances, police, ſoldiery, marine, commerce, &c. See theſe names, *Arrets, Decrees.*

Regnardiere. (La) A court buffoon, baniſhed, ii. 213. A bon-mot of his concerning Beringhen, 174.

Regnouard. Inſpector of accounts employed in regiſtring the rents, iv. 105. Sully's confidence in him, and the advice he gives him before he retires from court, vi. 35--37.

Religion. Sully's erroneous maxims with regard to religion, not dangerous, and refuted, i. 136. ii. 259-347. iii. 120. iv. 24, 25. Memorial drawn up by Sully upon the toleration of religions, 37. This miniſter's reflections upon policy reſpecting religion, 249, 250--344. Part of the great deſign of Henry IV. relating to religion: diviſion of the ſeveral religions, and the means of keeping them in tranquility, vi. 76, 77. See *Political Deſign.* See alſo *Sully, Pope, Catholics,* &c.

Renaud. (Rachel) Diſcovers the conſpiracy of La-Fleche, v. 213.

Reniers. Eſcapes the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew by the aſſiſtance of Vezins

Vezins his enemy, i. 40. Succours Montauban, and deserts a body of troops belonging to the League, ib. 41. Leaves to Themines the care of defending Villemur, 271.

Rennes. Sully resides there while he settles the affairs of this province, ii. 255. Henry IV. passes some time there: his firmness with respect to the sovereign courts, 257--276.

Renouilliere. (La) Bedchamber woman to the queen, iv. 303.

Rents. Sully undertakes to prove them, iv. 104, *et seq.* Regulations on this head, 199, *et seq.*

Reole. (La-) Taken by the protestants, i. 50. Catherine de Medicis confers there with the king of Navarre, 62. Ussac delivers up this place to the League, 63.

Republic. (A protestant) Scheme of establishing it in France formed by admiral Coligny. See *Coligny.* The heads of the party endeavour to put it in execution, iv. 262. Bouillon seeks to engage the prince of Condé in the design, v. 356. See *Protestants.*

--------- (Belgick, Helvetick, Italian, and Venetian). Projected in the great design. See these names, *Political Design.*

Requests. (Chambers of) Suppress in the parliament of Toulouse: Henry IV. undertakes to suppress them all, iii. 34.

Resnel. (Antony de Clermont, marquis de) One of the heads of the protestant party, i. 24. Murdered in the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 32.

------ (Company of). Defeated by Henry IV. i. 135.

Retz. (Albert de Gondy, duke of) One of the counsellors of Catherine de Medicis, i. 28. Henry IV. takes from him the cognizance of the treaty with the duke of Guise, ii. 102. and makes him one of the members of the new council of finances, 114. He is employed in the affair of the isles with the grand duke, iii. 102.

----- (Charles de Gondy de). See *Belleisle.*

----- (Peter de Gondy de). See *Gondy* (Cardinal de).

Revenues. (Royal) Estimation made of them in the assembly des notables, and divided between the king and the state, ii. 211. See *Notables, Reason.* (Council of) Memorial upon the means of augmenting them, v. 172. See *Finances, Farms, Taille, Imposts,* &c.

Revol. (Lewis) Secretary of state: Henry IV. consults him upon his conversion, i. 286.

Rheims. Revolts from the duke of Guise, and surrenders to Henry IV. ii. 104. The reception given by this prince to the deputies from Rheims, 105. This city refuses to admit the jesuits, iv. 152. Lewis XIII. is crowned there, vi. 11.

Rhimberg. Besieged and taken by the prince of Orange, iii. 83. Retaken by the Spaniards, iv. 371, *et seq.*

Rhone. The borders of this river as far as Lyons ceded to the king by the treaty of Lyons, iii. 64. Henry IV. secures to himself this possession, iv. 141. See *Avignon.*

Richardot. (John de) President, employed in the affair of a treaty of commerce between France and Spain, iv. 116. In the negotiations for a peace between Spain and the United Provinces, v. 130. His instructions are stolen from him, 133.

Richelieu. (Francis du Pleſſis de) Endeavours to injure Sully during his journey to Poitou, iv. 68. Henry employs him to reconcile this miniſter and father Cotton, 160.

--------- (Cardinal de). Follows the political ſyſtem formed by Sully for humbling the houſe of Auſtria, iv. 25. He occaſions the loſs of a law-ſuit to Sully, which haſtens his death, vi. 121.

Richeome. (Father) A jeſuit, dedicates a book to Sully, iv. 161.

Rieux. (Rene de) De Sourdiac, one of the heads of the League, i. 291.

------ Governor of Noyon, defends himſelf there with great bravery, i. 218.

------ (N. de) Deputed by the prince of Condé to Sully, v. 348.

Rigault. Defends Corbeil bravely againſt the prince of Parma, i. 210.

Rignac. (Peter de) Lieutenant for the duke of Bouillon: his plots in the proteſtant party during the ſiege of Amiens, ii. 234. Sent by Bouillon to Henry IV. iii. 160. Promiſes to defend his towns againſt the prince, but abandons them, iv. 279.

Riſſey. (N. de Crequy de) Attends Henry IV. in the campaign of Franche-Comte, ii. 141.

Rivet. A factious preacher among the proteſtants, v. 11.

Roannais. (Duke of) Cabals with the malecontents, v. 101.

Roche. (Count de La-) Takes Agen. See *Agen, Matignon.*

Rochebeaucourt. (La-) Obtains the poſt of king's lieutenant in St. John d'Angely, iv. 353. and is driven from thence by the duke of Rohan, vi. 111. See *Ageaux* (Des).

Roche-Chalais. Henry IV. takes poſſeſſion of this poſt. See *Coutras.*

Rocheforet. (La-) Sully buys a horſe of him at the battle of Ivry, i. 195.

Rochefoucault. (Francis duke de La-) Suſpected of murdering the duke of Guiſe, i. 12--24. Murdered in the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, 32.

---------- (Francis duke de La-) Son of the former duke, colonel-general, preſent at the ſiege of Fontenay, i. 123. At the battle of Coutras one of the Royaliſts commanders in Limoſin, ii. 182. He is ſlain at the battle of St. Yrier, ib.

---------- (The Abbe de La-) Made a cardinal, v. 227.

Roche-Guyon. (N. de Silly, count de La-) i. 106.

Rochelle. A ſtrong town given to the proteſtants, i. 3. Catherine de Medicis endeavours to get poſſeſſion of it by ſtratagem, 20. The duke of Anjou is forced to raiſe the ſiege of it, 41. A treaty is made with Rochelle, ib. Honours paid by the Rochellers to Henry IV. 50. Pernicious deſigns of the proteſtants aſſembled there againſt Henry IV. 159. Henry praiſes Rochelle, iii. 339. Honours paid by it to the king in the perſon of Sully, iv. 70. Henry's kind reception of the deputies from Rochelle, 289. Quarrel between Sully and d'Epernon concerning that government, ibid. 290. Sully prevents their holding an aſſembly there, 353. Terminates the differences between the proteſtants and catholics in Rochelle, 354. and obliges the Rochellers to give the king ſatisfaction with regard to the ſynod held in this town, v. 12. Sully

supports the Rochellers againſt the jeſuits in the affair of father Seguiran, 16. He loſes ſeveral great ſums which he had lent them, vi. 50.

Rochemorte. (Lewis Bouchereau de) Surpriſes Angers, and takes it for Henry IV. but loſes it again, and is ſlain there, i. 107.

Rochepot. (Antony de Silly de La) Adviſes Sully to attend Monſieur to Flanders, i. 77. He is ſent ambaſſador to Spain: inſulted at Madrid, iii. 85.

Rocheſter. The hatred of its citizens to the French, iii. 224.

Rochette. Agent for the duke of Savoy in the affair of the marquiſate of Saluces, iii. 2.

-------- (La) Agent for the duke of Guiſe in the treaty with Henry, ii. 101.

Roche-Vandais. (La) An antient fortreſs in Auvergne, i. 6.

Rodelle. Maſter of the horſe to queen Margaret: he gives information of the plots carried on by the malecontents to Henry and to Sully, iv. 241.

Rodolphus. (Emperor) His wars with Hungary and the Turks, iii. 12--70--120. The king of Spain deprives him of Final. 179. An account of the war againſt the Hungarians and Turks, 181, 182. He ſeizes upon Donavert unjuſtly, v. 139. Examination of his claim upon the principalities of Cleves and Juliers, &c. 231, *et ſeqq.* He gives the inveſtiture of them to the arch-duke Leopold; and endeavours to gain over Henry to his intereſt, 236. He occaſions an inſurrection of the German proteſtants by his cruelties to them, 257. Suffers Juliers to be taken by the confederates, 362. and ſhares the ſucceſſion of Cleves between the elector of Brandenbourg and the palatine of Neubourg, ib. See *Cleves.* The only part left for him to take by the great deſign of Henry IV. vi. 103. See *Political Deſign.* See alſo *Empire, Germany, Auſtria* (Houſe of).

Rohan. (Houſe of) Alliances of this houſe: its claim to the ſucceſſion of the houſe of Albret, for the appanages of Navarre, Foix, and Armagnac, ii. 181. The pretended heir of this houſe. See *Tancrede.*

------- (Benjamin de). See *Soubiſe.*

------- (Henry II. duke of). The princeſs Catherine propoſes a marriage between him and mademoiſelle de Sully, ii. 181. Henry IV. gives his conſent to this match, iii. 335. The duke of Rohan's cabals in the proteſtant party, and with the king of England, iv. 63. His reception of Sully in Poitou, 72. His claim to the ſucceſſion to the houſe of Albret. See *Rohan* (houſe of). He marries mademoiſelle de Sully: grants made him by Henry upon his marriage, 195. An account of the ſon pretended to be born by this marriage. See *Tancrede, Rohan, Margaret de Bethune* (ducheſs of). Henry IV. refuſes the duke of Rohan the privilege of nominating the king's lieutenant of Saint John d'Angely, 195. See *Ageaux* (Des). Sully, in the king's name, forbids the aſſembly of Châtelleraut to admit his deputies, 251. He obtains his pardon of Henry IV. 353, *et ſeq.* and does the king ſome ſervices in detecting the plots of the courtiers, v. 23--54--86. He commands the Swiſs troops in Cleves, 267. Oppoſes Sully's deſign of reſigning

ing his employments, 342. Is made marshal de camp general of the army sent to the siege of Juliers, 361. Mary de Medicis makes use of his interest with Sully to prevail upon him to leave Montrond, vi. 15. He purchases the government of Poitou from Sully, 49. and openly supports his cause in the assembly of Chatelleraut, 110. His dispute with the queen regent about the king's lieutenancy of Saint John d'Angely, 111, 112.

Rohan. (Lewis de) See *Montbason.*

------ (Rene, viscount of). Defends Lusignan, i. 44.

------ (Catherine de). Marries the duke of Deux Ponts, iii. 187.

------ (Catherine de Parthenay, duchess of). Gives bad advice to the princess Catherine concerning Henry IV. and Sully, ii. 172. She alters her opinion, and favours this minister, 181. Her plots with the protestant party, 258.

------ (Margaret de Bethune, duchess of) A marriage between her and the count of Laval is proposed, and afterwards with the duke of Rohan, ii. 181. Henry IV. approves of this marriage, iii. 335. and causes it to be celebrated: gratuities given by him to the new married couple, 195. An anecdote concerning the supposititious son of this marriage. See *Tancrede.* Henry IV. places great confidence in the duchess of Rohan, vi. 118--129. Circumstances relating to her life, 130.

Roissy. (John James de Mesmes de) Commands the king's troops in Auvergne, iv. 279.

Rollet. (Du) An officer in the royalist party: present at the battle of Ivry, i. 197. Contributes to the taking of Louviers, 222. Traverses Sully's treaty with Villars, ii. 33.

Romain. (Saint) A miracle related of this pious archbishop: origin of the privileges of the canons of Rouen, v. 55, 56. See *Gargouille.*

Rome, and *Roman empire.* The establishment of manufactures, tending to promote luxury, wisely prohibited there, iv. 144. Its revolutions: causes of its fall, vi. 56.

Roncas. Agent for the duke of Savoy in the affair of Saluces: his artifices and breach of faith, iii. 149.

Ronsoy. (Company of) Defeated by Henry IV. i. 135.

Roquelaure. (Antony de) Marshal of France: one of the heads of the protestant party, i. 52. His character: a humorous dialogue between Henry IV. and him; another between him and the archbishop of Rouen, on the subject of the princess Catherine's marriage, ii. 343, 344. He assists in forcing Henry from the duchess of Beaufort, when they were obliged to part, 358. He is one of the favourites of Henry IV. iii. 81. and a friend of Sully's, 339. iv. 1. Henry sends him to compliment queen Margaret in his name, 293--303. He is summoned to the council on the affair of Sedan, 324. Quarrels between the family of Roquelaure and Noailles appeased by Sully, 359.

Rosan. (N. de Durefort de) Fights a duel with Turenne, i. 65. See *Duras, Bouillon.*

Rosiers. (Les) The duke of Mercœur's baggage defeated in this place, i. 136.

Rosny. (Christian de Savigny, baron of) One of the general officers in the

the service of the League: brings troops to the assistance of Noyon, i. 218. and to Rouen when besieged, 235. One of the four marshals of France made by the League, 305. Takes Le Catelet and La Chapelle, ii. 130. Defeats the French at Dourlens, 132.

Rosny. Castle and estate of Rosny belonging to Sully, i. 4. Where he receives the duke of Joyeuse, 99. A plague at Rosny: Sully forces his brother to open the gates to him, 169. Narrowly misses taking the duke d'Aumale prisoner there, 187. Returns thither in triumph after the battle of Ivry, 200, 201. During his stay there, he is informed of the death of the duchess of Beaufort, ii. 361. Receives and entertains the king there: an accident disturbs the entertainment, iii. 334. In what manner this estate was purchased, vi. 48. Sully resides there some time after the death of Henry IV. 124. His buildings there, 132.

------ (Francis de Bethune, baron of) Father of the duke of Sully: he retires thither at the peace of 1570, i. 4. His alliances, ib. State of his family, and domestic affairs, 8--22. He attends the queen of Navarre, ib. His advice not listened to, 23. He makes his escape at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 30. His letter to his son on that occasion, 35.

------ (Maximilian de Bethune, baron, afterwards marquis of) Duke of Sully. See *Sully*.

------ (Maximilian II. de Bethune, marquis of) Eldest son of the duke of Sully: he begins to have a share in the affairs of state, iv. 354. Henry IV. sends Du Laurens to him during his indisposition, v. 6. Several great matches proposed for him, 65. The king marries him to mademoiselle de Crequy: uneasiness caused by this alliance to the father and the son, 66, 67. Particulars relating to this marriage, and to the private conduct of Rosny: the king proposes to give him mademoiselle de Vendome in marriage, 67--69. He refuses to change his religion, 73. Henry IV. reconciles the duke of Vendome and him, 256. He gives him the reversion of the post of grand master of the ordnance: and he commands the artillery in the expedition of Cleves, 267. He prevents his father from resigning his employments, 342. Mary de Medicis makes use of his interest to prevail upon Sully to leave Montrond, vi. 15. The fortune he received with his wife, 47. Sully lends him money, and pays his debts, 50. The uneasiness which his dissolute conduct gives to Sully, 118.

------ (Baron of) See *Bethune* (Solomon de).

------ (N. de) Sully defends Passy against him, i. 190.

Rosset. A physician, sent for to Monceaux, during the indisposition of Henry IV. ii. 294.

Rotonneau. (Isle and castle of) Surprised by the grand duke of Tuscany, and restored to Henry IV. iii. 101. See *Isles*.

Roubais, or *Rebeck*. (Robert de Melun, marquis of) Takes Bouillon prisoner, i. 82. Cause of his hatred of Sully, 83.

Roubais. (Mary de Melun, lady de) iii. 13. Refuses to give her consent to a marriage between the marquis of Cœuvres and mademoiselle de Melun, iv. 198.

Rouen. The protestants take possession of it, i. 21. and d'Allegre retakes it for the League, 190. Henry IV. prepares to invest it, 223.

He

He begins the siege, and makes an unsuccessful attack, 224--228. The trenches forced at different times by that prince and admiral Villars, 229. The vigorous defence made by this governor, 233--244. Henry is obliged to raise the siege, 246. Villars treats with Sully for the surrender of Rouen, ii. 31. And sends away the Spaniards and Leaguers, 50. Ceremony of its surrender, 51. Sully makes another journey to this city, 165. The states, or the assembly des notables, held there. See *Notables*. Sum paid by Henry for the surrender of Rouen, 311. That prince goes to Rouen, and is taken ill there: motives for this journey, iii. 335. Sully causes a bridge to be built there, v. 112. Arrets issued by the parliament of Rouen: privileges of the canons of the cathedral, 55, 56. See *Romain*, (Saint) *Gargouille, Pehu, Fierte.*

Rovidius. (Alexander) A Milanese senator: employed in the affair of settling a commerce between France and Spain, iv. 116--118.

Rousse. (La) Woman to the duchess of Beaufort. Sully causes her to be shut up in the Bastile, ii. 360.

Roussiere. (La) Governor of Fontenay for the League, i. 124.

Roussillon. A scheme of Henry's for depriving Spain of this province, vi. 95. See *Political Design.*

Roussy. (Count of) Solicits a pardon for marshal Biron. See *Biron.* Slain in the battle of Arques. See *Arques.*

Rouxel. See *Medavy.*

Rubenpré. (Andrew de Bourbon de) Deputed to Henry IV. by the states of Blois, i. 59.

Racelay. The queen pawns her jewels to her, v. 58.

Rue. (La-) A gentleman in Sully's service, wounded with him at the encounter of Chartres, i. 215.

Rueres. Godfather to the marquis de Rosny, i. 137.

Rumigny. His speech to marshal Biron upon the scaffold, iii. 144.

Rumilly. (Treaty of) Between the duke of Savoy and the republic of Geneva, iii. 181.

Rusé (Martin) de Beaulieu. Secretary of state, i. 205. Henry IV. takes from him the cognizance of the treaty with the duke of Guise, ii. 102. He favours the jesuits in the quarrel between father Seguiran and the Rochellers, v. 15.

Russia. See *Muscovy.*

Russy. (Elias de La-Place de) Agent for Bouillon with Henry IV. iv. 252. This prince sends him to Flanders, v. 27. where he concludes the treaty of mediation with Jeannin, &c. 217.

S.

Sagonne. (John Babou de) Slain at the battle of Arques, i. 182.

Salcede. His resistance to the Guises, the cause of his death, i. 152.

Salettes. (N. de) President of the parliament of Paris; one of the heads of the protestant party, i. 294. See *Morlas.*

Salignac. (John de Gontault de) His duel with Rosan, i. 65. One of the heads of the protestant party, ii. 255. Solicits a pardon for Biron, iii. 147. Ambassador to the Ottoman Porte, iv. 143. Demands,

mands, in the name of the Grand Seignior, that a reſident at Marſeilles may be permitted, v. 230.
Salic law. An erroneous opinion of Sully's concerning this law, iv. 130.
Sallian. (Father) A jeſuit, v. 149.
Salt-pits. Henry IV. is ſlandered with having intended to ſeize them, iii. 123. iv. 69. Sully undeceives the people in this reſpect, 72--203.
Salt. The price of it increaſed to fifteen ſols three buſhels, ii. 224. The courtiers farm this ſubſidy under borrowed names, iv. 220. Edict upon ſalt in favour of the duke of Maïenne, 210. Regulations upon this part of the revenue, 359, 360. See *Gabelle.*
Saluces. (Marquiſate of) A diſpute concerning it: this article not decided in the treaty of Vervins, ii. 278. Artifices of the duke of Savoy to elude the reſtitution of it, iii. 1. Commiſſioners appointed to ſettle this affair, 19. Sully's reaſons for not giving up this fief, 20, 21. The duke of Savoy has recourſe to many ſubterfuges during the ſettling of this affair, 23. Conditions upon which Saluces is ceded to that prince, 67. See *Treaty of Lyons, Savoy,* &c.
Samblançay. See *Beaune.*
Sancerre. Siege of this town: the extremity to which it is reduced: it makes an honourable treaty, i. 41.
Sancy. (Nicholas de Harlay de) One of the heads of the proteſtant party, i. 294. Serves Villeroi in his treaty: his character, his ſervices, ii. 111. His raillery and bon-mots upon the ſair Gabriella prevent his being made ſuperintendant of the finances, 114. He does the king ſeveral ſervices in Lorrain and Switzerland, 117. His motives for urging Henry IV. to march to Burgundy, 123. He refuſes to reſtore Calais to Elizabeth, 147. His quarrel with Sully in the king's preſence, 198. He leaves the council of finances, 229. The king of England blames his conduct, iii. 252. His hatred of Sully: his diſſipation: Henry IV. purchaſes his jewels, iv. 182. His juſtification againſt part of Sully's reproaches, ib. Sully buys the lands of Dourdon of him, vi. 48.
Santeny. Made one of the members of the new council of finances, ii. 126. One of Sully's enemies, iv. 182. He lends money to Henry IV. v. 57.
Saone. Henry's brave exploits againſt the Spaniards and the League at the paſs of this river, ii. 142. Utility of its being joined with the Loire, iv. 103.
Saraot. (Viſcount of) His advice to Sully, iii. 246.
Sardinia. A ſcheme for obtaining the ſovereignty of it for the duke of Anjou, i. 76.
Savary. Mentioned in a letter written by father Cotton, v. 149.
Saubion. A gratuity granted him by Henry IV. v. 192.
Saveuſe. (Anne de Broſſe-) Preſent at the battle ſo called, i. 167.
------- (Battle of) or Bonneval. Sully's behaviour in it, i. 168.
------- (Charles de Broſſe-) Loſes the battle of Bonneval, where he is wounded, and dies in deſpair, i. 169.
Sault. (Chriſtian d'Aguirre, counteſs of) Her party in Provence, i. 268. Favours that of the king's there, ii. 110. and aſſiſts in driving

driving out the dukes of Savoy and d'Epernon, 183. She endeavours to procure a marriage between the marquis of Rosny and mademoiselle de Crequy; and to hinder Sully's conversion, v. 72. Engages in Henry's amours, 76. who refuses her a grant which she had solicited, 101.

Sault. (De). The king's attorney at Bourdeaux, v. 56.

Saulx. See *Tavannes.*

Saumur. One of the five cities that continued faithful to Henry III. i. 159. Given to Henry IV. as a cautionary city by the treaty between the two kings, 163. Mornay obtains the government of it, which had been refused to Sully, ib. The protestants there hold a mutinous assembly, iii. 336. Du-Plessis Mornay puts himself to needless expences to fortify Saumur, iv. 250. The judge of that city reprimanded by Sully, v. 55. Another assembly is held there. See *Châtelleraut.*

Savoy. Henry IV. carries the war thither: the taking of towns, and other particulars relating to this war: treaty of peace, iii. 67. Design of Philip II. to seize that state: part of the great design with respect to Savoy. iv. 312. See *Charles-Emanuel.* See also *Lombardy, Political Design,* &c.

------ (Prince and children of) Their claim to the privilege of honorary canon in the cathedral of Lyons denied the duke of Savoy, iii. 18. Philip III. sends for the children of Savoy to Madrid, and gives them the dignities of Spain, 324.

------ (Charles-Emanuel, duke of). He unites with Spain and the League, and has bad success in Provence, i. 268. His plots with the states of Paris ineffectual, 309. He supports the party of the duke of Nemours in Lyons, but cannot hinder it from being driven from thence, ii. 58. Victories gained by Lesdiguieres over the duke of Savoy, 94. by the constable de Montmorency in Dauphine and Lyonnois, 123. Other encounters in which the troops are defeated by Lesdiguieres, 182. He signs the treaty of Vervins at Chamberry, 279. He demands the princess Catherine in marriage, 339. His artifices to avoid making a restitution of the marquisate of Saluces, iii. 1. He resolves to go to Paris for that purpose, 3. A saying of his concerning this journey, ib. He arrives at Paris, 16. Henry's reception of him at Fontainebleau: informations given against him: his observations upon the ill success of his journey, 18. He is disgusted with his reception from the count of Lyons: reciprocal complaints between him and the council of Madrid, ib. He visits Sully at the arsenal, and endeavours to gain him over to his interest, and to corrupt him with gifts, 20. He gains over the courtiers, and the commissioners appointed by the king, by his presents: the magnificent new-year's gifts which he receives from Henry IV. and those which he presents to the whole court, 19. He obtains a delay of three months, contrary to Sully's advice, 23, 24. He returns to Savoy in discontent, 24. Breaks through his engagement, 28. Suspends, by new artifices, Henry's march against him, 32. He is comforted by a prediction that is made him, ib. Towns and forts taken from him, and a particular relation of the whole campaign. 34, *& seqq.* His correspondences with Biron, the courtiers and commissioners, tending to retard the peace, 58--62--65

62--65. Countries and forts given up by him, in exchange for Saluces, and purport of the treaty made with him, 67. See *Treaty of Lyons*. Condition of the treaty between the duke of Savoy and marshal Biron, 106, 107. The manner in which Henry receives his congratulations upon the discovery of this conspiracy, 161. Fails in an attempt upon Geneva, which is followed by a treaty of peace with that republic, 180. The true policy to be observed by the council of Savoy, with Spain and the house of Austria: the great design of Henry IV. useful to the duke of Savoy, 292, 293. See *Political Design*. Charles-Emanuel animates Spain against France, 324. He sends his children to Madrid: dignities bestowed upon them there, ib. He puts an end to his wars with the republic of Geneva, 325. The part he has in the dispute concerning the bridge of Avignon, iv. 140. He continues his plots against France, 220. Design of Henry IV. to make him king of Lombardy; and to marry his daughter Elizabeth to the son of Savoy, 313. Presents made by him to his majesty, v. 36. He congratulates Henry upon the birth of the duke of Anjou, 127. An alliance between the two courts projected, 158. Sully's connections with the duke of Savoy calumniated, 223. He joins in the deputation sent to the king by the princes assembled at Hall, 247. See *Cleves*. He makes a treaty of alliance with France, 257. Bullion is sent ambassador to him, 265. Mary de Medicis breaks all these engagements, and betrays this prince, notwithstanding Sully's representations, 338. The humiliating measures which this procedure obliges him to take with the king of Spain, 339, 340. Part of the great design concerning him: he is to be declared king of Lombardy, 80--88--92. Forces and money to be contributed by him, 97. See *Political Design, Lombardy*, &c. See also *Spain, Philip*, and the other names mentioned in this article.

Savoy-Nemours. See *Nemours*, and *Sorlin* (Saint).

Saussaye. (La) A protestant gentleman: his plots during the siege of Amiens, iii. 234. He serves the king with the protestant party, iv. 74.

Sauves. (Madame de) N. de Beaune de Samblançay: Henry IV. and the duke of Alençon rivals for this lady, i. 80. She introduces Sully to Catherine de Medicis, 92; and informs him of her designs, 131. Informations sent by her to the duke of Guise and the states of Blois, 156.

Sauveur. (Claude de Joyeuse de Saint) Slain at the battle of Coutras, i. 143.

Scaliger. His death, v. 110.

Schomberg. (Gaspard de) Count of Nanteuil: Henry IV. consults him upon his conversion, i. 286. Makes him one of the members of the council of finances, ii. 114--189. which he leaves, 229. His death occasioned by a very extraordinary sickness: eulogium, ib. He is employed in the composition of the edict of Nantz, 264. Inserts an article there, which he is obliged to alter, 348. His death, 354.

---------- (Henry de). Marshal of France: Sully's friendship for him calumniated, iv. 185. He is appointed ambassador to Germany, v. 265. Gives information of Ravaillac's conspiracy to Henry

Henry IV. and to Sully, 276. He is deputed to Sully by the queen regent, 319.

Schomberg. (Theodore) A Swiss colonel: slain at the battle of Ivry: a fine speech of Henry's concerning him, i. 199.

---------- (Count of). Grand marshal of the empire: honours paid him in Paris, iii. 121.

Scotch-Guard. Acknowledge Henry IV. for king, i. 174. The Scots faction in the court of James I. friends to France, iii. 232.

Scotland (Kings, queens, and princes of). See *Stuart, James.*

Seaford. (Viscount of) Escorts Sully from London, iii. 287.

Seals. Given and resumed. See *Hôpital,* (L') *Bellievre, Sillery.*

Sebastian. (Don) Henry IV. interests himself in the debate concerning the true or false Don Sebastian, ii. 283. Some remarkable circumstances relating to the resemblance of the pretended Don Sebastian to the true, iii. 119.

Secretaries of State. How different from ministers of state, ii. 304, 305.

Sedan. (City and principality of) Given by the duchess of Bouillon to her husband: motives for Sully's journey thither, ii. 83, 84. Sully's opinion of this fortress, 86. Henry IV. forms a design to take possession of it: the courtiers oppose it, iii. 313--316. Sully fixes him in his resolution to attack it, 319, 320; and shows him the faults in the fortifications, 324. The late duke of Bouillon held it under the title of protection from Francis II. 326, *& seq.* Preparations made to besiege it: a farther account of this affair, 328; which is terminated by Bouillon's surrender of it to the king, and by the treaty of protection, &c. 332. Motives which induce Henry to take the cognizance of this affair from Sully, 336. Sayings of Henry upon this expedition, 341. Bouillon lays claim to a precedence of the dukes in the quality of prince of Sedan; but is not regarded, 356. Henry gives him back this city, and withdraws his garrison, v. 62. He refuses to allow the duke of Bouillon to assume the quality of sovereign lord of Sedan, 223. Gratuities which Bouillon receives from Mary de Medicis for this principality, vi. 21. See upon this whole article, *Bouillon,* (Duke and duchess of) *Mark,* (La) *Raucourt,* &c.

Seditious Party. (The) Headed by Bouillon, Biron, D'Auvergne, D'Entragues, La-Tremouille, Du-Plessis-Mornay, the marchioness of Verneuil, &c. See these names, iii. 107. Writing of association signed by them, 112. Methods made use of by them to excite a rebellion among the people, 113. They endeavour to seize some towns, 114. Council held at Blois for arresting the heads of the conspiracy, 128. Henry IV. after the death of Biron, pardons all the rest, 148. Their plots with the king of England, 243. Their cabals in France, iv. 40--63. Motives for their hatred of Sully, 180. Their cabals in Spain, 223. Henry receives several informations against them: Sully's opinion of these informations, 227. Others sent by Queen Margaret and Rodelle, 241. Bouillon's artifice to enrage them against Sully, 244, 245. The great wisdom shewn by Henry and Sully in preventing and stifling their plots, v. 74. A farther account of their cabals, 101, 102. The wise counsel which Sully gives the king on this occasion,

occasion, 103. Their correspondence with Spain and the relations of the queen, 155. Other counsels which Sully gives Henry IV. upon this occasion, 162--167. They make the king's passion for the princess of Condé subservient to their designs, 203. See upon this article, *Epernon, Concbini, Conspiracy, Parricide, French Lords, Jesuits, &c.*

Sfondrate. Commands the troops of Gregory XIV. at the siege of Rouen, i. 234.

Seguier. (Antony) Attorney-general: he favours the jesuits in their process against the university, &c. ii. 67.

------- (John). President of the parliament: the good advice which he gives Sully when in discontent, i. 277.

------- (Peter). Chancellor: he supports the princes of Henrichemont in their process with Sully, vi. 121.

------- (Charlotte). Married to the prince of Henrichemont, vi. 120.

Seguiran. (Gaspard) A jesuit: his quarrel with the Rochellers, v. 15.

Segur. (N. de) De Pardaillan: makes his escape at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30.

------- (James de). Baron of Pardaillan: murdered in the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 35.

Seine. The passing this river by the prince of Parma considered as a remarkable action, i. 253. Utility of its being joined to the Loire, iv. 103. Canal of Briare undertaken for this purpose, 112. See *Canals.*

------- (Saint). Henry's exploits in this place. See *Fontaine-Françoise.*

Selim. Catherine de Medicis sends to demand of him the kingdom of Algiers for the duke of Alençon, i. 76.

Selles. Henry IV. raises the siege of that place, i. 314.

------ See *Bethune.*

Sellier. (John) Henry's commissioner at Troyes, iv. 210.

Selvage. (Catherine) One of the bed-chamber women to the queen, iii. 131. iv. 303.

Senamy. Henry's debts to him discharged, v. 39.

Sens. Besieged by Henry IV. but with little success, i. 240.

Sepulchre. (Holy) The Jews solicit the grand signior to destroy it, ii. 327.

Serran. A provincial manufacturer: makes stuffs of the bark of mulberry-trees, iv. 211.

Servian. Deputy from Dauphine for the protestants, iv. 352.

Servin. A young man of a very mixed character, iii. 216, 217.

Seure, or *Bellegarde.* A town in the possession of the League, ii. 142.

Sey. (N. de) A protestant gentleman, escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30.

Sicily, This kingdom designed to be given to the republic of Venice, vi. 95. See *Political Design.*

Sidney. (Lord of Stafford) Sent by queen Elizabeth to Calais with letters for Henry IV. iii. 90. Is appointed to receive Sully in London, 223.

Sigebert. Character of this king, vi. 60.

Sigismond king of Sweden. Dethroned by Charles his uncle, iii. 12.
Sigogne. (Charles de Beauſoncle de) Taken priſoner at Ivry by Sully, i. 195. D'Andelot conteſts with Sully for this priſoner, 198. An amuſing diſcourſe of his upon the affair of the advocates, iii. 167, 168. He is ſent by Henry IV. to the marchioneſs of Verneuil when under confinement, iv. 87. and labours to reconcile Henry and her, 147.
Silk. Henry IV. cauſes it to be cultivated in France, iii. 175. Sully's reaſons for oppoſing it, 341, *& ſeqq.* Silk manufactures eſtabliſhed, iv. 211. See *Manufactures*, *Fine Stuffs*.
Sillery. (Nicholas Brulart de) Chancellor, deputed from the court to Henry IV. i. 104, 120. Oppoſes Sully's admiſſion into the council of finances, ii. 185, 186. and compliments him upon his entrance into it, 189. Quarrels with him in the council, 231. Labours to pacify Picardy, 249. and concludes the peace of Vervins, 253. Adviſes Henry IV. to marry the fair Gabriella, 274. Signs the treaty of Vervins, and prevails upon the arch-duke to ſign it, 279. Is ſent ambaſſador to Rome, where he is employed by madame de Beaufort to ſolicit her marriage with Henry IV. 285. Is made miniſter of ſtate. His policy with reſpect to Spain contrary to that of Sully's, iii. 86. He endeavours to hinder the count de Bethune from being ſent ambaſſador to Rome, 104. Labours in the council and the court to procure a repeal of the jeſuits baniſhment, iv. 6, 7. His opinion concerning toleration of religions, contrary to that of Sully, 37. His plots to procure two cardinals hats for Villars and Marquemont, in oppoſition to Du-Perron and Olivary, 39. Henry IV. makes uſe of him to pacify his domeſtic troubles, 56. Sully obliges him to ſign the treaty of commerce with Spain, 119. He is appointed one of the commiſſioners for purchaſing the county of St. Paul, 142. He unites with the courtiers and jeſuits in the affair of Grillon to ruin Sully, 170. for whom he lays a great many ſnares, 176. The cauſe of his hatred to Sully, 180. Henry IV. acquaints him with the advancement of Paul V. to the pontificate, 216. and avoids employing him in religious affairs, 231. He does the king many ſervices on other occaſions, 246. His letters to Sully at the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, 265. and to Villeroi during the expedition of Sedan, 332. He is made keeper of the ſeals, and viſits Sully to tranſact ſome affairs relating to this office, v. 2--10. He oppoſes Sully's opinion concerning the propoſals made by the Flemings of giving towns in hoſtage to the French, 26. as likewiſe on occaſion of the cabals among the proteſtants, 103. and has a debate with him in the king's preſence, 142. Henry IV. acquaints him with the plots formed againſt his life, 163. He has another diſpute with Sully, 185. Henry's judgment upon his good and bad qualities, 187, 188. He prejudices that prince againſt Sully with reſpect to the armament of Cleves, 252. His grave reply to the queen upon the death of Henry IV. 287. He is admitted in the ſecret council of Mary de Medicis, 325. and gives her maxims of policy quite contrary to thoſe of Henry the Great, 338--341. He endeavours to ruin Sully, vi. 2. who reproaches him with having made a fraudulent uſe of the ſeal, 7. He is ſeverely reproved by the duke of Nevers, and adviſes the queen regent to recal Sully

from Montrond, 13. Gratuities from the queen regent, 21. He supports Villeroi and d'Alincourt against Sully in the affair of Lyons, 25. See *Ministers, Blood,* (Princes of) *Lords,* &c.

Sillery. (Noel Brulart, commandeur de) Engaged in the amours of Henry IV. v. 76. Is admitted into the secret council of Mary de Medicis, 325. Grants which he obtains from her, 21.

Silly. See *Rochepot* and *Rocheguyon* (La-).

Silvestre. (Father) A cordelier, spiritual director to madame de Mastin, i. 89.

Simiane. See *Gordes.*

Simiers. (James de) Great master of the ward-robe to Monsieur, ii. 11.

-------- (Madame de) Louisa l'Hôpital Vitry, contributes towards the success of the treaty between the king and Villars, ii. 11--30--37--50.

Sinan-Bacha. The janizaries force the Grand Seignior to banish him, iv. 145.

Sinceray. Henry IV. takes this town from the duke of Bouillon, iv. 281.

Sixteen. (The) Maïenne causes four of them to be hanged for having hanged the president Brisson, &c. Their insolence, i. 234, 235.

Sixtus V. A bon-mot of his to cardinal Joyeuse upon Henry III. i. 61. He excommunicates the protestants and all that were enemies to the royal authority, 99. See *Treaty of Nemours.* A saying of his upon the barricadoes, 152. He excommunicates Henry III. after the murder of the Guises: his real sentiments upon this action, and upon the conduct of the heads of the League, 161. His sayings and predictions concerning Henry IV. the duke of Maïenne, the king of Spain, and the duke of Savoy, 184. Henry's speech upon the news of his death, 234. His character: a bon-mot upon him, iv. 213.

Sluys. The siege and surrender of this place, iv. 119, 120.

Sobelle. (Raymond de Comminges de) And his brother driven out of Metz by Henry IV. particulars of this affair, iii. 183--186.

Soissons. The League makes it one of their towns of security in their treaty with Spain, i. 282. The chiefs of the League retire thither. See *League.* The garrison is defeated by the royalists, ii. 122.

-------- (Charles de Bourbon, count of) Joins Henry IV. and takes the duke of Mercœur's baggage, i. 136. He behaves bravely in the battle of Coutras, 142. but hinders Henry from taking advantage of his victory, 144. His design of marrying the princess Catherine contrary to the will of Henry, 146. He quits him after the barricadoes, and offers his service to Henry III. 153. by whom he is received very coldly, 155. He endeavours to prevail upon Sully to quit the party of Henry IV. 163. and advances slowly to the assistance of that prince at Dieppe, 184. Goes to Bearn with an intention to marry the princess Catherine, but does not succeed, 264. His character, 265. He becomes one of the heads of the third party, 283. His views and plots with the states of Paris, 311. Sully reconciles him with the duke of Montpensier, ii. 19, 20. and gets the contract of marriage passed between him and the princess

princeſs into his own hands, 26. He defeats the troops which the Spaniards were endeavouring to throw into Laon, 71. He is made great maſter of the houſhold to the king after the death of the duke of Guiſe, 103. He demands to be made preſident of the council of finances, but is refuſed, and is obliged to attend the king into Burgundy, 125, 126. and afterwards quits him, 128. His officers inſult Sully, 129. Sully endeavours to break off his marriage with the princeſs Catherine, 168, &c. He diſcovers the plot of Mignon to poiſon the king, iii. 24. Oppoſes Sully's opinion with regard to the war of Savoy, 40--53. and bears him a grudge on account of his having diſſuaded the king from purchaſing his eſtates in Piedmont, 103. He is ſummoned to the council held at Blois, concerning arreſting the heads of the ſeditious party, 128. He is reconciled to Sully, 211. but blames in a covert manner his negotiations at the court of London, 315. He quarrels again with that miniſter, whom Henry ſupports againſt him on occaſion of an edict obtained by ſtratagem, 329, *& ſeqq.* Henry purchaſes his earldom of St. Paul, iv. 142. A donation made by his majeſty to this prince, 210. His quarrels with the prince of Condé, 246. He quarrels again with Sully on occaſion of the quarters deſtined for the grand maſter of the ordnance: his unjuſtifiable proceedings in that affair, 286. He refuſes to be preſent at the reception of Sully in parliament upon his being made duke and peer, 314. He declares himſelf of a contrary opinion to Sully with reſpect to the expedition of Sedan, 324--v. 26. He diſcovers his diſcontent publicly, 98. and unites with the courtiers and jeſuits, 149. He prejudices Henry againſt Sully on the affair of the armament of Cleves, 252--260. He quits the court in diſguſt on the queen's coronation, 279. He returns and is made one of the members of the public council of Mary de Medicis, 326. whoſe regency he endeavours to get cancelled, 329. He ſeeks Sully's friendſhip, but quarrels with him afterwards, and uſes his utmoſt endeavours to ruin him, 330. His quarrels with the prince of Conti and the duke of Guiſe, 332. He breaks with Conchini, but is afterwards reconciled to him, 333. Sully's advice to him, and the other princes of the blood, 352. He combats Sully's opinion with regard to the ſiege of Juliers, 360. Conchini gains him by procuring for him the government of Normandy, and other favours, vi. 3, 4. Gratuities which he procures from the queen regent, 20.

Solre. (Count of) Ambaſſador from the arch-duke to Henry IV. the anſwer of that prince to him, iii. 88.

Sommerive. (Charles Emanuel de Lorrain count of) Defends Lyons againſt Henry IV. ii. 60. Surrenders the place to him, 93. Is baniſhed by the king for his amours with the counteſs of Moret, v. 92.

Sophy. Of Perſia: he ſends an ambaſſador to the emperor Rodolphus, iii. 86.

Sorbonne. (The) Hates Henry IV. i. 313. Oppoſes the regiſtering of the edict of Nantz, ii. 346. Hates the jeſuits, iv. 20. See *Univerſity.*

Sorlin. (Henry de Savoy-Nemours, marquis of Saint) Comes to Lyons

to the assistance of the duke of Nemours, ii. 58. Makes a treaty with the king, 157. Article of the treaty of Lyons in his favour, iii. 67. Gratuities bestowed upon him by Henry IV. iv. 359.

Soubise. (Benjamin de Rohan, duke of) Gives Henry cause to be offended with him, iv. 353. He commands a company in the expedition of Cleves, v. 264.

Sourdis. (Francis d'Escourbleau, marquis of) One of the heads of the catholics who oppose Henry IV. i. 291. ii. 68.

------- (Francis d'Escourbleau de) He is made a cardinal, ii. 284. Goes to Rome to assist at the conclave, iv. 38.

------- (Isabella Babou de la Bourdaisiere, marchioness of). Mistress to the chancellor de Chiverny, ii. 232. Procures a cardinal's hat for her son, 284. Seconds the duchess of Beaufort's plots to bring about a marriage between her and Henry IV. 286. The duchess of Beaufort, when taken ill, desires to be carried to her house, 362.

Southampton. (Earl of) Escorts Sully to London, iii. 224. In great favour with the king of England, 257. His quarrel with Grey, 320.

Souvrai. (Gilles de) A favourite of Henry III. ii. 98. An anecdote concerning him: his eulogium, ib.

Spa water. Taken by Henry IV. iv. 61. v. 107.

Spain. The Spanish army join the duke of Maïenne, i. 191. They behave well at the battle of Ivry, 194. Make proposals of union with Henry IV. 259. Defeated at Craon, 263. Worsted in Provence and Dauphiné, 268. Assist the League, 279. Their plots in the assembly of the states of Paris, 308. They endeavour to render ineffectual Henry's abjuration, ii. 2. Their policy with regard to religion, ib. The snares laid by the council of Madrid for Henry IV. 5. They offer him the infanta in marriage, 6. They leave Paris, 43. Villars obliges them to leave Rouen, 50. They send succours to the duke of Nemours, 58. They besiege and take La Chapelle, 60. Assist the jesuits in their process with the university, 67. Their grand convoy defeated before Laon, 74, &c. Unable to hinder the place from being taken, 78. Their expeditions into Brittany, 94. They endeavour to establish Burgundy into a kingdom for the duke of Maïenne, 95. Driven from Marseilles by the duke of Guise, 110. Henry IV. declares war against them, 118. They endeavour to assassinate him, ib. They take Le Catelet and La Chapelle, 130. Defeat the French at Dourlens, ib. See *Nevers, Bouillon, Villars.* They enter Franche-Comté, and are defeated by Henry IV. at Fontaine-Françoise, 137, 138. They surprise Amiens, 222. Retaken by Henry IV. 241. They are driven out of Brittany, 253. See *Mercœur.* Discontented with the duke of Savoy, iii. 17. Refuses to give him succours against Henry IV. 68. Continues the war against the Dutch, 70. Henry disgusted with them: they insult his ambassador, 84, 85. See *Rochepot* (La.) Offended with Henry's journey to Calais, 87. Support the French rebels, 114. as likewise those in Ireland, 118. Continuation of their war with the Dutch, 178. Their squadron defeated by the Dutch, 170. Their expedition into the Low Countries, 194. Their plots in England after the death of Queen Elizabeth, 201. They endeavour

endeavour to gain James, 223. Spaniſh faction in London, 232. James's hatred and jealouſy of them, 249. He accuſes them of conſpiring againſt his life, 253, 254. They make him great offers to induce him to forſake France, 259. They ſupport the Engliſh prieſts, and endeavour to dethrone him, 270. An idea of the catholic faction in Europe, 292, 293. See *Political Deſign*. They foment the conſpiracy of the Engliſh lords againſt James, 319. Their fleet defeated by the Dutch, 322. Continuation of their war againſt the Dutch, 325. The ſhare they have in L'Hôte's treaſon, iv. 26. Henry unwiſely prohibits trading with them, 113. Continuation of this ſubject, 114, *& ſeqq.* Continuation of their war with the Dutch, 119. They endeavour to procure a peace with England, 123. which is at laſt concluded, 127. The origin of the grandeur of this crown, 130. See *Auſtria* (houſe of). The beginning of their difference with the Griſons, 136. See *Fuentes*, *Valteline*. Continuation of their war in Flanders, 221. New plots carried on by them againſt James, 224. They build a new armament of gallies, 259. The queen and courtiers promote their intereſt, 312. Continuation of their war with the Dutch, 371. Propoſals for a truce, 372. They plot againſt Henry in his court, v. 18. He orders a capture to be reſtored to them, 24. Continuation of the war in Flanders, ib. 25. A great naval fight gained by the Dutch, 29. Suſpenſion of arms, 30. The affair of the Valteline and Griſons, 34. Sully obliges them to make reſtitution of ſome encroachments made by them on the confines of Champaign, 116. Negotiations for a truce with Holland, 128. The weakneſs of this crown in fixing the boundaries of Navarre and Bearn, 134. As likewiſe in the revolt of the Moors, 135. Whom they oblige to leave their ſtates, 139. Their deteſtable plots againſt the life of Henry IV. 155. A treaty of truce concluded between them and the Dutch, 217. A farther account of their plots againſt Henry IV. 245, 246. The queen regent ſeeks their alliance, 325. and unites herſelf to them, 339. They ſend ambaſſadors to Paris upon the death of Henry IV. vi. 11. The object of the great deſign with regard to that crown, 78--81.

Spain. (Kings and queens of) Charles V. Philip II. Philip III. Elizabeth of France. See theſe names.

------ (Infant and infantas of) See *Infants*.

Spinola. (The marquis of) Beſieges Oſtend, iii. 179. Has an audience of Henry IV. at Paris, iv. 221. His military exploits in Flanders againſt the prince of Orange, 222. He beſieges and takes Rhimberg, 371, 372. Concludes a treaty with the Flemings for a ſuſpenſion of arms, v. 130. Favours the prince of Condé's flight, 199. and diſſuades the arch-duke from ſurrendering him, 207.

-------- (Frederic) His ſquadron beaten by the Dutch, iii. 179. He is killed in another naval battle, 322.

Stafford. See *Sidney*.

State. (Cabinet of) See *Cabinet*.

States. (The General) At Blois. See *Blois*. At Paris. See *Paris*. At Rouen. See *Notables*, (Aſſembly of) *Rouen*. Political maxims

upon the ſtates, ii. 204--207. Erroneous principles upon this ſubject, v. 120.

Straſburg. No longer concerned in farming the revenues, ii. 317. War between the cardinal of Lorrain and the prince of Brandenbourg for this biſhopric, iii. 187.

Strozzy. (Philip) One of the principal officers of Charles IX. i. 2. Endeavours to ſurpriſe Rochelle, 20.

Stuart. (Houſe of) How the crown of England paſſed into this houſe, iv. 132.

------ (Henry) Lord Darnly. Becomes king of Scotland by his marriage with Mary Stuart. See *Stuart* (Mary).

------ (James V.) King of Scotland, i. 13. The princeſs Catherine refuſes to marry him, ii. 170--339. He congratulates Henry IV. upon the diſcovery of Biron's conſpiracy, iii. 161. See *James king of England.*

------ (Mary) Queen of Scotland: niece to the duke of Guiſe, i. 13.

------ (Arabella) propoſed for a wife to Henry IV. ii. 268.

Stuniga, or *Cuniga.* (Don Baltazar de) His offer in the name of Spain to Henry IV. after his abjuration, is rejected by that prince, ii. 2. He is ſent ambaſſador to France, and is employed in the affair of 30 per cent. iv. 116.

Sweden. A revolution in that kingdom, iii. 12. The bad policy of that court, 258. Part of the great deſign relating to Sweden, vi. 79. Forces and money to be contributed by that crown, 97. See *Political Deſign.*

------ (Charles, king of) Dethrones Sigiſmund his nephew, iii. 12. and confirms himſelf in the throne, iv. 368. Himſelf and his ſon enter into a confederacy againſt the houſe of Auſtria. Boiſſiſe is appointed ambaſſador to this court, v. 265. See *Sweden, Political Deſign.*

Swiſs. They prevent Charles IX. from being taken at Meaux, i. 21. They grant troops to Henry III. 118. Sully treats with them for this purpoſe, 120. They march into France under ſeveral diſadvantages, 121. and take part with the League, to avoid being cut in pieces at Auneau, 149. They are diſarmed on the day of the barricadoes, 151. They fight bravely for Henry IV. at Arques, 182. but refuſe to fight at Ivry, 196. They mutiny in Henry's army after this battle, 203. They bring him ſuccours at the ſiege of Rouen, 226. and refuſe to purſue the prince of Parma after his paſſage over the Seine, 259. Their valour at the attack of the great convoy before Laon, ii. 75. They unite with France againſt Spain in the war of 1595, 118. The Swiſs troops are diſbanded after the peace of Vervins, 280. Sully will not allow the Swiſs to have any ſhare in farming the revenues, 317. A ſolemn embaſſy from the thirteen cantons to renew the alliance: their reception at Paris, iii. 176. France levies ſoldiers in Switzerland, 177. Their diſpoſitions and true policy with reſpect to the houſe of Auſtria, 295. In what conſiſted the advantages they were to have by the deſign of Henry IV. 297. See *Political Deſign.* They become mediators between the duke of Savoy and the republick of Geneva,

Geneva, 323. Abuſes in the diſcharge of the debts due from France to the Swiſs, iv. 101. The part they have in the affair of La Valteline and the Griſons, 134. Sully ſlandered with carrying on criminal correſpondence with them, 186. Debts contracted by Henry IV. with them during the League, 205. The Swiſs join the Griſons againſt Spain, v. 35. Sully pays the debts of the ſtate to the cantons, 39--52. De Refuge behaves ill there, 228. The Swiſs enter into the confederacy againſt the houſe of Auſtria, 258. Caumartin is ſent to them in the quality of ambaſſador, 265. Part of the great deſign relating to this republic: advantages for them in it, vi. 85--89. Forces and money to be contributed by them, 97. See *Swiſs, Republic, Political Deſign.*

Sully. (Eſtate and caſtle of) Sully purchaſes them, iii. 83. He builds there, 156. Henry IV. erects the lands of Sully into a peerage, iv. 314. Sully retires thither after the death of Henry, vi. 39--48. His ſtay there, 124. He embelliſhes it, 132, 133.

----- (Maximilian de Bethune, marquis of Roſny, afterwards duke of) Particulars relating to his anceſtors, his family, and his birth, i. 4. Explanations and errors corrected on this head, ib. 5. He is brought up in the reformed religion: goes with the court of Navarre to Paris. Is preſented to the king of Navarre: his ſtudies, 24. Sully eſcapes the maſſacre of Saint Bartholomew, 33, 34. His education, 37. His firſt exploits in arms, 48. He defends Perigueux and Ville-neuve: he is in danger at the ſiege of Villefranche, &c. 50, 51. He quarrels with Frontenac and Turenne, 52. Follows Henry IV. to Bearn: his œconomy: he is well received by the princeſs Catherine, 54, 55. He is at the taking of Eauſe; at the battle before Mirande; that before Nerac; and other encounters; where he is often in danger, 55. His behaviour during the junction of the two courts of Catherine de Medicis and the king of Navarre, 63. He is in danger at the reduction of Cahors, 68. and before Marmande, 71. He defends Monſegur, 74. Is made counſellor of Navarre, and chamberlain in ordinary to Henry, 75. His motives for going with Monſieur into Flanders: converſation between Henry and him upon this journey, 78. He entertains ſeveral gentlemen in his train, 81. What befel him at Cambray, 83. Roubais returns his civilities with rudeneſs, ib. Monſieur refuſes to give him his intereſt with reſpect to his ſucceſſion to the eſtate of the viſcount de Gand, which occaſions a coolneſs between that prince and him, 86. Advice given him by the prince of Orange, of the treachery of Antwerp, 88. He returns to Monſieur: obſervations upon the duties of a prince, ib. 89. His reception from madame de Maſtin, 89. Honours paid him by the burgeſſes of Bethune, 90. He returns into France; his reception from Henry; he goes to the court of Henry III. to acquaint that prince with the propoſals made by Spain to the king of Navarre, 90, 91. He goes to viſit Monſieur at Chateau-Thierry out of curioſity, 92. Sully continues at court to obſerve the motions of the League: he finds his brothers out of favour there, 93, 94. Falls in love with mademoiſelle de Saint-Meſmin, 95. and marries mademoiſelle de Courtenay, 96. His domeſtic employments during the firſt year of his marriage, ib. He returns to the king of Navarre,

Navarre, and carries him a supply of money, 97. He receives the duke of Joyeuse at Rosny, 99. He gives good counsel to the protestants in the assembly, 103. Returns to Paris, and commences a negotiation there, 106. He goes to Guyenne; dangers to which he is exposed in this journey, 109. The king of Navarre, by his advice, makes head against three armies in the neighbourhood of Rochelle, 115, 116. He throws himself into Saint-Bazeille, 117. Is deputed to Saint-Maur to Henry III. to negotiate a union of the two kings, 119. He treats likewise with the Swiss; and for the use of the foreign troops in France, 120. He is present at the siege of Talmont, 122. and at that of Fontenay: a comical adventure which happened to him during the siege, 126. He goes to his wife during the plague at Rosny, 127. Reflections upon the meekness of Henry III. 129. He penetrates into the designs of Catherine of Medicis, 130. Defeats a squadron belonging to Joyeuse, 133. and takes advantage of his absence to harass his troops: services which he does his brother, 134. He goes to Paris to the assistance of madame de Rosny: dangers to which he is exposed there, 137. He returns to the king of Navarre, and serves him in the battle of Coutras, 138, *et seqq.* Anecdotes on this subject, 143. His wise advice after this battle, 147. Sully is deputed to the prince of Conti, 148. Returns to Bergerac, 149. Reflections upon the action of the barricadoes, and the conduct of Henry III. 155. Reflections upon the weakness of that prince, 158. He comes to make his report to the king of Navarre, and goes back again to conclude the treaty between the two kings, 161, *et seq.* His indisposition: Du-Plessis Mornay deprives him of the honour of concluding this treaty: his discontent, 163. His advice to Henry IV. upon his interview with Henry III. 164. He helps to defend Tours, 165. The part he has in the battle of Saveuse, 168. He goes to the assistance of his wife: his excessive grief for her death, 169. He returns to the army of the two kings, where he exposes himself to the greatest dangers, 170. Henry IV. tells him that Henry III. was wounded, and takes him with him to Saint Cloud, 171. He asks Sully's advice upon the death of this prince, 173. Services which he does to Henry IV. by retaining the leaders of the royalist army, 175. He seizes Meulan, ib. the government of which he refuses, ib. Fails in his attempt upon Louviers for want of succours, 177. Goes to reconnoitre the duke of Maïenne's army, 178. Present at the battle of Arques, where he is in danger, 181, *et seq.* Fails in his attempt upon Vernon, 185. Storms the suburbs of Saint-Germain, ib. Preserves the country of Mante against the troops of the League, 187. His motives for writing his memoirs, ib. He contributes towards raising the siege of Meulan, 188. Defends Passy, 190. Present at the battle of Ivry, wounded there, and takes several prisoners, 194, *et seq.* D'Andelot disputes them with him, 198. Sully is carried in triumph to Rosny: Henry IV. caresses him, and makes him a knight, 202. Sully is discontented, on account of being denied the government he asked for, 204. He is present at the siege of Paris, 205. and at the operations after the raising of this siege, 211. He retires in disgust

disgust, 213. He saves the life of Clermont-Tonnerre at Joigny, 214. His adventure at Chartres, where he narrowly escapes being slain, 215. Receives a letter from Henry IV. from Saint-Quentin, 216. This prince begins to trust him with his secrets, ibid. Henry is the cause of an enterprize failing which he had projected at Mante against the duke of Maienne, 221. He visits madame Châteaupers, 224. Seizes a boat richly laden, ib. Attends Henry IV. to the siege of Rouen, 226. Opposes Biron's opinion concerning the manner of attacking the place, 227. Is present at the attack of the trenches, 229. Makes remonstrances to the king, upon the dangers to which he exposes his life, 231. Conversation between them, concerning the mutinies of the catholics in his army, ib. He endeavours to procure the surrender of Rouen, by a correspondence within, 232. He goes with Henry IV. to meet the prince of Parma, 233. The remonstrances he makes him upon the dangers to which he exposes his life, 236. He complains of the duke of Nevers's conduct at Bully, 237, *et seq.* Is present in the battle of Aumale, 240. and at all the expeditions in the neighbourhood of Rouen, 248. He declares himself for pursuing the prince of Parma, after his passage over the Seine, 254. He marries madame de Châteaupers, 274. Sully retires to his seat in disgust, ib. 275. The president Seguier undeceives him, 277. He intercepts some papers belonging to the League and the third party; subject of them, 278, *et seq.* He carries them to Henry IV. 283. The confidence this prince places in him upon this occasion, 285. Motives which oblige him to conceal this confidence, 286. Conversation between them, and Sully's arguments to induce Henry to change his religion, 289, *et seq.* The true sentiments of this minister upon religion, 292. He prevails upon the protestants to treat with the heads of the catholics upon this subject, 294. His conversations and negotiations with Bellozane, 296. with the Durets, 298. and with Du-Perron, 299. The part he has in the reduction of Dreux, 323. His confession in favour of the catholic religion, 325. He votes contrary to the inclinations of the protestants in their assemblies, 328. His answer to Du-Perron, who exhorted him to change his religion, 329. The last service he does Henry IV. in the affair of his abjuration, 330. He procures a second truce for the Parisians: and presents a Spanish envoy to the king, ii. 4, 5. He opposes the deputation of La Varenne to Spain, 6. Jealousy of the catholics, 10. He commences a negotiation with admiral Villars, Medavy, &c. 11. His first journey to Rouen on this occasion, 16. He reconciles the duke of Montpensier and the count of Soissons, 20. and withdraws the contract of marriage between the princess and the count, 26. He treats with the duchess of Aumale for her husband's surrender, 27, 28. with Medavy, 29. with admiral Villars, 31. Difficulty in concluding this last treaty, 32. Which is done at length, 33. Sully returns to Rouen, and receives in the king's name the homage of Villars and the city of Rouen, 47--51. A pleasant adventure which happened to him with Boisrose, 52, 53. His delicacy with regard to the gratuities and presents bestowed on him by his majesty, 54. He serves in the siege of Laon, 61. The affairs

of the government oblige him to return to Paris: his converſation with the cardinal of Bourbon, 62. He diſcovers the deſigns of the ſeditious party, 66. and ſuppreſſes the proceſs of the jeſuits againſt the univerſity, 67, &c. He returns to Laon to give an account of his proceedings to the king, 71, *et ſeq.* Aſſiſts in defeating the great convoy, 73. Is employed to diſcover Biron's deſigns, 77. Gives notice of the approach of the Spaniſh army, 79. Other ſervices performed by him upon this occaſion, 82. Henry ſends him to Rouen, 83. and afterwards to Sedan: motives of this journey, 85. His converſation with Bouillon, 86. In which he diſcovers his character, and the aim of his policy, 89, 90. And gives an account of it to the king, 92. The affairs of the ſtate again oblige him to return to Paris, 97. He is employed in the treaty with the duke of Guiſe, 102. Which he concludes: his apology for this treaty, and his accuſations of the duke d'Epernon, 105--111. His ſentiments concerning the abuſes in the finances, 115. His quarrels with the duke of Nevers oblige him to quit the council of finances: he is made ſecretary of ſtate, 116. Sully oppoſes the declaration of war with Spain, 118. Is near Henry at the time of his being wounded by Chatel, 119. Returns to the council, from whence the bad conduct of the counſellors oblige him to retire, 127. His diſputes with the officers of the count of Soiſſons, 128. Henry IV. at his return from Franche-Comté, comes to confer with him at Moret, 142. The conduct of d'Oſſat with reſpect to Sully's accuſations examined, 144, *et ſeq.* Another converſation between Henry and Sully upon the diſaſters which happened in Picardy, 152. He refuſes to go with Bouillon to London, and diſcovers the ſnares laid for him by the council, 152, 153. He goes to Paris, to provide for the ſubſiſtence of the troops during the ſiege of La Fere, 154. Contradicts thoſe who were of opinion that this fortreſs might be laid under water, 155, *et ſeq.* He goes to Amiens to attend the king; a comical adventure which happened to him with an aſtrologer: the fair Gabriella in great danger upon the road, 161, *et ſeqq.* He is deputed to Rouen to the duke of Montpenſier, 165. Afterwards to the princeſs, to break off her marriage with the count of Soiſſons: converſations which he has with this princeſs, whoſe reſentment had like to have occaſioned his diſgrace, 168, &c. Henry IV. does him juſtice, 178. He is likewiſe reſtored to the favour of the princeſs, 179. Who confides entirely in him, 181. Oppoſition made by the financers to his entering the council, 183. and the king's reſolution thereon: he is at length received into the council, 189. He takes a journey into the diſtricts: the deſign and effects of this journey, 191. Calumnies againſt Sully oblige Henry to recal him, 195. The kind behaviour of this prince to him at his return, 196. His quarrels with Sancy, 197. In what manner he diſcovered the frauds of the council of finances, 200. Sully's reflections upon the general ſtates of the kingdom, 204. Others upon impoſts and government, 209, *et ſeq.* The wiſe counſel he gives the king in the aſſembly des notables, and the reſult of it, 213. His labours in the finances, 217. He comforts Henry for the loſs of Amiens, 222, *et ſeq.* and contrives the means of retaking it, 224. Which

he communicates to the king, 225. and the king to the council, 227. He is made head of the council during this expediton, and makes himself be obeyed, 229. His great application to every thing that might contribute to the succeſs of the ſiege of Amiens, 233. and in diſconcerting the cabals of the proteſtants during it, 235, *et ſeq.* Henry's great care and ſolicitude for the ſafety of this miniſter in the dangers to which he expoſes himſelf at Amiens, 233. He promiſes to give him the poſt of grand maſter of the ordnance: which he afterwards beſtows upon d'Eſtrées, 237, *et ſeq.* He gives him the government of Mante in recompence for it, ib. An account of the letters from Henry IV. to Sully, 241, &c. He oppoſes the beſieging of Dourlens, 245. The freedom with which he reproves Henry for his indulgence to the duke of Mercœur, 252. His ſtay at Rennes: the preſent made him by that town: his wiſe regulations there to pacify Brittany, 255. He prevails upon Henry to make peace, 261. A curious converſation between them: in which Sully ſhews Henry the neceſſity of his marrying again; and diſſuades him from the deſign he had entertained of marrying his miſtreſs, 267, *et ſeqq.* Sully prepares Margaret de Valois for the diſſolution of her marriage, 275. and returns to Paris, 277. The ſhare he has in the ſeveral regulations in the government, 281. He endeavours in vain to break off the conference of Boulogne, 284. He traverſes the ſchemes of madame de Beaufort to make herſelf queen, 287. Henry liſtens to his arguments, and ſupports him againſt his miſtreſs; with whom he reconciles him, 288, *et ſeqq.* He viſits the king when he lay ill at Monceaux, 293. Receives the cardinal of Florence at Paris and Saint Germain, 295. Undertakes to make a reformation in the finances, 295, *et ſeq.* His character: his diſpoſitions: his eulogium, 296, *et ſeq.* The portrait of a perfect miniſter, 298. He gives an account of his eſtates: of his abilities, 301. of his employments, &c. 302. of the diſtribution of his time, and his daily occupations, 303, &c. Henry IV. makes him his firſt miniſter, 305. His great confidence in him, 307. His praiſe of his good qualities, and his talents, ib. He attends to every part of the government, 308, &c. He proſecutes extortioners, and thoſe who are guilty of any embezzlement, 314. Quarrels in full council with d'Epernon, againſt whom he is ſupported by Henry, 315, 316. He takes the management of the farms of the ſtate out of the hands of the nobles and foreigners, and continues firm to all their complaints: a converſation on this ſubject between him and the conſtable, 317, *et ſeqq.* Other labours in the finances, 321. Calumnies are ſpread againſt him, 324. He accuſes D'Oſſat of oppoſing the marriage of the princeſs Catherine and the duke of Bar, 340. Sully aſſiſts at a conference for the converſion of the princeſs, 341. He prevails upon the proteſtants to conſent that an article in the edict of Nantz ſhould be altered, 351. The ſuperintendance of the finances is eſtabliſhed in his favour, 354. He is alſo made ſuperintendant of the fortifications and buildings, and grand ſurveyor, with a conſiderable gratuity, ibid. Madame de Beaufort's endeavours to engage him in her intereſts, but in vain, 359. He is informed of her death, 361. He condoles with

Henry IV. who was exceſſively grieved at it, and comforts him, 364, *et ſeq.* Sully with great firmneſs reſiſts the duke of Savoy, who ſought to corrupt him, iii. 2, 3. He attends the king to Blois: motives of this journey, 4. Prevails upon Henry to marry again, and endeavours to diſpoſe Margaret of Valois to conſent to it, 5, 6. His courage and reſolution in tearing, before Henry, the promiſe of marriage to be given to mademoiſelle D'Entrague, 10. He concludes the marriage with the princeſs of Tuſcany, and brings Henry to a reſolution in this reſpect, 11. He takes the guardianſhip of the prince of Epinoy's children, 12, 13. Made grand maſter of the ordnance, 15. And appointed commiſſioner for the affair of the marquiſate of Saluces: his converſation with the duke of Savoy when he came to viſit him at the Arſenal, 18, 19. Another converſation on the ſame ſubject between him and Des-Aliymes, who endeavoured to corrupt him with preſents, 20. His firmneſs in oppoſing the other commiſſioners, 22. His counſel not followed, 23. He is preſent at the diſpute between Du-Pleſſis and Du-Perron: a bon-mot of his on this ſubject, 25--28. Sully prevails upon Henry to march to Savoy, 29. Converſation between him and Bellievre upon this war, 30, 31. The great care he took to ſecure its ſucceſs, 33. Biron lays ſnares for him, and the courtiers raiſe new obſtacles to his deſigns, 38. He beſieges Charbonnieres, 40. and takes it, notwithſtanding the oppoſition made by the grandees, &c. 46, *et ſeqq.* He takes likewiſe the caſtle of Montmelian: his labours, and the dangers he is in, at this ſiege, 49, *et ſeqq.* His reception of cardinal Aldobrandini, and his wife counſel to him, 58, 59. He takes fort St. Catherine. Goes to Geneva, and re-aſſures that city, 60. Attends the king to Lyons for the ceremony of his marriage, 62. Embarraſſed about continuing the war, 64. He reſumes the treaty with cardinal Aldobrandini, and concludes it; purport of this treaty, 67. He receives the king and queen at the Arſenal, 69. He reſumes the direction of the affairs of the finances and the government, 71. Eſtabliſhes ſix per cent. in the place of eight per cent. 73, 74. Prohibits the currency of foreign money in France, 74; as likewiſe the uſe of gold and ſilver ſtuffs, 75. and the tranſportation of the gold and ſilver ſpecie, ib. Eſtabliſhes a chamber of juſtice, but without much effect, 77. Maxims of this miniſter upon the nobleſſe: upon the financiers, and againſt luxury and unequal alliances, 78--81. His advice to Henry IV. with regard to the prince of Orange, 83. The other miniſters oppoſe his policy with reſpect to the houſe of Auſtria, 85, 86. Preſents made to Sully by the grand ſignior, 87. He goes to Elizabeth at Dover: the diſcourſe he has with her concerning the great deſign: the praiſes he gives to this queen, 90, *et ſeqq.* He regrets the death of the young Châtillon; but dares not uſe his intereſt in favour of the family, 96, 97. Henry acquaints him with the birth of the Dauphin, 98. and with the ſtate of his own health, and that of the queen, 100. He refuſes to become a ſecurity in the affair of the iſles, 102. He diſſuades the king from purchaſing the eſtates of the count of Soiſſons, 103. Obtains the embaſſy to Rome for his brother the count of Béthune, notwithſtanding the oppoſition made

made by Villeroi and Sillery, 104. Letters from Henry to him upon different ſubjects, 105. A letter to Sully from Biron; and a converſation in which Sully endeavours to bring him back to his duty, 108, 109. He is commiſſioned to interrogate La-Fin: letters and converſations between Henry and him upon this ſubject: his name is mentioned among the conſpirators, 115, 116. He takes meaſures for arreſting Biron, and is made governor of the Baſtile, 117. An interlude and ball given by him at the Arſenal, 121. The wound in his mouth opens afreſh, ib. His reception of the foreign princes, ib. He accompanies the king to Blois, 122. Clears the duke of Epernon, and oppoſes his being arreſted: a grand council held upon this occaſion: he gives good advice to D'Epernon, 123, *et ſeqq.* Henry entruſts him with a violent reſolution he had taken againſt the queen and the Italians, from which Sully diſſuades him, 132. The precautions he takes with reſpect to Burgundy; and Biron's reſentment againſt him, 134. His advice to the king concerning the manner of arreſting Biron: Sully has a converſation with this marſhal, in which he endeavours to recal him to his duty, but in vain, 136, *et ſeqq.* His part in the ſeizure and impriſonment of Biron and Auvergne, 141. He has them conducted to the Arſenal, 142. Takes meaſures to prevent Biron's eſcape, 143. He is brought to a trial, 144. Sully's reaſons for refuſing to ſpeak to him: Biron's declaration in favour of him, 145, 146. Sully obtains leave that the place of his execution ſhould be changed, 148. He prevails upon many of the conſpirators to implore the king's pardon, ib. 149. De-Lux comes to him, and confeſſes his crime, 150. He prevails upon Henry to take gentle methods, and juſtifies the conſtable, 151. A converſation between Henry and him upon his motives for pardoning the count of Auvergne, 153. He intercedes for the prince of Joinville, 56, 57. and endeavours, but in vain, to perſuade Bouillon to come to court, 159, 160. A curious converſation between Henry and him, upon the bounds which he propoſed to ſet to his gratuities to him, 162, 163. and the precautions he takes againſt his enemies, 165. His diſcourſe to Sigogne on the affair of the advocates, 167, *et ſeqq.* His ſeverity to the fraudulent financiers, 169. He raiſes the value of the gold and ſilver coin, and eſtabliſhes the reckoning by livres, 170. Reflections upon theſe operations; and maxims with regard to money, 171, *et ſeqq.* Sully's ſentiments of the edict againſt duelling, 175. He treats with the Swiſs ambaſſadors, 176. He complains of D'Oſſat, 188--192. To whom he refuſes the payment of his penſion, 193. The king gives him the abbey of Coulon: letters which he wrote to this prince at Metz upon ſeveral ſubjects, 194. Sully removes his apprehenſions of the cabals of the ſeditious, 198, 199. Secret converſations between them upon the death of Elizabeth, in which Sully's embaſſy to London is reſolved upon, notwithſtanding the oppoſition of the courtiers, 201, &c. The importance of this embaſſy, for which Sully is authoriſed by a ſecret paper from his majeſty, 204, 205. He viſits Henry when indiſpoſed at Fontainebleau: he receives many marks of friendſhip and eſteem from that prince, 207. Purport of the inſtructions he received in full council.

council for his embaſſy, 211. He embarks with his train, 215, 216. Is inſulted by the Engliſh vice-admiral, 218, 219; and received but indifferently at Dover, 221. The impoliteneſs of the Engliſh to him, ib. His reception at Canterbury, 222. at Rocheſter; at London, 224. The hatred ſhown by the Londoners to the Frenchmen in his train, 225. The order and regularity he cauſes to be obſerved in his houſhold: his ſeverity in the affair of Combaut, 227, 228. His obſervations upon the character of the Engliſh; and upon the manner in which the French ought to behave to them, 229. Other obſervations upon France; upon the European powers; and upon war, 230, 231. State of the court, and of the Engliſh government, 232. The difficulties he found in this negotiation, ib. Character of the king and queen of England, 234, 235. Sully's firſt converſation with Cecil: the character and ſecret deſigns of this ſecretary, 237, 238. Another converſation with the deputies of the United Provinces; and the meaſures which they concert together, 239. Another converſation with the Venetian envoy, who informs him of the ſteps taken by Bouillon with the king of England, 242. Civilities which paſs betwixt him and the count of Aremberg, 244. Preſents which he receives from James, ib. His uneaſineſs that he cannot preſent himſelf to this prince in mourning, 245. An account of what paſſed at his firſt audience, 247. His conduct praiſed by the Londoners, 255. The obſtacles he meets with in his negotiation, 256. He penetrates into the deſigns of the northern courts, 258. His opinion of the pretended propoſals, made by Spain to the king of England, againſt France, 259. He adviſes Henry to take care and ſecure his provinces, 264. He has a ſecond audience with James, and a private converſation with this prince, in which he makes him approve of his plan and his arguments in favour of the United Provinces, 265. His conference with the Engliſh miniſters. Cecil's breach of faith, 273. Sully is invited by the king of England to an entertainment: their diſcourſe at dinner, 277, 278. He has a conference with Barnevelt, 279. Another with the Engliſh miniſters and the Flemiſh deputies: the obſtinacy of the Engliſh: the reſolution ſhown by Sully in this conference, 280, *&* *ſeqq.* Sully's third audience of the king of England, in which he has a private converſation with him, and acquaints him with the conduct of his miniſters, 287, &c. He explains to him the great deſign. See *Political Deſign.* And makes him reliſh it, 299. The kindneſs ſhewn by this prince to Sully, 302. Purport of the form of a treaty concluded by Sully with king James. The fault committed by Henry in not giving him fuller power: the ſucceſs of this negotiation, and praiſes of it, 304, *&* *ſeqq.* Diſpatches are intercepted, 307. Audience of leave. Civilities and honours paid by king James to Sully: preſents made by Sully to the king, the queen, and the lords of the Engliſh court, 309, &c. Sully embarks for France: he is in danger during his paſſage, 311, *et ſeq.* He goes to Henry at Villers-Coterets: his reception from the king: public converſation upon his embaſſy, 312, *et ſeq.* Praiſes given him by Henry, who takes his part againſt the count of Soiſſons, 315. Private converſations between the king and Sully on the ſame ſubject,

317. The king of England ſends him the treaty, ſigned, with great praiſes of his conduct, 321. He reſumes his labours in the finances, 326. He makes remonſtrances to the king upon the abuſe of granting too readily a great number of ſmall edicts, 327. Henry ſupports him againſt the reſentment of the count of Soiſſons, the marchioneſs of Verneuil, &c. on this occaſion: his ſteadineſs and reſolution praiſed, 329--333. He receives and treats the king at Roſny: the entertainment is diſturbed by an accident, 334. He endeavours to appeaſe the mutiny among the proteſtants, and to get the doctrine of the Pope's being antichriſt, ſuppreſſed, 337. He is made governor of Poitou, 338--340. Oppoſes the eſtabliſhment of ſilk manufactures, 341. Reflections upon this ſubject; and upon luxury, and upon arts neceſſary to be cultivated in France, &c. 342, *et ſeqq.* He blames Henry's great expences in gaming, miſtreſſes, &c. 347. and oppoſes the ſending of colonies to Canada, 348. He preſents gold and ſilver medals to their majeſties, iv. 1. Sully is employed to ſettle the claims of the king and the duke of Bar to the effects of the late ducheſs of Bar, 3. He votes in the council againſt the return of the jeſuits, and diſſuades the king from conſenting to it, 4, *et ſeqq.* but, to pleaſe the king, he afterwards favours that ſociety, 17, 18. He preſents a memorial againſt D'Oſſat, and inveighs againſt the policy of the miniſters and courtiers, who were in the intereſt of Spain, 21, *et ſeqq.* He is the original author of the Political Syſtem of Cardinal Richelieu for humbling the houſe of Auſtria, 25. He aſſiſts in making a diſcovery of L'Hôte's treaſonable practices, ib. &c. His behaviour on this occaſion to Villeroi, 35. He compoſes a memorial concerning a toleration of different religions, 37. Du-Perron and Olivari obtain each a cardinal's hat through his influence, 39. A curious converſation between Henry and him, in which the king acquaints him with the uneaſineſs given him by the queen and the marchioneſs of Verneuil. Sully's courage and reſolution in ſpeaking to the king, who excuſes himſelf to him for the violence of his temper, 40, &c. Sully gives advice to this prince, which he does not follow, 48; but employs him to pacify theſe troubles. Sully's reſpectful behaviour to the queen; and the deference ſhown by that princeſs to him, 51. He reconciles the king and the queen, who afterwards quarrel again, 54. He endeavours in vain to inſpire Henry with a reſolution neceſſary for the occaſion; and draws the queen's hatred upon himſelf, 55. He forbears to concern himſelf in her quarrels with the king, for which he is in danger of loſing his favour, 56. He makes an attempt to perſuade the marchioneſs of Verneuil to diſengage herſelf from the king, but does not ſucceed, 58, 59. Reciprocal praiſes between queen Margaret and Sully, 62. He labours to prevent the cabals of the malecontents, 63; and ſolicits Henry to ſhew himſelf in the provinces, 65, 66. He goes to Poitou, 68. Honours paid him there, 70. the great utility of this journey, 74. Services which he does for D'Epernon, 75, 76. He takes meaſures for arreſting the count of Auvergne, 80. Letters between him and that nobleman, 85. He reproaches the marchioneſs of Verneuil when he was commiſſioned to interrogate her, 89. Cannot prevail upon Henry to ſend her out of the kingdom,

kingdom, 91. An anecdote on this subject, ib. He deposites the king's treasure in the Bastile: a regulation for this purpose, 96. Some fine reflections upon government, and the duty of kings, 98, 99. Methods for raising money, 100. Sully undertakes to prove the rents, 104. Establishes a chamber of justice. Other regulations upon the finances, 105. Upon the army: an establishment for disabled soldiers, 108, 109. Causes of the ruin and decay of states, 110, 111. His maxims of government too austere, ib. He begins the canal of Briare, 112. Opposes the edict for thirty *per* cent. and afterwards repairs this fault by a treaty of commerce with Spain, ib. 113, &c. He obliges Villeroi and Sillery to sign the treaty of commerce, 119; and secretly favours the Flemings, 121. The king of England acts contrary to the treaty passed with him, 123, *& seqq.* Sully's advice to Henry against the Spanish policy, 129. His sentiments concerning the Salic law, and the alliances of the house of France, 130. He discloses Henry's great schemes to cardinal Busalo, 133. Supports the Grisons against Spain, in the affair of La-Valteline, 137. Puts the king in possession of his rights with regard to the bridge of Avignon, 139--141. Dissuades him from purchasing the earldom of St. Paul, 142, 143; and endeavours to hinder him from erecting buildings for his manufactures; and from encouraging too great a number of religious orders, 144. Disapproves of the pardon granted by this prince to D'Entragues and D'Auvergne, 145. Refuses to concern himself in this affair with the marchioness of Verneuil, 146. and endeavours to appease the queen, 148. He opposes the demolition of the pyramid: he is hated by the jesuits and the courtiers, who plot against him, 151, 152. A great quarrel between him and father Cotton, on account of the college of Poitiers, 152, *& seqq.* Clears himself, 155, 156. and is reconciled to father Cotton, 161. He is concerned with d'Epernon and Grillon in a dispute relating to the post of colonel of the guards, in which he runs the danger of being disgraced: a particular account of this incident, 163. The courtiers and jesuits enter into a combination to ruin him, 170. Letters between Henry and him, and the service which he receives on this occasion from the house of Lorrain, 172, &c. Henry repents of his procedure with regard to this minister, 175. A long and interesting conversation between them, in which they are reconciled, 179. The artifices of his enemies: their libels against him, 180. Sully convicts them of calumny, 188. Henry punishes his enemies, and loads him with caresses in the presence of the courtiers, 191. He puts an end to the dispute concerning the post of the colonel of the guards, to the satisfaction of the king, ib. He quarrels, and is again reconciled with this prince, 192. Different judgments concerning this conduct, ib. He marries his daughter to the duke of Rohan, 195. and his wife's daughter to La-Boulaye: Presents made by Henry to the new-married ladies, ib. Favours granted and refused by him to Sully, 196. He endeavours to procure a marriage between the marquis of Cœuvres and mademoiselle de Melun, but does not succeed, 198. His labours in the finances, 199. Reflections upon the Taille and Gabelle, 201, *et seq.* The debts of the state discharged, and

and plenty and good order reſtored to the kingdom: praiſes of Sully on theſe accounts, 206--208. Letters between him and cardinal Du-Perron: cardinal Bufalo's friendſhip: he is held in great eſteem in the court of Rome, 213. Paul V. writes a complimentary letter to him: his anſwer, 218, *et ſeq.* Services done by him for Du-Perron, 220. His opinion of Spinola's arrival at Paris, 221. Letters between the king of England and Sully, 225. Henry truſts him with a ſecret of great importance, ib. His reply to this prince, who propoſed to him as a queſtion, whether he ought to get himſelf declared emperor, 226. Sully removes Henry's apprehenſions concerning the deſigns of the proteſtants aſſembled at Châtelleraut, and is appointed to go thither to act for the king, 229. Purport of the public inſtructions he received on that occaſion, 233. and of his ſecret and particular inſtructions, 238. He viſits queen Margaret: information which ſhe gives him: his opinion concerning theſe ſeveral informations contrary to that of Henry, 241. Meaſures taken by Bouillon againſt him in the aſſembly of Châtelleraut, 244. His firſt ſpeech to the aſſembly concerning the principal points upon which they were convened, 248. He refuſes to be made preſident of the aſſembly, 252. and penetrates into the deſigns of the proteſtant chiefs: diſconcerts them, and frees Henry from his fears, 257, &c. He terminates the diſpute concerning the deputies general to the ſatisfaction of Henry, 267. and that relating to the towns of ſecurity, 269. His advice with reſpect to the affair of Orange and Blaccons not followed, 270, *et ſeq.* He diſmiſſes the aſſembly, and returns to give an account of his conduct to the king, 274, *& ſeqq.* whom he adviſes to take a journey into Limoſin and Auvergne, 277. He attends the king in this journey: holds the chamber des grand jours there, and cauſes the malecontents to be puniſhed, 280--284. Theodore de Beze dedicates his book to him, 286. He quarrels with the count of Soiſſons, on occaſion of the quarters aſſigned to him as grand maſter of the ordnance, 287. and with d'Epernon, on account of Rochelle, 289, *et ſeq.* A bon-mot of his concerning the king's firſt phyſician, 291. Queen Margaret aſks his advice concerning her journey to Paris, ib. Memorial upon the cuſtoms and ſeveral forms of duels: an adventure which gave occaſion for it, and his advice to Henry upon this ſubject, 295, *et ſeqq.* A converſation between the king, queen, and Sully, on his preſenting medals to them: a method propoſed by him to put an end to their diſputes, 303--308. New-year's gifts from their majeſties to him, 309. Another converſation between the king and him upon the means of humbling the houſe of Auſtria, 310. He is made duke and peer: ceremony of his reception in parliament, 314. He confirms Henry in the deſign of beſieging Sedan, notwithſtanding the oppoſition made by the courtiers, 315, &c. An uncommon circumſtance with regard to the wound in his neck and mouth, 318, *et ſeq.* His letters to Bouillon, and the anſwers to them, 321--323. Another letter which he wrote to Parabere concerning the enterpriſe upon Sedan, with a deſign to have it made public, 326. The duke of Bouillon's hatred to him, 328. Letters which he received from Henry during this expedition, 331. His complaints againſt

againſt Villeroi, for making a myſtery to him of the treaty with Bouillon: Henry's motives for this conduct, 335, 336. His reception of that prince, 338. He viſits Sedan, ib. He cannot prevail upon Henry to turn his arms againſt the earldom of St. Paul, 339. and endeavours to diſſuade him from making a public entry into Paris, 340. He gives good advice to the Venetians, upon their difference with Paul V. Reflections upon the true policy of theſe two powers, 341--345. Does ſome ſervices to the cardinal Barberini and Du-Perron, 345. He ſupports the city of Metz againſt the jeſuits, 346. Quarrels with father Cotton in the affair of Adrienne de Freſne, 348. Sully pacifies the quarrels between the catholics and proteſtants on account of religion, 352. and reſtores the duke of Rohan to the king's favour, 353. He is made captain-lieutenant of the queen's company of gendarmes: other gratuities beſtowed upon him by his majeſty, 359. Regulations on the finances, ib. 360. Friendſhip between him and the ducheſs of Guiſe, 364. Converſation on ſeveral ſubjects between the king and him in the preſence of the courtiers, 367. He gives Henry the abſtracts of the general accounts, 370. His advice to the king concerning the war of Flanders, 373. The wound in his mouth again opens, and the other miniſters do buſineſs with him at his houſe, v. 2. Henry's letters to him upon the birth of a ſecond ſon of France: upon his children and the chace, &c. 3, 4. His great confidence in him, 6. He ſuppreſſes the proſecution upon account of the murder of his nephew Epinoy, 7. Henry IV. diſguſted with him, but ſoon after reconciled, 8. Maxims upon the manner in which a prince ought to live with his miniſters, 9, 10. Sully repreſents to the proteſtants aſſembled at Rochelle his majeſty's complaints againſt them, 12. He ſupports this city in the affair of Pere Seguiran, 16. but refuſes to interfere in the diſpute of the jeſuits with the inhabitants of Poitiers, 17. Converſation with Henry IV. upon the intrigues of the Spaniards at court, 20. He ſatisfies the king upon this head, and juſtifies the houſe of Lorrain, 21, *et ſeq.* He enquires into the capture made by Grammont, 24. He induces Henry to refuſe the offer made by the United Provinces of ſubmitting to the dominion of France, 26. His opinion of the treaty concluded between Spain and Holland, 31. Preſents made by him in Italy for the king, 36. Brief ſent him by Paul V. and his anſwer to this pope, 37, 38. Operations in the finances: debts diſcharged, 39. Improves the eſtates ceded by queen Margaret to the dauphin, 40. Reprimands the parliaments of Toulouſe and Dijon, 41. Eſtabliſhes orders in the chambers of accounts, 42. in the Gabelle and the Maréchauſſées, 44, 45. in the Domaine, 45. His ſcheme for compoſing a council of the army, robe, &c. rejected by Henry, 49, 50. He oppoſes the eſtabliſhment of a chamber of juſtice, 51. Warns the king of his enemies, 52. Regulations for the artillery, &c. 53. He condemns his majeſty's exceſſive expences in manufactories, buildings, and furniture, 58. Henry's letters to him upon his domeſtic quarrels, 61. Theatrical entertainments exhibited at the Arſenal, 63. A comical adventure between him and Pimentel, 64. Calumniated by his enemies, 65. His ſon married to mademoiſelle de Crequy, 66. which is

productive

productive of uneasiness to him, ib. He is offered the post of constable, &c. which he refuses, 69, 70. Means employed by the protestants to prevent his accepting of them, 71. He is supported by Henry against his enemies, 74. His caution in mentioning the foibles of this prince, 75. His conversation with Henry on the queen, the marchioness of Verneuil, &c. he endeavours to make up the quarrels, 76, *et seqq.* Henry's obliging letter to him on the birth of his son, 86. Employed by Henry in the affair of Joinville and the marchioness of Verneuil, 88--91. as likewise in that of Sommerive with the countess of Moret, 92. In the assassination of Balagny by Eguillon, and several other quarrels amongst the courtiers, 96. In the marriage of M. de Vendome with mademoiselle de Mercœur, 99. He opposes the violent counsels against the protestants, 101, &c. and concludes the assembly at Gergeau to the satisfaction of his majesty, 104--106. Henry's letter to him upon his health and that of his children, 108. His generosity to the family of Miron, 111. Builds La-Place-Dauphine, and the bridge of Rouen, 112. He complains of Henry's extravagance at play, ib. Devastation made by an inundation of the Loire, 113, 114. Grants made him by the king, 115. Orders plans to be taken of the coasts of France, and a restitution of the usurpations made by Spain and Lorrain, 116. Regulations in the finances, 117. Exhorts Henry to be present at the consultations of his ministers, 119. Memoirs and reflections upon the taille, imposts, and the different forms of our government: his opinion of several of our kings, 120--127. He receives the compliments of foreign princes, 127. Henry follows his advice upon the accommodation between the Spaniards and Dutch, 128, 129. Medals and memorials presented by him to Henry, 140. Different opinions of him, 141. His dispute with Villeroi, 142. He entertains his majesty at the Arsenal, 143. Disputes betwixt him and father Cotton, occasioned by an imprudent letter wrote by that father: their hatred of one another, 147--152. Henry imparts to him his disquietudes: a long conversation between them on the public news, 153. Upon this prince's love for the princess of Condé, 154. Upon the plots against his life by the queen's family, 155. Sully's opinion of these plots, and his wise advice to the king, 163--167. He hastens the execution of the grand design, 167. Obtains the permission of entering the Louvre in his coach, ib. Henry and he employ themselves in composing the cabinet of state, 168, *& seqq.* His conversation with the king on the different ways of raising money, 172. Edict for establishing the droit annuel, and different opinions about this tax, 173, 174. Other regulations of this minister against luxury, chicanery, &c. 176, 177, &c. Conversations betwixt him and Henry upon this subject, and the opposition of the ministers, 183. Henry's character of Sully, 186. Operations in the finances, 189. He reproaches Henry on his great expences, 190. Edict against fraudulent bankrupts and duels, 192, 193. Intrigues of the court upon account of the children of France, 194. Letters of the prince of Condé: letters and counsels of Sully upon this occasion, as well to the prince of Condé as to Henry, 197--211. He clears Du-Plessis Mornay, and other protestants, of false

falſe informations againſt them, 213. Informations given him upon the conſpiracy at La Fleche, ib. His obligation to Henry upon account of his nephew Epinoy, 219--222. The great eſteem he is in with foreign princes, 223. The alliance of his houſe with that of Auſtria: his ſpirited converſation with the Florentine envoy, 226. His reproof to De Refuge, 228. Memoirs, and other details on the ſucceſſion of Cleves: converſation between Henry and him upon the means of humbling the houſe of Auſtria, 230, &c. The courtiers inſpire Henry with ſuſpicions againſt him, 252. Negotiations with the princes of Europe, and other preparations for the grand deſign, 257. See *Cleves, Political Deſign.* The liberty he took of pulling Henry, who ſpoke inconſiderately of this affair, 261. Henry's converſation with him upon his preſages of his approaching death, 269--272. Sully endeavours to perſuade the queen to delay her coronation, but ineffectual, 272. Schomberg informs him of a conſpiracy, &c. 273, &c. See *Coman's conſpiracy.* He is indiſpoſed at the Arſenal: where the king ſends La Varenne to him, 281. He receives the firſt account of this prince's aſſaſſination there: his behaviour and ſpeeches upon that occaſion, 282, 283. His complaints againſt the author of this murder, and upon the negligence with which he is guarded, 305, 306, &c. A ſketch of the character, and of the good and bad qualities of this prince, 306--313. Sully reaſons for not going to the Louvre: examination of his conduct upon this occaſion, 315, *& ſeqq.* He at laſt goes: his reception from the king and queen-mother, 319, *et ſeq.* The hatred and plots of the courtiers againſt him, 321. He aſſiſts at the ceremony of a bed of juſtice, 322. His complaints of the court and council of the queen-regent, 323, *et ſeq.* He is no more regarded, and reſolves to withdraw himſelf: his family and friends oppoſe his giving up his employments, 327, *et ſeq.* The count of Soiſſons ſeeks his friendſhip, and afterwards becomes his enemy, 330. Other ſubjects of complaint betwixt this prince and him, 332, *et ſeq.* His opinion with regard to Cleves not followed, 334, &c. His advice to the count of Bethune, ambaſſador at Rome, 337. His advice with regard to the duke of Savoy, and the other allies of the crown, not followed, 338. He again reſolves to deliver up his poſts, and again hindered by his family, 341, *et ſeq.* Conchini behaves with great unpoliteneſs to him, 346. He is reconciled with the prince of Condé: goes to meet him, and attends him in the Louvre, 350. Counſels which he gives him; notwithſtanding which he joins with his enemies, 352--358. He oppoſes the council in the affair of Cleves, but not regarded, 360. He oppoſes the grants promiſed to the duke of Bouillon, vi. 3. As likewiſe thoſe to Conchini and the count of Soiſſons, 4. Refuſes to ſign a comptant ſent him by the queen-regent, 5. Blames Sillery and Conchini, 7. His diſpute in full council with Bouillon, 8, 9. Thoſe who ſide with him, 10. He retires to Montrond during the coronation of Lewis XIII. and there falls ſick, 11. Motives which induced the queen to recal him, and the reception he meets with, 13--16. Viſits the children of France: his judgment of them, 17. Conchini viſits him: prejudices the queen againſt him, 18. His indignation of the propoſal made to the council, 19. His reproofs

proofs to the queen-regent, 22. He oppoſes Villeroi and Alincourt in full council, upon the affair of Lyons, 25. Eulogium of his boldneſs and honeſty, 29. He gives up his poſt of ſuperintendant and captain of the Baſtile, 30. His titles, ib. 31. Brevets and recompences which he receives, 33. His advice to his ſecretaries, 36, 37. Honours paid him upon his quitting Paris, 39. He prevents the cabals of his enemies at court: letters betwixt him and the queen-regent on this occaſion, ib. 43. The king gives him a brevet for the augmentation of his penſion, 43, 44. He gives a particular account of his eſtate, and the improvements he made in it, with the proviſion he makes for his children, &c. 45--52. His diſputes with the prince of Condé, who endeavours to have his eſtate confiſcated, 53, 54. The fidelity with which he obſerves his engagements with Henry the Great, 55. His ſhare in the grand deſign. See *Political Deſign*. The aſſembly of proteſtants at Châtelleraut ſupport his intereſt againſt Bouillon and his enemies, 109. The part he takes in the affair of Saint John d'Angely, 112. and in the revolt of the princes: the reliance of the king on this occaſion, and his advice to the queen-regent, ib. Other ſervices in the war againſt the proteſtants: recompenſed with a marſhal's ſtaff, 114--117. State of his family, and his diſquietude upon account of the marquis of Roſny, and the prince of Henrichemont, 118, &c. His death, 121. Honours paid to him by the ducheſs of Sully: his mauſoleum: his epitaph, 122. His reſidence at Villebon: at Sully, &c. State and government of his houſe: the employment of his time, &c. 124, 125, &c. His buildings, 130, &c. See the names mentioned in this article.

Sully (Ducheſs of) Rachel de Cochefilet. Sully aſks her in marriage, i. 224. Married to him, 274. She is beloved by the princeſs Catherine, ii. 180. The financiers endeavour to gain her by preſents, 230. Her converſation with the ducheſs of Beaufort, 359. She gives a ball at Chamberry, iii. 37. She exerts herſelf with madame de Brandis for the ſurrender of the caſtle of Montmelian, 55. Her return to Paris, 65. She goes to Baugy, 82. Delivered of a daughter at the moment of marſhal Biron's arrival at the Baſtile, 143. Preſents ſhe receives from their majeſties, iv. 2. 309. Gives the queen good counſel with regard to Conchini, v. 84. Henry IV. compliments her upon the birth of her ſon, 86. Sully informs her of the diſpoſition of the queen-regent, and of the council to him, after the death of Henry IV. 341. She oppoſes his giving up his poſts, 342. The queen-regent employs her to engage her huſband to return from Montrond, vi. 15. The ſum ſhe brought Sully at her marriage, 47. She excuſes her huſband to the queen-regent, 117. The mauſoleum ſhe cauſes to be built for him, 122. Her life and domeſtick occupations, 129, *et ſeq.*

Sulſbach. (Counts of) Right of theſe princes to the duchy of Juliers, v. 362.

Sultana. Mother of Mahomet III. driven from Conſtantinople by the janiſaries, iv. 145.

Sun. (Eclipſe of) iv. 285.

Superintendant of the finances. Suppreſſed by Henry IV. ii. 114. Eſtabliſhed again in favour of Sully, 354. A general ſtate of this employment preſented to the king, iv. 364-370.
---------- of the fortifications and buildings. Given to Sully, ii. 354. He preſents a general ſtate of this office, iv. 370. He gives up this employment, vi. 30.
---------- of mines. Given to the duke of Bellegarde, ii. 174.
---------- of the finances. D'O. Sully. See theſe names.
Surenne. A conference at this place between Henry IV. and the proteſtants, i. 315.
Synods of proteſtants. They raiſe a rebellion, ii. 234--258. Sully forbids them in the king's name to receive deputies from the factious lords, iv. 261. See *Châtelleraut* (Aſſembly of). Endeavours to prevent them from holding an aſſembly at Rochelle, 353. See *Gap, Rochelle, Proteſtants.*

T.

T'Aille. Sully labours in this part of the revenue, ii. 321. Part of it is remitted to the people: abuſe and vexations, iv. 201. Reflections upon them, and upon the means of remedying them, ib. Regulations upon the taille, v. 118. Brevet of the taille expedited in full council, 119. Faults in this reſpect rectified, 121, *et ſeqq.* Origin and changes of the taille in this kingdom, 124. &c.
Talamone. Uſurped by Spain, iv. 133.
Talan. The troops of the League are driven out of this caſtle by Henry IV. ii. 136.
Talmont. Taken by La-Tremouille, i. 121. Defended againſt the League, 128.
Tambonneau. (The preſident) Commiſſary for proving the rents, iv. 105.
Tancrede. The pretended heir to the houſe of Rohan, iv. 194.
Tapeſtry-workers. (Flemiſh) Sent for to Paris, v. 58. See *Manufactures.*
Tardieu. A commiſſary reprimanded by Sully, v. 44.
Tarn. The duke of Joyeuſe is drowned there, i. 273. See *Villemur, Joyeuſe.*
Taſſone. (Octavio) Agent for the duke of Savoy in the treaty of Lyons, iii. 69.
Tavannes. (Gaſpard de Saulx de) One of the counſellors of Catherine de Medicis: his character, i. 2.
--------- (John de Saulx, viſcount de). Is defeated and taken priſoner at Noyon, i. 207. Driven from Dijon by the king's forces, ii. 135.
Taxis. (John Baptiſt, count of) One of the Spaniſh plenipotentiaries to the ſtates of Paris: his plots unſucceſsful: faults which he commits there, i. 309. The offers made to him by Henry IV. after his abjuration rejected, ii. 2. See *Spain, League.*
Te ..c. (Hernando) See *Portocarrero.*

Teligny. (Charles de) Son-in-law to admiral Coligny: deputed to Charles IX. by the huguenots, i. 16. Slain in the maſſacre of St. Bartholomew, 32.

Tende. (Claude de Savoy, count of) Refuſes to obey the orders of Charles IX. to maſſacre the proteſtants, i. 39.

Terrail. (Du) Commands the light horſe in the army of the League at the battle of Ivry, i. 193. Goes with Sully to London, iii. 227. Enters into the ſervice of the archduke: takes Bergen-op-zoom, and loſes it again, iv. 222. Fails in an attempt upon Sluys, v. 94. Endeavours to ſurpriſe Geneva: is taken there, and beheaded, 224.

Terra-nuovo. (Duke of) Aſſiſts the League againſt the Lyonnois, ii. 58.

Terſe. A Spaniſh company, iv. 371.

Teſin. The ſchemes of turning this river fatal to France, ii. 155.

Themines. (Pons de Lauſieres de Cardaillac de) Defends Villemur, and defeats the forces of the League there, i. 269. Solicits for Biron's pardon, iii. 147. Does the king good ſervice againſt the rebels, iv. 258.

Theodoſius. Character of this emperor, vi. 58.

Thermes. (John de Saint Larry de) One of Henry III's favourites, ii. 98.

Thermes. (Paul de La-Barthe de) Defeated at Gravelines, i. 12.

Third Party. Names of thoſe that compoſe it: they are accuſed of endeavouring to get rid both of Henry IV. and of the duke of Maïenne, i. 283.

Thoré. (William de Montmorency de) Fails in his attempt to take poſſeſſion of the bridge of St. Maixence for Henry IV. i. 185.

Thores. A Spaniſh colonel. Slain at the ſiege of Rhimberg, iv. 371.

Thou. (James-Auguſtus De-) Preſident. A converſation between him and Montagne, upon the characters of Henry IV. and the duke of Guiſe, i. 105. Conſulted by Henry IV. upon his converſion, 286. Employed in compoſing the edict of Nantz, ii. 264. Inſerts an article in it which he is obliged to ſuppreſs: his ſentiments with regard to religion ſuſpected, 348, *et ſeq.* He votes in the council againſt the repeal of the jeſuits baniſhment, iv. 9. His letter to the prince of Condé after his flight, v. 209.

------ (Nicolas De-) Crowns Henry IV. at Chartres, ii. 19.

Thouars. Sully goes there to viſit La-Tremouille, iv. 75.

Thurin. (Philebert de) Draws up the proceſs againſt marſhal Biron, iii. 144.

Tignonville. (Mademoiſelle de) Beloved by Henry IV. i. 54.

Tilenus. A proteſtant miniſter: his diſpute with Du-Val, ii. 341. His oppoſition to the expedition againſt Sedan, iv. 316.

Tilly. A gentleman attached to Sully. Wounded at the encounter at Chartres, i. 215.

Tiron. (Philip Des-Portes, abbot of) Employed in Villars's treaty with Henry IV. ii. 30--36--39.

Tirone. (Count of) Commands the rebels in Ireland; defeated there, iii. 118.

Toleration for religion adviſed by Sully, iv. 37, 38.

Tonnerre. (Francis Henry, count of Clermont) Sully saves his life at Joigny, i. 214.

Torigny. (Odet de Matignon, count of) Present at the battle of Ivry, i. 197. He is the cause of the death of La-Châtaigneraye, in endeavouring to save him, ib. Fights in the battle of Fontaine-François, ii. 137.

Touchard. See *Bellozane.*

Touchet. (N. du) A protestant gentleman. Escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 30.

-------- (Mary) Mistress to Charles IX. ii. 61. Favours the intrigues of Henry IV. with her children, and plots with her husband. See *Entragues, Verneuil.*

Toulon. The malecontents endeavour to seize upon this city, iii. 114.

Toulouse. Its reduction, ii. 157. Sum paid for its treaty, 311. The chamber of requests suppressed by its parliament, iii. 334. Henry IV. disgusted with its parliament, v. 41.

Tour. (Baron of) Sent into France by king James, to notify his accession to the throne of England, iii. 210.

----- (John de La-). Betrays the League, and delivers up Louviers to Henry IV. i. 222.

----- (Father de La-). A jesuit, v. 149.

Touraine. Cities in this province taken by Henry IV. i. 187.

Tournelles. Henry IV. establishes his silk-manufactories in the inclosures of this castle, contrary to the advice of Sully, iii. 347.

Tours. One of the five cities which continued faithful to Henry III. i. 159. The treaty of Plessis-les-Tours negotiated by Sully, 136. Concluded by Du-Plessis Mornay, ib. The two kings have a meeting near this city, 165. Duke of Maïenne invests it, and obliged to retire by the two kings, 166. The duke of Guise escapes from the castle of this city, 223. The first manufactories of rich stuff do not succeed, iii. 13. Henry IV. passes through it in his journey to Auvergne, iv. 283.

Touvery. Sully dangerously wounded at this place, i. 215.

Transilvania. The emperor Rodolphus makes war against that people, iii. 120. 181--v. 35.

Trape. (La-) Valet de chambre to Sully; of great use to him at an attack of Villefranche, i. 51. of Mirande, 57. and at Cahors, 68.

Tremblecourt. (Lewis de Beauveau de) Defeated in endeavouring to succour Noyon, i. 217. His successes in Burgundy, ii. 122.

Tremont. One of the general officers of the League at Ivry, i. 196.

Tremouille. (Claude, duke de La-) Takes Talmont, i. 121. Fights at Coutras, where his troops behave ill, 141. Gives bad counsel to the prince of Condé, 144. Has a great share of the victory gained at Fontaine-François, ii. 139. Plots amongst the protestants during the siege of Amiens, notwithstanding the remonstrances of Sully, 239. Is sent by Henry IV. to examine into the affair of the true or false Sebastian, 283. Makes an article to be inserted in the edict of Nantz, which is afterwards suppressed, 348. Is suspected of being amongst the seditious, iii. 124. He engages with Bouillon, 198. His intrigues with the king of England, 243. And amongst the protestants against the state, 338---iv. 40. 63. Sully visits

visits him at Thouars, and disconcerts his schemes, 74. His death, 75. Sully purchases from him the lands of Sully, vi. 48.

Triennial. (Officers) Established, ii. 224. Sully disputes with the council upon this account, 229.

Trigni. An officer in the king's party, ii. 62. Present at the defeat of the great convoy before Laon, 76.

Troyes. The jesuits refused an establishment in that city, iv. 152.

Turks and *Turkey.* They carry on a war in Hungary, iii. 70. The Grand Seignior's embassy to Henry IV. the magnificent titles they give him, 86. Continuation of their war in Hungary, 120, 181, 182. See *Rodolphus, Mercœur,* &c. They give succour to the Moors in Spain, v. 137. Montglat sent ambassador to the court, 265. The grand design, so far as it relates to them, vi. 79. See *Political Design, Mahomet* III. *Achmet, Constantinople.*

Turenne. (Viscounty of) Seized upon by Henry IV. iv. 283. Bouillon pretends that this viscounty is one of the great fiefs of the crown, 320.

-------- (Viscount of). See *Bouillon.*

Tyber. A great overflow of this river, ii. 327.

V.

VAstendonck. The Spaniards driven from this place by the prince of Orange, iii. 195.

Vair. (William Du-) counsellor of parliament. His opinion for the hereditary succession of the crown, i. 312.

Vaivodes of Transilvania. Defeated by George Baste, iii. 120.

Vall. (Du-) His dispute at the conference with Tilenus, ii. 341.

Valentia. (The council of) Edict against duels, iv. 297.

Valentia in Spain. An insurrection there, upon account of the expulsion of the Moors, v. 137.

Valence. (Madame de) One of father Cotton's devotees, iv. 349.

Valentinian III. Sully's opinion of this emperor, vi. 57.

Vallee. (Michael Piquemouche de La-) Lieutenant-general of the ordnance. He reproaches Sully at the siege of Charbonnieres, iii. 42. He conducts the duke of Vendome into Brittany, v. 100.

Vallon. One of Sully's enemies at court, iv. 180.

Valette. (Bernard de Nogaret de La-) Admiral of France. Particulars of his life, and of his government in Dauphiné: Killed at the siege of Roquebrune, i. 267. One of the favourites of Henry III. ii. 98.

------- (John Lewis de Nogaret de La-). See *Epernon.*

Valois. Kings and princes of this branch. See the following names, and also *France* (Kings of).

------ (Charles de) Count of Auvergne. See *Auvergne.*

------ (Francis de). Duke of Anjou. See *Anjou.*

------ (Claude de). Daughter of Henry II. married to the duke of Lorrain, i. 14.

------ (Margaret of) Queen of France. See *Margaret.*

Valteline. The situation of this canton: dispute upon account of it between the Spaniards and Grisons, iv. 134. Sequel of this difference, v. 34.

Vandrelep. (Treaty of) Between England and the United Provinces, iii. 242.

Varenne. (William-Fouquet de La-) Imprudently ſent by Henry IV. to Mandoce, ii. 6.. Particulars relating to his fortune: a bon-mot upon this ſubject, 6, 7. Services done by him to the princeſs Catherine, 179. Henry IV. recommends the ducheſs of Beaufort to his care, 358. His letters to Henry IV. and to Sully upon the tragical death of this lady, 361. Henry's affection for him, iii. 81. He is employed in arreſting the marſhal Biron and Auvergne, 142. He preſents the jeſuits of Verdun to the king at Metz, 187. This prince makes uſe of him in accommodating matters betwixt Sully and the count of Soiſſons, 332. He is inſtrumental in the recal of the jeſuits, iv. 6. He is ſent by Henry IV. to the marchioneſs of Verneuil, 87. He joins with the courtiers and jeſuits to ruin Sully in the affair relating to the poſt of colonel of the guards, 170. He is deputed by Henry IV. to queen Margaret, 240. His letters to Sully during the expedition of Sedan, 333. He informs him of the concluſion of the treaty with Bouillon, 340. His ſervices to the jeſuits at La-Fleche, 347. A preſent made him by Henry IV. 363. He ſupports father Seguiran and the jeſuits againſt the Rochellers, v. 15. The part he acts in the quarrel amongſt the courtiers, 93. His attachment to the jeſuits, 149. Gives information to Henry IV. of the plots of the Spaniards againſt his perſon, 155--205. This prince ſends him to viſit Sully the day he was murdered, 281. His ſpeech to the jeſuits upon the death of this prince, 295. Sent by the queen mother to Sully, 319.

Vaucelas. (Andrew de Cochefilet, earl of) Sent by Sully to the queen of England, iii. 308. Diſcovers in Spain the plots of the queen's party againſt the life of Henry IV. and informs him of it, v. 155.

Vaudement. (Nicholas of Lorrain de) Henry III. marries his daughter, i. 46.

---------- (Louiſa of Lorrain de) Queen of France, i. 46.

Velaſque. (John Ferdinand de) Conſtable of Caſtile. Sent ambaſſador extraordinary from Spain to London, iii. 251. Plots againſt Henry IV. 319. Employed to conclude the affair of thirty *per cent.* iv. 116. Concludes, at London, the agreement betwixt Spain and England, 124. Henry IV's reception and converſation with him at Paris, 127, 128.

Vendome. (Cæſar de Bourbon, duke of) Son to Henry IV. and the fair Gabriella legitimated, ii. 113. Deſign of giving him the ſovereignty of Franche-Comté, 124. He is made governor of La-Fere, 156. Betrothed to mademoiſelle de Mercœur, 251. He demands mademoiſelle de Melun for the marquis of Cœuvres, but refuſed him, iv. 168. Sent by Henry IV. to viſit queen Margaret, 293. Difficulties in accompliſhing his marriage with mademoiſelle de Mercœur, v. 98, *et ſeqq.* He accuſes Sully of oppoſing his legitimation, 194. Henry IV. reconciles him with Sully and Roſny, 256. His apprehenſions of the plots againſt this prince, 283.

Venice. No longer concerned in farming the revenues, ii. 317. The reception and preſents made its ambaſſador, iii. 87. Unites with the Griſons againſt Spain, 176. See *Valteline.* Sully's conference with the Venetian reſident at London, 242, 243. Its advantage in the execution

execution of the great design, 298. See *Political Design*. Their great veneration for a suit of armour given by Henry IV. to their resident, 327. The interest they had in the affair of the Valteline, iv. 137. See *Fuentes*. Presents given by Henry IV. to its ambassador, 212. Their famous quarrel with Paul V. The cause of this difference: the wise advice given them by Sully; and the true policy of this state, 341, 342. See *Canaye*. Their union with the Grisons against Spain, v. 34. Their difference with the Pope terminated by the mediation of Henry IV. 36. Confederacy between France and this republic, 159. They join the deputation sent this prince by the German princes assembled at Hall, 247. See *Cleves*. Bullion named for this embassy, 265. The grand design so far as it regards this republic, vi. 80. The advantages they would have had from its execution, 86. The forces and money they were to have contributed, 97.

Ventadour. (Ann de Lévis, duke of) Made prisoner before Cambrai, i. 82. His success against the League in Languedoc, ii. 182. He intercedes with Henry IV. for the count of Auvergne, 154. Sully calumniated upon account of his friendship for him, iv. 185. Debts of the king to him discharged, 210. He complains of Sully, v. 87.

Vere. (Colonel) The Earl of Northumberland gives him a blow upon the face, iii. 320.

Verneuil. Medavy treats with Sully for the surrender of this city, ii. 27--39. It is delivered to the king, 51.

-------- (Henry de Bourbon, duke of) iii. 177. The king gives him the bishopric of Metz: the difficulties raised by the pope upon this occasion, v. 109. Particulars of his life, 108.

-- ----- (Catherine-Henriette de Balzac d'Entragues, marchioness of) Mistress of Henry IV. The beginning of her amours with this prince, iii. 7. Her character, ib. Her artifice to make him give her a promise of marriage, 8. She follows him to the campaign of Savoy, 29. Is delivered of a dead child, ib. She procures to the count of Auvergne pardon and liberty, 153. Henry gives her the castle of Verneuil, 177. and legitimates the children he had by her. See *Verneuil* (Henry de Bourbon, duke of). Her hatred to Sully, whom Henry supports in opposition to her, 330, &c. Presents which she receives from this prince, 347, 348. Her plots with the malecontents, iv. 40. Her unequal and bad temper, 44. Henry reproaches her in his letters: she haughtily refuses to deliver him his promise of marriage, 45. Her conversation agreeable to the king, 46. The queen's hatred to her, 52. Her great artifice in fomenting quarrels between the king and queen, and endeavours to ruin Sully, 54. The marchioness forms a design to get the marriage cancelled between the king and queen: the weakness of this prince for her, 57--61. He at last obliges her to deliver up the promise of marriage, 79. She is arrested: Sully employed to interrogate her: her reproaches to this minister, and other particulars relating to this incident, 87--91. Henry will not allow of her quitting France, 91, 92. Anecdotes upon this subject, ib. She makes the king pardon Auvergne and Entragues, and dictates her own conditions, 147, 148. Causes of her hatred to Sully, 180. Other quarrels between the king, queen, and her, v. 61. Her

children by the king, 75. This prince communicates to Sully his uneafineſs upon her account, 81. and makes him judge in her intrigue with Joinville, 88. Her ſon made biſhop of Metz, 109. A bon-mot of her's upon the marriage of the prince of Condé, 154. Coman accuſes her of being engaged in the parricide of Ravaillac, 274.

Vernon. The duke of Montpenſier fails in his attack upon this city, i. 185.

Verriere. Employed in the converſion of Henry IV. i. 317.

Verſeray. One of Sully's enemies. Grants made him by Henry IV. iv. 182.

Vervins. Negotiations for a peace at this city, ii. 253. Concluded, 278. Particulars of the ceremony uſed upon this occaſion, 278, 279. A bon-mot upon the peace, 280.

Veſon. Taken by the conſtable of Caſtile, ii. 136.

Vezins. Generouſly ſaves the life of Renier his enemy at the maſſacre of Saint Bartholomew, i. 40. Defends Cahors, 67. where he is killed, ib.

Vic. (Dominique de) Defeats d'Aumale, and attacks Saint Denis, i. 263. Vice-admiral of France, ii. 235. Appointed to treat with the Swiſs ambaſſadors, iii. 176. His reſentment of the affront offered by the vice-admiral of England, 219, 220. Summoned to the council upon recalling the jeſuits, iv. 6. Employed in the affair of 30 per cent. 114. Ambaſſador to the Griſons, 138. Approves of Sully's advice for the expedition to Sedan, 325. Demoliſhes the fort of Retuy, v. 34. Admitted into the public council of the queen-regent, 326. His death occaſioned by his grief for the loſs of Henry IV. ib.

---- His company defeated by Henry IV. i. 135.

---- The reſidence of the count of Auvergne in this houſe, iv. 83.

Vienne. (N. de) Admitted into the council of the finances, ii. 126. Gratuities given him by Henry IV. 354. iii. 15. Regulations preſcribed to him by Sully, iv. 56. Diſſatisfied with Henry's exceſſive expences for manufactories, v. 58.

Vieville. (La) Sent to the duke of Bouillon upon the affair of Sedan, iv. 327.

Vienne. Expeditions of king Henry IV. upon the borders of this river, ii. 137. See *Fontaine-François.*

Vignoles. Diſtinguiſhes himſelf at the head of his regiment at Ivry, i. 198. and at the ſiege of Laon, ii. 72.

Viguier. A proteſtant miniſter at Blois, v. 212.

Villa-Mediana. (The count of) Spaniſh ambaſſador at the court of London, iv. 115.

Villandry. Offends Charles IX. admiral Coligny procures his pardon, i. 25.

Villars. (Earldom of) The claim that the duke of Savoy had in the cathedral of Lyons conteſted with Charles-Emanuel, iii. 18. See *Savoy, Charles-Emanuel* (Duke of).

-------- (Andrew de Brancas). Admiral of France: makes preparations for the defence of Rouen againſt Henry IV. i. 226. His vigorous defence of this city, 230--233. Sully endeavours to begin a negotiation with him, but does not ſucceed, 232. See *Font* (La-).

Other great actions of this governor, which oblige Henry to raiſe the ſiege, 244. Refuſes a challenge from the earl of Eſſex, 247. The beginning of Sully's negotiation with him, ii. 11. Broke off, 14. Reſumed, 16. Character of this governor, 17, 18. The conditions of his treaty with the king, 31. His rage againſt Sully, 34. 35. His elogium, 50. Ceremony obſerved at the ſurrender of Rouen, 51. He comes to court: praiſes upon his diſintereſtedneſs and conduct, 57. Commands the king's forces in Picardy, 125. His bravery before Dourlens, 133. He is killed, 134. Examen of his behaviour upon this occaſion, ib. See *Bouillon*. Henry's great grief for his death, 142. The ſum of money he received for his treaty, 311. Henry IV. diſcharges a debt due to his family, iv. 209. 210.

Villars. (George de Brancas) Chevalier of Oiſe. See *Oiſe.*

------- (Honorat de Savoie, marquis of) Commands the royal army in Guyenne, i. 20.

------- (Jerôme de) Archbiſhop of Vienne procures a cardinal's hat, iv. 39.

------- (Peter de) Archbiſhop of Vienne: ſent by Henry IV. to the ſtates of Blois, i. 59.

------- (Julietta-Hypolita d'Eſtrees, marchioneſs of) Her intrigue with Joinville, v. 89.

Villebon. (Lands and caſtle of) Purchaſed by Sully, vi. 48. He makes over theſe lands to the prince of Condé, 53. Afterwards repurchaſes them, 54. Sully dies at this caſtle: his mauſoleum there, 121. His manner of living there, 125. Makes great improvements there, 131.

Villefrancke. In Perigord: taken by aſſault by the proteſtants, i. 51.

Villemur. Siege of this city, and battle of, in which the duke of Joyeuſe is killed, i. 271.

--------- (Peter Pitte de) Wounds admiral Coligny, i. 29.

Villeneuve. Taken by the catholics, i. 62.

Villepion. Turenne takes poſſeſſion of this place for Henry IV. iv. 280.

Villequier. (René de) Diſſuades Henry III. from ordering the duke of Guiſe to be aſſaſſinated the day of the barricadoes, i. 151. One of the favourites of this prince, ii. 93.

---------- (Charlotte-Catherine de) Wife of the ſuperintendant D'O, ii. 99.

Villeroi. (Nicolas de Neufville de) Miniſter of ſtate: he makes propoſals from the League to Henry IV. 260. One of the chiefs of the third party, 283. His real ſentiments of the League, of Spain, and of Henry IV. 294. Other conditions offered by him to Henry IV. from the League, 303. rejected, 306. Accuſed of making the heads of the League take an oath againſt this prince, 317, 318. Juſtified, ib. His treaty with the king, ii. 46. Juſtified from the reproaches thrown upon him by Sully, ib. 47. A bon-mot of Henry IV. upon him, 46. He oppoſes Sully's entrance into the council of the finances, 185. Diſappointed of being made grand maſter of the ordnance, 237. Endeavours to procure a treaty with the proteſtants, 248. Defends Picardy, 249. Adviſes Henry IV. againſt marrying again, 274. Manages foreign affairs, 395.

The

The sum he received for his treaty, 311. One of the commissioners for the marriage of Henry IV. with Mary of Medicis, ii. 11. and for the marquisate of Saluces, 19. Opposes Sully during the campaign of Savoy, 48. Commissioner for the treaty of Lyons, 61. His policy with regard to the house of Austria different from that of Henry IV. and Sully: he defends the treaty made by D'Ossat with the grand duke of Tuscany for the isles of If, 102. Opposes the embassy of the count of Bethune to Rome, 104. Receives the depositions and examines the papers of La Fin, 116--118. Summoned to the secret council held at Blois, for arresting the heads of the seditious, 128. Attends the king to Metz, 185. His solicitations for the jesuits and connections with Ossat, condemned by Sully, 188, &c. Summoned to the council in which Sully receives his instructions for his embassy to London, 210. Sully's suspicions of his clerk, upon occasion of some of his dispatches being lost, 307. Solicits the recal of the jesuits, iv. 8. Treachery of Nicolas L'Hôte his clerk: examination and justification of him upon this occasion, 39, &c. Henry IV. excuses and comforts him, 34. Letters to and from Sully upon this subject, 35, 36. Demands a cardinal's hat for M. de Villars and Marquemont: refused, 39. Signs the treaty of commerce between Spain and France, 119. Advises Henry to purchase the earldom of St. Paul, 142. Endeavours to ruin Sully in the affair of Mestre de-camp, 170. His hatred to this minister, 176. Causes of this hatred, 180. Composes the public instructions given to Sully for the assembly of Châtelleraut, 233. Letters between them during the continuance of this assembly, 265. Other letters between them during the expedition to Sedan, 328. Concludes the treaty with Bouillon: Sully's complaints of him upon this occasion 333--336. Henry sends him to do business at Sully's house, v. 2--10. His sentiments upon the law upon shipwrecks, &c. 24. Opposes Sully in the council upon the offers made by the Dutch, 26--30. Henry makes use of him to persuade Sully to change his religion, 72. and to accommodate the dissentions among the nobles, 94. His opposition to Sully upon the plots among the protestants, 103. His letters to the protestants assembled at Gergeau, 104. Employed in the truce between Spain and the Dutch, 131. Favours the Spanish policy in opposition to the designs of Henry IV. 157. This prince's diffidence of him; and conceals from him the advices he receives of plots against his person, 163. Disputes betwixt him and Sully, 185. Henry's judgment of the good and bad qualities of this minister, 183. He reproves him for supporting the secret enemies of Sully, 196. Circular letters written by him after the prince of Condé left the kingdom, 211. His services to the prince of Epinoy with the states of Holland, 222. Inspires the queen regent with a policy quite opposite to that of Henry the Great, with regard to the house of Austria, the duke of Savoy, and the other allies of the crown, 338, &c. Endeavours to ruin Sully, 341. He is affronted by the duke of Nevers and the nobles, and advises the queen regent to recal Sully from Montrond, vi. 13. Gratuities which he receives from her, 21. A great quarrel between him and Sully in full council, upon the

the affair of Alincourt and the city of Lyons, 24--27. Remarks upon the houſe of Neufville, 24.
Villers Coterets. The garriſon of Soiſſons defeated at this place, ii. 122. Sully renders an account of his embaſſy to London to Henry here, iii. 312, &c.
Villetté. (La-) Conferences upon religion at this place, i. 322.
Villiers. A proteſtant miniſter: the prince of Orange informs him of the intended treachery at Antwerp, i. 87.
Vins. (Hubert de La-Garde de) He predicts the murder of the Guiſes, i. 157. His party in Provence, 269.
Vinta. (Chevalier) Chancellor of Savoy: employed in the affair of the iſles, between the king and the duke of Florence, iii. 102.
Vitry. (Lewis de L'Hôpital de) Commands the troops of the League at the ſiege of Rouen, i. 235. Employed in the converſion of Henry IV., 317. Surrenders Meaux to the king, ii. 15. His ſpeech to the duke of Maïenne, ib. He promotes the treaty with Villars, 30--47. Attends the king to the campaign of Franche-Comte, 141. The ſum of money he received for his treaty, 311. He arreſts marſhal Biron, iv. 142. His great grief upon this occaſion. The advice he gave Sully, 315.
Vivant. Deputy of the proteſtants: gives advice to the king of the plots among the ſeditious, iv. 243--258.
Univerſity of Paris. Its proceſs againſt the jeſuits, ii. 67, 68. It oppoſes the recal of this ſociety, iv. 20.
Voyer. (Jacqueline Le-). See *Coman.*
Ubaldini. Nuncio of the Pope: the ſecret council held at his houſe, after the death of Henry IV. againſt the memory of that prince, and of Sully, v. 341.
Urban VIII. This pope's brief to Sully, and anſwer, vi. 117.
Urbin. (Archbiſhop of) Employed in the diſſolution of the marriage of Henry IV. with Margaret of Valois, ii. 267.
Vroreyzer. Employed in the treaty of commerce betwixt France and Spain, iv. 116.
Urſin. (Virgil) Couſin to Mary of Medicis: attends her into France, iii. 69.
Uſſeau. Sully favours his duel with Beauvais, 75.
Uſſon. Queen Margaret's reſidence at this caſtle, iv. 240. She leaves it; and Henry IV. orders it to be demoliſhed, 294.
Uzes. See *Cruſſol.*

W.

WALES. (Prince of) His character, iii. 236. Preſents made him by Sully, 310. His fondneſs for Henry IV. 368. Henry's deſign of marrying his eldeſt daughter to him, v. 158.
Weſtminſter. (Palace of) Sully receives here his audience of leave of the king of England iii. 309.
Whale. A large one taken on the coaſt of Holland, ii. 327.
Wilem. See *Blanc* (Le-).
Wirtemberg. (Duke of) No longer concerned in farming the revenues, ii. 317, 318. Henry's politeneſs to his ambaſſadors, iv. 133. Sully

accuſed of holding a criminal correſpondence with him, 186. Henry IV. protects him, 375.

---------- (Ulric, duke of). Francis I. ſupports him againſt Charles V. v. 240.

Wymes. (Thomas) Governor of Dover: his brutality to Sully, iii. 221.

Y.

YVERNE. Sent into Spain by the count of Auvergne, iv. 78.

Yvoteaux. (Des) v. 149. Henry IV. gives him the poſt of advocate-general of Rouen, 191.

Yvetot. (N. d') Succours Sully at the attack of Mirande, i. 57.

Z.

ZAMET. (Sebaſtian) Makes propoſals to Henry IV. from the League, i. 260. Of great uſe in the converſion of Henry IV. 317. ii. 187. Henry recommends the ducheſs of Beaufort to him, 358. who is taken ill at his houſe, and dies, 362. Particulars relating to his fortune and family, 361, 362. Henry's affection for him, iii. 81. He employs him to accommodate matters betwixt the count of Soiſſons and Sully, 332. He often dines at his houſe, 347. Sends him to Sully in the affair of the poſt of colonel of the guards, iv. 168. Grants made him by this prince, 210. v. 8. and debts which he pays him, 39. Informs the king of plots againſt him, carried on by the queen's ſervants, 155. Debts diſcharged, 191. Particulars relating to him and his children, ib. 192. Sully viſits the queen regent along with him, vi. 16.

Zamet the younger. Adviſes Henry IV. of the plots in Spain againſt his perſon, v. 155.

Zapata. (Cardinal) Sent from Spain to congratulate the grand duke of Tuſcany, v. 227.

Zeland. This province oppoſes the ſuſpenſion of arms between Spain and the Dutch, v. 33.

Zopirus. iv. 1. 16.

FINIS.